

**MICROFORM IN LIBRARY**



GIFT  
of

University of Manchester

**MICROFORM IN LIBRARY**

AN  
INTRODUCTION  
TO  
EARLY WELSH

BY  
THE LATE JOHN STRACHAN, LL.D.,  
*Professor of Greek and Lecturer in Celtic  
in the University of Manchester*

MANCHESTER  
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS  
1909

UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER PUBLICATIONS  
No. XL.

## PREFACE

---

THIS book is the outcome of the courses of lectures on Welsh grammar and literature given by the late Professor Strachan at the University of Manchester during the sessions 1905-6 and 1906-7. Indeed, the Grammar is in the main an expansion of notes made for these lectures. For the numerous quotations from early Welsh literature contained in the Grammar, as well as for the Reader, Strachan made use not only of published texts, notably those edited by Sir John Rhys and Dr. J. Gwenogvryn Evans, but also of photographs specially taken for the purpose, and of advance proofs of the edition of the *White Book* and of the photographic facsimile of the *Black Book of Chirk*, about to be published by Dr. Evans, both of which were lent by him to Strachan. The Reader includes Middle Welsh Texts selected as likely to be of most value for illustration or of special interest. The very valuable work done by Dr. Evans in relation to these texts was of the greatest assistance to Professor Strachan, and as an expression of gratitude for the help thus given, as well as in recognition of the services rendered to Welsh scholarship by Dr. Evans, it was the intention of the author to dedicate his book to him.

The idea of working up his notes into a book that might serve as an introduction to the study of older Welsh seems first to have occurred to Strachan in the spring of 1907. On the fifth of April he wrote to Mr. R. I. Best, the Secretary of the School of Irish Learning in Dublin: "I have been thinking of drawing up a little primer of Early Welsh. With that the language of Middle-Welsh prose should be child's play



to learn. However, that may or may not come off." And to his old friend Dr. P. Giles of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, he wrote on the same day: "I think I must draw up and print outlines of Middle-Welsh grammar. I cannot well teach without some book, and the beginner is lost in the wilderness of the *Grammatica Celtica*." His original intention evidently was to publish a mere sketch of the grammar, somewhat like his *Old-Irish Paradigms*. But at the suggestion of his friend and colleague, Professor T. F. Tout, he decided to expand the Grammar on the larger and fuller lines of the present volume. At the same time the plan of adding a Reader of excerpts from mediæval Welsh literature took concrete shape in the course of conversations and correspondence with Dr. Evans. On both these tasks he began to work during the Summer Term of 1907. With what amazing rapidity he must have toiled to have all but completed the work by the end of the following August! Giving up a visit to Germany to which he had long been looking forward, he devoted the whole long vacation to the preparation and printing of his book. At the moment of his death, on the 25th of September, both the Grammar and Reader were in type, and he had read a first, and in some cases a second, proof. Writing to Professor Thurneysen a week before his death, he says that he had then only the notes and vocabulary to add.

After Professor Strachan's death, at the request of the Publications Committee of the Manchester University, Professor Kuno Meyer of the University of Liverpool kindly undertook the task of reading final proofs of the Grammar and Reader, and of adding a Glossary, an Index and a list of contents. In this task, which involved very considerable labour, he obtained the assistance of Mr. Timothy Lewis, who had worked for two years under Professor Strachan, and who returned

from Berlin whither he had gone to continue his studies with Professor Zimmer, and devoted the winter to help with the completion of the book. Mr. Lewis verified the quotations in the Grammar where this was possible; drew up the Glossary, prepared the Index, and revised proofs. An old student of Professor Meyer's, the Rev. Owen Eilian Owen, placed his collection of Old and Middle-Welsh words at his disposal for the elucidation of rare and difficult vocables, while both Mr. Owen and Mr. J. Glyn Davies read proofs of the whole book, many valuable suggestions being due to them. But Professor Meyer and Mr. Lewis are solely responsible for the Glossary.

There can be no doubt that if Strachan had lived to complete the book himself, he would have made alterations and additions in several places both in the Grammar and Reader, and would have still further normalised the spelling in his critical versions of sections IV. and V. in the Reader. It will be observed that his treatment of the texts varies greatly. Except in the sections just mentioned, he does not seem to have aimed so much at the construction of a critical text as at the presentation of a clear, precise, and intelligible version, which would at the same time serve to introduce the student to the characteristic features of Middle Welsh orthography. In the Corrigenda some necessary emendations<sup>1</sup> have been indicated by Professor Meyer

1. From a collation of the poems printed from the Red Book with the original, it appears that the following corrections should be made :—

P. 233, l. 4, *for dóg read dōng*

ib., l. 19, *for aghæat read agkaeat*

P. 235, l. 29, *for gŵawr read gŵaŵr*

P. 236, l. 2, *for can read kan*

P. 237, l. 22, *for uvulldaŵt read uvullaŵt*

P. 238, l. 9, *for dyrnaŵt read dyrnnaŵt*

ib., l. 11, *for diffirth read diffyrth*

ib., l. 18, *for vedissyawt read vedyssyaŵt*

ib., l. 20, *for adueil read atueil*

who has also added some further variants (marked *a*, *b*, &c.) in the foot-notes.

Strachan had left behind no material for the Glossary except a first rough list of words. In drawing it up use was made of a letter to Thurneysen, in which he expressed his intention to arrange the words according to their actual sounds. His only doubts were about the phonetic value of final *c*, *t*, *p*. On this point he wrote: "Of course final *b* is common, also certain of my texts write *d* for *d*. But none of them have *g* for final *g*." In accordance with modern pronunciation, Professor Meyer considered it desirable to substitute the letter *g*, though the period at which final *c* became voiced has not yet been established.

No notes to the texts were found among Strachan's papers. He had brought back from Peniarth, from MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, and 46, a large number of variants to the Story of Lear and that of Arthur, which he would no doubt have used for his notes. Those to Lear have been printed in an Appendix; but the Peniarth versions of Arthur seem to differ so much from those of the *Red Book* and the Additional MS. 19,709 that they would have to be printed in full.

Since the great work of Zeuss, this is the first attempt to write a grammar of Early Welsh on historical principles. It was the hope of the author expressed in letters to friends that his work would stir up Welsh scholars to investigate more thoroughly than they have done hitherto the history of their language. But no one was more conscious of the gaps still left by his work than Strachan himself. "It is only a beginning," he wrote to Thurneysen. "I hope people will make some allowance for the difficulties of the work and the scanty amount of trustworthy material. One is continually finding out something new." References to the need of further investigation will be found in many places throughout the Grammar. His own discoveries

of the functions of *ry*, of the relative forms of the verb, and his account of the uses of the verbal prefixes *a* and *yδ* point out the way to future investigators in this neglected field of research. To these discoveries he was led by his unrivalled knowledge of Irish grammar, so intimately connected in its origins with that of Welsh that he believed no true progress possible without their parallel study. "It is absurd to think," he once wrote to Mr. Best, "that either branch of Celtic can be satisfactorily studied apart from the other;" and to Mr. Giles: "Without the knowledge of Irish early Welsh grammar is rather like a book sealed with seven seals."

The circumstances under which this book has been produced having been thus indicated, it remains to express acknowledgement of the work of the scholars who have contributed towards the result: first to those whose assistance to Professor Strachan in his lifetime he would specially have desired to recognise; in particular to Dr. Evans who furnished the editions both published and unpublished of the Welsh texts which were used in compiling the Reader; to the late Mr. Wynne of Peniarth who freely gave access to the MSS. in his possession; and to Sir John Rhys (joint editor of the *Red Book* and of other texts) and to the Fellows of Jesus College, Oxford, who afforded every facility in their power; secondly to those who since the author's death have enabled his work to be presented to the public, especially to Professor Tout who initiated the idea of preparing the book for publication and undertook the arrangements for it; to Professor Kuno Meyer, whose long and intimate association with Strachan in his Celtic studies specially fitted him to undertake the duty of revising the whole work and seeing it through the press; to Mr. Lewis in assisting Professor Meyer particularly in the preparation

of the Glossary; and to Mr. O. Eilian Owen and Mr. J. Glyn Davies for their help in reading proofs. The title of the book was chosen by Strachan himself.

It has been the earnest wish of those who have taken part in preparing this work for publication that it should appear in a form worthy of the reputation and memory of the distinguished scholar whose career was cut short so sadly in the midst of his full literary activity, and that the results of his devoted labours and profound learning should not be lost to students of the Welsh language.

*February, 1909.*

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

|                                 | PAGE |
|---------------------------------|------|
| Preface - - - - -               | v    |
| List of Abbreviations - - - - - | xv   |

### GRAMMAR

The numbers refer to the paragraphs.

#### Sounds and sound changes 1—22.

Vowels and diphthongs 1; vowel quantity 2; accented vowels 2A; unaccented 2A; consonants classified 3; orthographical variations 3; accent 4; changes of vowels 5; changes of vowels due to *i* vowel preserved 6; changes due to a lost vowel 7; vowel variation due to accent 8; prothetic vowel 9; epenthetic vowel 10; consonantal changes 11; sound changes within the sentence 12; table of consonant mutations 13; vocalic mutation or lenation 14; general exceptions to rules of lenation 15; lenation of noun and adjective 16; lenation of pronoun 17; lenation of verb 18; nasal mutation 19-20; spirant mutation 21; *h* in sentence construction 22.

#### The Article 23-24.

#### The Noun 25-29.

Numbers and cases 25; syntax of the cases 26; formation of plural 27-28; collective nouns 29.

#### The Adjective 30—39.

Gender 30; formation of plural 31; concord 32; number 33; order in sentence 34; predicative noun and adjective with *yn* 35; adjectival phrases 36; comparison 37; construction of comparative and superlative 38; the equative 39.

#### The Adverb 40.

#### The Numerals 41—44.

Cardinals and ordinals 41; syntax of cardinals and ordinals 42; distributives 43; multiplicatives 44.

#### The Pronoun 45—90.

Personal pron. 45—51; independent pron. 45—47; infixed pron. 48—51; pron. with preposition 52—54; possessive pron. 55-56; possessive adjs. 57—59; *hun*, *hunan* etc. 60; demons. pron. 61-62; article + substantive + adverb 63; indefinite prons. and adjs. 64—72; substantives in a pronominal function 73—78; interrog. prons. 79—81; relat. prons. 82—89; expression of case in the relative 86—89; substitutes for the relative 90.

Preverbal particles 91—97.

The particle *yd* 91—94; the particle *ry* 95—97.

The Verb 98—161.

Conjugation of the verb 98—126: verbal classes 98; voice 99; number 100—101; person 102—3.

The moods 104; the indicative 105—109; present 106; imperfect 107; preterite 108; pluperfect 109.

The subjunctive 110—114: formation of subj. 110; tenses 111; usages of subj. 112—114.

The imperative 115.

The participle passive in *-edic* 116; verbal in *-adwy* 117.

The verbal noun: formation of 118—119; usage 120—126.

Paradigm of the regular verb 127—139: types 127; pres. and fut. indic. 128—130; imperf. indic. and conditional 131; pret. and perf. indic. act. 132; pret. and perf. indic. pass. 134; plupf. indic. 135—136; imperat. 137; pres. subjunctive 138; past subj. 139.

Irregular verbs: *mynet* 140; *dyvot* 141; *gwneuthur* 142; *gwybot* 143; *adnabot* 144; *caffel* 145; *rodi* 146; *tawr* 147; *moes* 148; *hwde* 149; *med* 150; *heb* 151.

The substantive verb: paradigm 152; remarks on subst. vb. 154; on copula 155—158; position of copula 159.

Compounds of *bot* 160—161.

The Preposition 162—197.

The Conjunction 198—234.

Negative particles 235—238.

Interrogative particles 239—240.

Responsive particles 240—241.

The Interjection 243—244.

## READER

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        | PAGE |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| I. Lear and his Daughters - - - - -                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | 139  |
| From <i>Ystorya Brenhined y Brytanyeit</i> , printed in <i>Red Book of Hergest</i> , ed. J. Rhŷs and J. G. Evans, vol. ii, pp. 64—69. The variants are from Brit. Mus. MSS. Add. 19,709.                                                                                               |      |
| II. The Story of Arthur - - - - -                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      | 145  |
| From the same source, pp. 184—232.                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     |      |
| III. The Hunting of Twrch Trwyth - - - - -                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             | 193  |
| An excerpt from the story of <i>Kulhwch and Olwen</i> . Chapters 1—6 are from the <i>White Book of Rhydderch</i> (Peniarth MS. 4), with variants from the <i>Red Book</i> (Rhŷs-Evans, vol. i, pp. 126—128); chapters 7—25 from the <i>Red Book</i> (ib. p. 128, l. 13—p. 142, l. 19). |      |

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |     |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| IV. The Procedure in a Suit for Landed Property                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      | 208 |
| From the oldest copy of the Laws of Howel Dda contained in the <i>Black Book of Chirk</i> (Peniarth MS. 29). The variants are from Aneurin Owen's <i>Ancient Laws of Wales</i> , vol. i, pp. 142—156. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan. |     |
| V. The Privilege of St. Teilo                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        | 222 |
| From Evans-Rhŷs, <i>Liber Landavensis</i> , p. 118. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan.                                                                                                                                                   |     |
| VI. Moral Verses                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     | 225 |
| From the <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1031, printed in Skene's <i>Four Ancient Books of Wales</i> , vol. ii, pp. 249—250.                                                                                                                                                                                  |     |
| VII. Doomsday                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        | 227 |
| From the Book of Taliessin, printed in <i>Four Ancient Books</i> , vol. ii, pp. 118—123. Strachan has made no use of the variants printed in <i>Myvyrian Archaiology</i> , p. 72 ff.                                                                                                                 |     |
| VIII. To Gwenwynwyn                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | 233 |
| From the <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1394, where it comes after several poems ascribed to Llywelyn Vardd; printed in <i>Myvyrian Archaiology</i> , p. 176a, where it is ascribed to Cynddelw.                                                                                                             |     |
| IX. Cynddelw to Rhys ab Gruffudd                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     | 234 |
| (a) from <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , ed. J. G. Evans, fo. 39b; (b) from <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1436.                                                                                                                                                                                           |     |
| X. A Religious Poem                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | 237 |
| From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 20a, and from <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1159.                                                                                                                                                                                                                |     |
| XI. A Dialogue between Ugnach Uab Mydno and Taliessin                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                | 239 |
| From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 51a.                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |     |
| XII. Winter                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                          | 241 |
| From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 45a.                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |     |
| Glossary                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             | 243 |
| Appendix                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             | 277 |
| Index                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                | 279 |
| Corrigenda                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           | 293 |





## LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

- Anc. Laws. Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales, edited by Aneurin Owen. 1841.
- Arch. Archiv für celtische Lexikographie.
- Arch. Cambr. Archaeologia Cambrensis.
- BB. Black Book of Carmarthen, edited by J. G. Evans. Oxford. 1888.
- Black Book of Chirk.<sup>1</sup>
- Bezz. Beitr. Bezzenberger's Beiträge zur Kunde der indogermanischen Sprachen.
- Bret. Breton.
- CM. Ystorya de Carolo Magno, from the Red Book of Hergest, edited by Thomas Powell. 1883.
- Corn. Cornish.
- Cymrod. Y Cymmrodor, embodying the Transactions of the Cymmrodorion Society of London. 1877 ff.
- CZ. Zeitschrift für celtische Philologie.
- E. Lh. Archæologia Britannica, by Edward Lhuyd. Oxford. 1707.
- Eng. English.
- Eriu The Journal of the School of Irish Learning, Dublin.
- FB. The Four Ancient Books of Wales by W. F. Skene. Edinburgh. 1868.
- Gaul. Gaulish.
- Hg. Selections from the Hengwrt Mss. edited by Robert Williams, vol. I. 1876; vol. II. London. 1892.
- Ir. Irish.
- KZ. Kuhn's Zeitschrift für vergleichende Sprachforschung.
- LA. The Elucidarium and other tracts in Welsh from Llyvyr Agkyr Llandewivrevi, edited by J. Morris Jones and John Rhŷs. Oxford. 1894.

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the photographic facsimile about to be published by J. G. Evans.

Lat. Latin.

Laws, see Anc. Laws.

Leg. Wall. Cyfreithjeu Hywel Dda ac eraill, seu Leges Wallicae,  
edited by W. Wotton. Londini. 1730.

Lhuyd, see E. Lh.

Lib. Land. Liber Landavensis, edited by J. G. Evans and  
J. Rhŷs. Oxford. 1893.

Loth Mab. Les Mabinogion traduits en entier par J. Loth.  
Paris. 1889.

MA. The Myvyrian Archaiology of Wales. Denbigh. 1870

Mart. Cap. The Old-Welsh Glosses on Martianus Capella edited  
by Wh. Stokes in the *Archaeologia Cambrensis* for 1873,  
p. 1 ff. and in *Beiträge zur vergl. Sprachforschung* VII.  
p. 385 ff.

Mid. Middle.

Mod. Modern.

O. Old.

Ox. gl. Glossae Oxonienses, edited in Zeuss-Ebel, *Grammatica  
Celtica*, p. 1052 ff. Berlin. 1871.

Pughe A Dictionary of the Welsh Language by W. Owen Pughe.  
2. ed. Denbigh. 1832.

RB. The Red Book of Hergest edited by J. Rhŷs and J. G.  
Evans, vol. I. (Mabinogion), Oxford. 1887; vol. II.  
(The Bruts), Oxford. 1890.

Rev. Celt. Revue Celtique.

Rhŷs, Celt. Heath. J. Rhŷs, Lectures on the Origin and Growth  
of Religion as illustrated by Celtic Heathendom. 3. ed.  
1898.

Rhŷs, Lect. J. Rhŷs, Lectures on Welsh Philology. 2. ed.  
London. 1879.

WB. The White Book of Rhydderch.<sup>1</sup>

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the edition  
about to be published by J. G. Evans.

## §§ 1, 2.] SOUNDS AND SOUND-CHANGES.

### SOUNDS AND SOUND-CHANGES.

#### VOWELS AND DIPHTHONGS.

1. Middle Welsh has the following system :—

Vowels :—**a, e, i, o, u, w, y.**

Diphthongs :—**ae, oe, ei, eu, aw, ew, iw, yw, wy.**

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations :

(a) **u** is written **u** or **v**, e.g. **un** or **vn** *one*. That **u** already in O.W. approached to an **i** sound is shown by the spelling **Dinoot** (from Lat. *Donatus*) in Bede for what in O.W. would be normally **Dunaut**, later **Dunawt**.

(b) **w** (= **u** in sound) is in Mid.W. commonly written **w** or **6** ; in O.W. it is written **u**, and in some Mid.W. MSS. **u** or **v**, e.g. O.W. **crunn** *round*, later **crunn**, **crvnn**, **cr6nn**, **crwnn**. The same applies to **w** in diphthongs, e.g. O.W. **dui** *two*, later **duý**, **dvý**, **dóy**, **dwy** ; O.W. **bleu** *hair*, later **bleu**, **blev**, **bleó**, **blew**.

(c) **y** is in O.W. written **i**, in Mid.W. MSS. **i**, **e**, **ý**, **y**, e.g. O.W. **hinn** *these*, later **henn**, **hýnn**, **hynn**.

(d) The diphthongs **ae**, **oe**, are in O.W. **ai**, **oi**, later **ai**, **aý**, **ay**, **ae** ; **oi**, **oý**, **oy**, **oe**, e.g. O.W. **air** *slaughter*, later **aýr**, **ayr**, **aer** ; O.W. **coit** *wood*, later **coýt**, **coyt**, **coet**.

(e) The diphthong **eu** appears in O.W. as **ou**, e.g. **aperthou** *offerings*, later **abertheu**. In final position in Mid.W. **-eu** sometimes appears as **-e**, e.g. **minhe** *on my part* = **minheu** ; in Mod.W. it is written **-au**, e.g. **pennau** *heads* = Mid.W. **penneu**.

(f) For **wy**, **oý** and **oe** are also found, e.g. **boý** = **bwy** *he may be*, **moe** = **mwý** *greater*.

#### VOWEL QUANTITY.

2. The quantity of vowels depends not on their prehistoric quantity, but on the nature of the syllables in which they stand. Apart from dialectal variation, the following may serve as approximate rules, at least for the period subsequent to the shifting of the accent (§ 4).

A. Accented vowels are :—

(a) Long.

(α) In monosyllables ending in a vowel, e.g. **tȳ** *house*.

(β) In monosyllables ending in a single consonant, e.g. **dȳn** *man* (= O.Ir. *duine*), **gwlād** *country* (= O.Ir. *flaith*), **māb** *son*, **glān** *pure* (= O.Ir. *glan*), **glās** *green* (= O.Ir. *glas*), **crȳch** *curly*.

NOTE.—**s** always goes back to an earlier **ss**; **ch**, **th**, **ff** (= **f** in sound) to an earlier double consonant, e.g. **crȳch** *curly* = Gaul. *Crixos*, **brīth** *variegated* = Ir. *mrecht*, **clōff** *lame* = Low Lat. *cloppus*; here the reduction to a single consonant was prior to the operation of the above law. In Mod.W. a vowel is short before final **c**, **t**, **p**; these final sounds occur only in late borrowings.

(b) Half-long, in open syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **dī-nas** *city*: **dīn** *fortress* (= Ir. *dūn*), **tā-deu** *fathers*: **tād** *father*.

(c) Short.

(α) In monosyllables originally ending in a double consonant (with the above exceptions), e.g. **pěnn** *head* (= Ir. *cenn*), **trw̄m** *heavy* (= Ir. *tromm*), **pārth** *part* (from Lat. *part-em*).

(β) In closed syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **pěnn** *heads*: **pěnn**, **ūndeb** *unity*: **ūn** *one* (= Ir. *ōen*). The vowel is somewhat shorter in polysyllables like **penneu** than in monosyllables like **penn**.

B. Unaccented vowels are short. This rule also applies to proclitic words like **heb** *without*, **fy** *mine*, **dy** *thine*.

## THE CONSONANTS.

3. The consonants may be classified :—

|              | Explosives. |          | Spirants.               |              | Nasals.    |                         |
|--------------|-------------|----------|-------------------------|--------------|------------|-------------------------|
|              | Voiceless.  | Voiced.  | Voiceless.              | Voiced.      | Voiceless. | Voiced.                 |
| Gutturals    | <b>c</b>    | <b>g</b> | <b>ch</b>               | ( <b>ȝ</b> ) | <b>ngh</b> | <b>ng</b> (= <i>ŋ</i> ) |
| Dentals      | <b>t</b>    | <b>d</b> | <b>th</b>               | <b>ḏ</b>     | <b>nh</b>  | <b>n</b>                |
| Labiodentals |             |          | <b>ff</b> (= <b>f</b> ) | <b>v</b>     |            |                         |
| Labials      | <b>p</b>    | <b>b</b> |                         |              | <b>mh</b>  | <b>m</b>                |

Liquids. Voiceless:—ll, rh; voiced:—l, r.

Semivowels:—y, w.

Sibilant:—s.

Breath:—h.

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations:—

(a) For O.W. **c**=**k**, both **c** and **k** found in Mid.W., **c** particularly at the end of a word; e.g. O.W. *cimadas* *fitting*, Mid.W. *kyvadas* and *cyvadas*. In Mid.W. **sc**, **sp** became **sg**, **sb**, e.g. *kysgu* by *kyscu* *to sleep*, *ysbryd* from Lat. *spiritus*.

(b) With regard to the graphic representation of the mediæ the following may be noted. In Old British the symbols **c**, **t**, **p** were taken over from Latin with their Latin values. In the course of time, before the loss of final syllables, **c**, **t**, **p**, when they stood between vowels, or after a vowel and before certain consonants, became in sound mediæ **g**, **d**, **b**, but continued in O.W. to be usually written **c**, **t**, **p**, e.g. *trucarauc* *compassionate* = Mid.W. *trugarawc*, Mod.W. *trugarog*, *dacr* *tear* = Mid.W. *dagyr*, *atar* *birds* = Mid.W. *adar*, *datl* *gl. foro* = Mid.W. *dadyl*, *etn* *bird* = Mid.W. *edyn*, *cepistyr* *halter* (from Lat. *capistrum*) = Mid.W. *kebystyr*. In Mid.W. **g**, **d**, **b** are regularly written in the interior of a word (except that **c**, **t**, **p** may appear in composition, e.g. *rac-ynys* *fore-island*, *kyt-varchogyon* *fellow-horsemen*, *hep-cor* *to dispense with*, or in inflexion and derivation under the influence of the simple word, e.g. *gwlatoed*, by *gwlad* *countries*: *gwlat*, *gwaet-lyt* *bloody*: *gwaet*). But final **g** is regularly expressed by **c**, and final **d** by **t** (except in certain MSS. such as BB. which express **d** regularly by **d** and use **t** to express the spirant **ḏ**). Final **p** for **b** is not so universal; there are found, e.g. *pawp*, *pop*, *everyone*, *every* by *pawb*, *pob*, and *mab* *son*, *heb* *said*.

(c) The spirant **f** is in O.W. written **f**, and this orthography survives in Mid.W., but the usual Mid.W. symbol is **ff** or **ph**. In O.W. the tenuis is sometimes traditionally written for the spirant, e.g. *cilcet* *gl. tapiseta* (from Lat. *culcita*) = Mod.W. *cylched*.

(d) With regard to the graphic representation of the voiced spirants the following may be noted. **g**, **d**, **b**, **m** were taken from Latin with their Latin values. In time, between vowels and before and after certain consonants, they became spirants **ḡ**, **ḏ**, **v**, but continued to be written **g**, **d**, **b**, **m**, e.g. *scamnhegint* *gl. levant* = later *ysgavnehynt*, *colginn* *gl. aristan* = Mod.W. *colyn* *sting*, *cimadas* *fitting* = Mod.W. *cyfaddas*, *abal* *apple* = later *aval*. In O.W. the spirant **g** had already been lost in part, e.g. *nertheint* *gl. armant* by *scamnhegint*, *tru* *wretched* = Ir. *truag* *wretched*. In Mid.W. the spirant **g** has disappeared. The spirant **ḏ**, which in Mod.W. is written **dd**, is in Mid.W. usually expressed by **d**, e.g. *rodi* *to give* = Mod.W. *rhoddi*, except in certain MSS. such as BB. which use the symbol **t**, e.g. *roti* = *rhoddi*. The spirant **v** in Mid.W. is written **u**, **uu**, **v**, **fu**, **f**, the last particularly at the end of a word, (e.g. *cyuadas*, *cyvadas*, *cyfuadas*, *cyfadas* *fitting* = O.W. *cimadas*, Mod.W. *cyfaddas*), in Mod.W. **f**; in certain MSS., however, such as BB. it is expressed by **w**, e.g. *calaw* *reeds* = *calaf*. In O.W. final **v** has been already lost in part, e.g. *lau* *hand* = Ir. *lām*, and in the course of time it tends more and more to disappear, e.g. in Mid.W. the superlative ending **-af** appears also as **-a**.

(e) The guttural nasals **ng** (i.e. *ŋ* as in Eng. *sing*) and **ngh** are often written **g** and **gh**, e.g. **llog**=*llong ship*, **agheu** *death*=**angheu**.

(f) The voiceless **l** is in O.W. written **l** at the beginning of a word, e.g. **lau** *hand*=Mid.W. **llaw**, elsewhere **ll**, e.g. **mellhionou** gl. *violae*. In Mid.W. it is in all positions written **ll** or **ll**. For the voiceless **r**=Mod.W. **rh**; Early Welsh has no special symbol; it is written **r**.

(g) The semivowel **y** is in O.W. written **i**, e.g. **iechuit** gl. *sanitas*, **mellhionou** gl. *violae*: in Mid.W. it is expressed by **i**, e.g. **ieith** *speech*, or **y**, e.g. **engyllyon** *angels*. In the initial combinations **hw** (from an earlier **sv**), which in Mid.W. appears as **chw** or dialectally as **hw**, and **gw** (from an earlier **w**), **w** is in O.W. expressed by **u**, e.g. **hui** *you*=Mid.W. **chwi**, **guin** *wine* (from Lat. *uinum*)=Mid.W. **gwin**; in Mid.W. it is commonly written **6**, **w**, but in some MSS. **u**, **v**, e.g. **g6ynn**, **guynn**, **gvynn** *white*; but in Mid.W. O.W. initial **guo-** becomes **go-**. In other positions in Mid.W. **w** is expressed by **6**, **w**, sometimes by **u**, **uu**, **v**; here it comes from O.W. **gu**, e.g. O.W. **neguid** *new*=Mid.W. **newyd**, **neuyd**, **neuuyd**, **nevyd**, O.W. **petgnar** *four*=Mid.W. **petwar**, **petuar**, **petvar**. It is to be noted that initial **gw** from an earlier **w** does not form a syllable even before a consonant; thus **gwlad** *country* from *\*ulatis*=Ir. *flaith* *kingdom* is monosyllabic.

## THE ACCENT.

4. In accented words in Mod.W. the accent, with certain exceptions, falls on the penult, e.g. **pechádur** *sinner*, **tragywýddol** *eternal*. This accentuation, however, has replaced an earlier system which was common to all the British dialects and is still preserved in the Breton dialect of Vannes, according to which the accent fell on the last syllable, e.g. **paraŵt** *ready*. The effect of this earlier accentuation is seen in the weakening of vowels in syllables that according to the later system would have borne the accent, e.g. **pechadúr** *sinner* from Lat. **peccātōrem**: **pechawt** *sin* from Lat. **peccātum**, O.W. **Dimét**, Mid.W. **Dyvet**: **Demetae**, O.W. **hinhám**, Mid.W. **hynhaf** *oldest*: **hen** *old*, Mid.W. **llynghes** *fleet*: **llong** *ship*, O.W. **cilchét**, Mid.W. **cylchet** from Lat. *culcita*, Mid.W. **drysseu** *doors*: **drws** *door*. The date of the change of accent has not yet been accurately fixed; with it seems to be connected the change of **aw** to **o** in final syllables, e.g. Mid.W. **pechawt**=Mod.W. **pechod**, of which there are sporadic instances in early Mid.W., e.g. **rýmdýwod** (= **rym dywawt**), BB. 28<sup>a</sup> 13.

## CHANGES OF VOWELS.

## Changes due to a vowel which follows or which originally followed.

5. The quality of a vowel is liable to be influenced by the vowel of the following syllable. Sometimes the infecting vowel remains, e.g. **Ceredic** from Old British **Coroticus**, **eyt goes** = O.W. **egit** by O.W. **agit**, **menegi to show** by **managaf I show**. Sometimes the infecting vowel has been lost, e.g. **trom f.** by **trwm m. heavy** from **\*trum mā**, **\*trummos** (where it will be seen that the short vowel of the masculine exerted no influence, while the long vowel of the feminine did), **brein ravens** (by **bran raven**) from **\*branī**, earlier **\*branoi**, **cyrn horns** (by **corn horn**) from **\*cornī**, earlier **\*cornoi**, **dreic dragon** (by pl. **dragon**) from **\*dracī**, from **\*dracū** from Lat. **dracō**, **ceint I sing** (by **cant he sang**) from **\*cantī**, from **\*cantū**, from **\*cantō**, **Meir** from Lat. **Maria**, **yspeil spoil** from Lat. **spolium**. The infection may extend back more than one syllable e.g. **menegi: managaf, deveit sheep: davat a sheep**. The following are the changes of the kind which are important for inflection:—

A. CHANGES DUE TO AN *i* VOWEL PRESERVED.

6. **a > e**, e.g. **ederyn a bird: adar birds, peri to cause: paraf I cause, edewis he promised: adaw to promise, cerit was loved: caru to love, llewenyd, O.W. leguenid joy: llawen joyous**.

**ae > ei**, e.g. **meini stones: maen stone, seiri artisans: saer**.

## B. CHANGES DUE TO A LOST VOWEL.

7. (a) The lost vowel is **ā**.

**y > e**, e.g. **berr f.: byrr m. short**. The variation in **brith**, f. **braith variegated** is of the same kind; **brith** comes from **\*mric̄tos**, **braith** from **\*mrectā**, **\*mric̄tā**.

**w > o**, e.g. **trom f.: trwm m. heavy**.

(b) The lost vowel is **ī** (of various origin).

**a > ei**, e.g. **meib sons: mab son, meneich monks: manach**



*monk*; **geill** *is able*: **gallaf** *I am able*, **gweheird** *he forbids*: **gwahardaf** *I forbid*, **ceint** *I sang*: **cant** *he sang*.

**ae** > **ei**, e.g. **mein** *stones*: **maen** *stone*, **Seis** *Saxon* (from \***Saxī**, \***Saxū**, **Saxō**): **Saeson** (from **Saxōnes**).

Final **aw** > **eu**, **y**, e.g. **teu** *is silent*: **tawaf** *I am silent*, **edeu**, **edey**, **edy** *leaves*: **adawaf** *I leave*.

**e** > **y**, e.g. **hyn** *older*: **hen** *old*, **cestyll** *castles*: **castell** *castle*, **gwyl** *sees*: **gwelaf** *I see*, **gweryt** *helps*: **gwaret** *to help*.

**o** > **y**, e.g. **pyrth** *gates*: **porth** *gate*, **escyb** *bishops*: **escob** *bishop*, **tyrr** *breaks*: **torraf** *I break*, **egyr** *opens*: **agoraf** *I open*, **try** *turns*: **troaf** *I turn*.

**oe** > **wy**, e.g. **wyn** *lambs* (from \***ognī**): **oen** *lamb* (from \***ognos**).

**w** > **y**, e.g. **bylch** *gaps*: **bwlch** *gap*, **yrch** *roebucks*: **ywrch** *roeback*.

NOTE 1.—In the 3 sg. pres. indic. act. of the verb the prehistoric ending is uncertain; **geill** might come phonetically from either \***gallit** or \***gallyet**. In verbs containing radical **o**, infection is found only in the 3 sg. pres. indic. act., e.g. **tyrr** *he breaks*, but **torri** *to break*, **torrynt** *they broke*, **torrir** *is broken*. In shaping the conjugation of these verbs analogy seems to have played a large part, but the details of the development are obscure.

NOTE 2.—It will be observed that in the case of **i** infection the infection extends back to a preceding **a**, e.g. **deveit**, **edewis**, **egyr**.

NOTE 3.—There is also a variation between **ae** and **eu**, **ei**, e.g. **caer** *city*: pl. **ceuryd**, **ceyryd**; **aeth** *he went*: **euthum** *I went*.

### Vowel Variation due to Accent.

8. Celtic **ā** became in British **ō**; the **ō** stage is seen in Bede's **Dinoot** from Lat. **Donātus**, and in early Irish loanwords which came from Latin through Britain, e.g. **trindōit** *Trinity* from Lat. *trinitātem*. In Welsh, during the period of the older accentuation this **ō** became in accented syllables **aw**, e.g. **Dunaŵd**, **trindaŵt**, in unaccented syllables **o**. To this are due variations like O.W. **cloriou** gl. *tabellae*: sg. **clawr**, Mid.W. **marchogyon** *horsemen*: **marchawc** *horseman*, **moli** *to praise*: **mawl** *praises*, and the proclitic **pob** *every* (= Ir. *cäch*): accented **pawb** *everyone* (= Ir. *cäch*). After the shifting of the accent from the ultima to the penult, **aw** in accented words of more than one syllable became **o**,

e.g., Mod.W. **márchog** = Mid.W. **marchawc**, but Mod.W. **pawb** = Mid.W. **pawb**. For other instances of vowel weakening in unaccented syllables see § 4.

#### PROTHETIC VOWEL.

9. Before words which in O.W. began with **s** + consonant there developed in the Mid.W. period a prothetic **y**, e.g. **ysgriven** *writing*: O.W. **scribenn**, **ystaveil** *chamber*: O.W. **stabell**, **ystrodur** *packsaddle*: O.W. **strotur**, **yspeil** *spoil*: O.W. **\*speil**, from Lat. *spolium*.

#### EPENTHETIC VOWEL.

10. Before a final liquid, nasal, or **v**, an epenthetic vowel is often written, which, however, does not count metrically as a syllable.

(a) Consonant + **l**, e.g. **mýnw<sup>w</sup>gyl** by **mýnw<sup>w</sup>gl** *neck* = Mod. W. **mynwgl**; **kenedel**, **kenedyl** by **kenedl** *race* = O.W. **cenetl**, Mod.W. **cenedl**; **kwbwl**, **kwbyl** by **kwbl** *whole* = Mod.W. **cwbl**; **tavyl** *sling* = Mod.W. **tafl**.

(b) Consonant + **r**, e.g. **hagyr** by **hagr** *ugly* = Mod.W. **hagr**; **lleidyr** by **lleidr** *robber* = Mod.W. **lleidr**; **llestyr** *vessel* = O.W. **llestr**, **llestir**, Mod.W. **llestr**; **dwvyr**, **dwvwr** by **dwvr** *water* = Mod.W. **dwfr**.

(c) Consonant + **m**, e.g. **talym** *space* = Mod.W. **talm**.

(d) Consonant + **n**, e.g. **gwadyn** by **gwadn** *sole* = Mod.W. **gwadn**; **dwvyn** *deep* = Mod.W. **dwfn**.

(e) Consonant + **v**, e.g. **dedyf** *custom* = Mod.W. **deddf**; **baraf**, **baryf** *beard* = Mod.W. **barf**; **twrwf**, **twryf** by **twrf** *noise*.

#### CONSONANTAL CHANGES.

11. The following changes of consonants in combination are of importance for accidentence:—

(a) In the Indo-Germanic parent language **d** or **t** + **t** became **t't**, and **t't** in Celtic became **ss**, e.g. W. **llas** *was killed* = Ir. -slass from **\*slat'tos**: **llad** *kill* = Ir. *slaidid* *hears*.

(b) **act** > **aeth**, or, with *ī* infection, > **eith**; **ect** > **eith**; **wct** > **wyth**; **wcn**, **wgn** > **wyn**, e.g. **aeth** *he went* from \***act**, but **imdeith** *I travelled* from \***actī** (earlier \***actū**, \***actō**): Mid.W. **eyd goes** = O.W. **egit**, **agit**; **dyrreith** *he returned*, from \***-rekt**: √**reg-**; **amwyth** *he defended* from \***amukt**: **amwgaf** *I defend*, of which the verbal noun is **amwyn** from \***amucn**...

(c) **rt** > **rth**, e.g. **cymmerth** *he took* from \***com-bert**: **cymmeraf** *I take*.

(d) Before a labial **n** becomes **m**, e.g. **y maes** *in the field* from **yn maes**.

(e) **nd**, **mb** > **nn**, **mm**, e.g. **vyn nyvot**, **vy nyvot** *my coming* from **vyn dyvot**; **ym mwyt**, **y mwyt** *into food* from **yn bwyt**.

(f) **nc**, **nt**, **mp**. At the end of a word **nc**, **mp** remained, e.g. **ieuanc** *young*, **pump** *five*; **nt** remained in accented monosyllables, e.g. **dant** *tooth* (but proclitic **can**, **gan** *with* = O.W. **cant**); in words of more than one syllable it appears as **nt** or **n**, e.g. **ugeint** and **ugein** *twenty*, **carant** and **caran** *they love*. In the interior of a word **nc**, **nt**, **mp** develop regularly in the penultimate syllable to **ng**, **nn**, **mm**, in the antepenult to **ngh**, **nh**, **mh**, e.g. **tranc** *cessation*: **trenghi** *to cease*; **angen** *necessity* (from \***ancen** = Ir. **ēcen**): **anghenawc** *necessitous*; O.W. **hanther** *half*, later **hanner**; **dant** *tooth*: **danned** *teeth*: **danhedawc** *toothed*; O.W. **pimphet** *fifth*, later **pymmet**; **cymmell** *compulsion* (from Lat. *compello*): pl. **cymhellyon**. The regular development, however, is liable to be affected by analogy.

NOTE 1.—The cause of the different treatment in the penult and the antepenult is the accent. In early W. the accent was on the last syllable (§ 4); the syllable immediately preceding the accent would be most weakly accented, the syllable before that would have a secondary accent, e.g. **anghenawc**, **danhedawc**, **cymhellyón**.

(g) Before **h**—

(a) **g**, **d**, **b** become *tenues*, e.g. **teckaf** *most beautiful* from \***teg-haf**: **tec** (phonetically **teg**) *beautiful*, **tebycko** from \***tebyg-ho** *he may think*: **tebygu** *to think*, **plyckau** *to fold* from \***plyg-hau**: **plyc** (phonetically **plyg**) *fold*; **calettaf** *hardest* from \***caled-haf**: **calet** (phonetically **caled**) *hard*, **cretto** *he may believe* from \***cred-ho**:

**credu** to *believe*, **bwyta** to *eat* from \***bwyd-ha** : **bwyt** (phonetically **bwyd**) *food*; **cyvellyppaf** *most like* from \***cyvelyb-haf** : **cyvelyp** (phonetically **cyvelyb**) *like*, **attepo** from \***ad-heb-ho** *he may answer* : **attebu**, **digaplo** *he may cease to calumniate* from \***digabl-ho** : **digablu**, **llwyprawt** from \***llwybr-hawt** *will course* : **llwybraw** to *course*.

(β) **đ** becomes **th**, e.g. **diwethaf** *last* from \***diwedđ-haf** : **diwed** *end*, **rotho** *he may give* from \***rodđ-ho** : **rodi** to *give*, **rythau** to *set free* from \***ryđ-hau** ; **ryd** *free*.

(γ) **v** becomes **f**, e.g. **tyffo** *he may grow* from \***tyv-ho** : **tyvu** to *grow*, **dyffo** *he may come* : **dyvod** to *come*, **coffau** to *remember* from \***cov-hau** ; **cof** *memory*.

NOTE 2.—Instances of **ff** from **v-h** are not numerous, they have commonly been replaced by analogical forms, e.g. **araf-hau** to *make gentle*, **digrif-af** *most entertaining*. So **th** from **đ+h** becomes rarer and rarer in Mid. W., where e.g. **rotho** is replaced by **rodho** and **rodo**; the old forms are most persistent in the case of the tenues **c**, **t**, **p**. (cf. § 110)

(f) **th+đ** > **th**, e.g. **athiffero** *who may defend thee* from **ath-differo**. But here commonly the **đ** is written etymologically.

(g) **d+đ** became apparently **d**, e.g. **adyn** *wretch* from **ad-đyn** (**ad**=Ir. **aith**-, with sense of Lat. *re*-).

## SOUND-CHANGES WITHIN THE SENTENCE.

12. Within the sentence closely connected word groups are liable to changes similar to those that take place within individual words. As within the word vowel-flanked consonants were reduced, e.g. **cegin** *kitchen* from Lat. *coquina*, **niver** *number* from Lat. *numerus*, so in a word group, e.g. \***tōtā mārā** *great people* became **tud vawr**. As within the word **nc** became **ngh**, **nt** became **nh**, **mp** became **mh** (§ 11), **nd** became **nn**, e.g. **crwnn** *round* by Ir. *cruind*, **mb** became **mm**, e.g. **camn** *crooked* from Old British **cambos**, so in word groups, e.g. **vyn cynghor** *my counsel* became **vy<sup>h</sup>ghynghor**, **vyn penn** *my head* became **vym penn**, **vy mhenn**, **vyn dyvot** *my coming* became **vyn nyvot**, **yn bwyt** *into food* became **ym mwyt**, **y mwyt**. But, on the one hand, a

particular mutation may spread analogically, if it becomes connected with some grammatical function; thus in Welsh it became the rule that after all feminine nouns in the singular a following adjective was mutated, though in Celtic only certain classes of feminine nouns ended in a vowel. On the other hand, the change may analogically disappear altogether, or the mutation may be restricted to certain phrases as in the case of the nasal mutation after numerals (§ 20c). In sound groups there are three kinds of initial change (1) vocalic mutation or lenation, which originated from cases where the preceding member of the group originally ended in a vowel, (2) nasal mutation where the preceding member originally ended in **n**, (3) spirant mutation where the preceding member ended in certain consonants, most commonly **s** but also **c**.

NOTE.—In reading Early Welsh texts the student must be careful not to be misled by the orthography, which does not consistently express the initial changes. Thus if he should meet with, e.g. **y gwlat** *the country* for **y wlat**, or **vyn dyvot** for **vyn nyvot**, that is only an archaistic or etymological orthography which is no evidence of the actual sound at the time.

### 13. Table of Consonant Mutations.

|         |   | radical       |                  | vocalic          |  | nasal             |  | spirant       |
|---------|---|---------------|------------------|------------------|--|-------------------|--|---------------|
| Tenues  | { | <b>c</b> ...  | <b>corn</b> ...  | <b>gorn</b> ...  |  | <b>nghorn</b> ... |  | <b>chorn</b>  |
|         |   | <b>t</b> ...  | <b>tat</b> ...   | <b>dat</b> ...   |  | <b>nhat</b> ...   |  | <b>that</b>   |
|         |   | <b>p</b> ...  | <b>prenn</b> ... | <b>brenn</b> ... |  | <b>mhrenn</b> ... |  | <b>phrenn</b> |
| Mediae  | { | <b>g</b> ...  | <b>gwr</b> ...   | <b>wr</b> ...    |  | <b>ngwr</b>       |  |               |
|         |   | <b>d</b> ...  | <b>dyn</b> ...   | <b>ċyn</b> ...   |  | <b>nyn</b>        |  |               |
|         |   | <b>b</b> ...  | <b>baryf</b> ... | <b>varyf</b> ... |  | <b>maryf</b>      |  |               |
| Liquids | { | <b>ll</b> ... | <b>llaw</b> ...  | <b>law</b>       |  |                   |  |               |
|         |   | <b>rh</b> ... | <b>rhan</b> ...  | <b>ran</b>       |  |                   |  |               |
| Nasal   |   | <b>m</b> ...  | <b>mam</b> ...   | <b>vam</b>       |  |                   |  |               |

NOTE 1.—In vocalic mutation **g** became first the spirant **ǵ**, which was early lost (§ 3d). From the fact that initial **g** was thus lost, many words which originally began with a vowel in time assume an initial **g**; e.g. **y ord** *his hammer* (=Ir. *ord*) resembled externally **y wr** *his man*, and this superficial resemblance led to **gord** (for **ord**) like **gwr**. The principle is the same as in the development of initial **f** before a vowel in Mid.Ir.

NOTE 2.—As in Mid.W. the spirant is commonly written **d** (§ 3d), the vocalic mutation of initial **d** is not discernible in writing.

NOTE 3.—In Mid.W. initial **rh** is written **r**, so that the unmutated and the mutated forms are indistinguishable (§ 3f).

### Vocalic Mutation or Lenation.

**14.** The history of Welsh lenation has still to be written. In some respects, particularly with regard to lenation after the verb, the subject is full of difficulty. In the development of lenation analogy played a large part, so that to some extent the usage would differ at different periods. And the fixing of the rules of lenation for a particular period is complicated by the fact that the mutation is not consistently expressed in writing. The following are the chief facts about lenation in Mid. W. prose; the material is taken from the Red Book of Hergest.

**15. General exception to the rules of lenation.** After final **n** and **r** initial **ll** and **rh** were regularly unmutated, e.g. **yn llawen** *gladly*, **y llaw** = O.W. *ir lau the hand*. For **rh** the rule is seen in Mod.W., e.g. **yn rhydd** *freely*, **y rhan** *the part*. As **rh** was not written in Mid. W. this distinction is not discernible there.

#### A. LENATION OF NOUN AND ADJECTIVE (INCLUDING NOMINAL ADJECTIVAL PRONOUNS).

##### **16. (a) After the article.**

After the article in the sg. fem. the initial consonant of a following noun or adjective is lenated, e.g. **y gaer** *the city*, **yr dref** *to the town*, **y vrenhines** *the queen*. But **y llaw** *the hand* (§ 15).

##### **(b) After the noun.**

(a) After a noun in the feminine singular or the dual an adjective is lenated, e.g. **morwyn benngrech velen** *a curlyhaired auburn maid*, **deu vilgi vronwynnyon vrychyon** *two whitebreasted brindled hounds*. Also when the adjective is separated from the noun, e.g. **kaer uawr** *a welynt*, **vwyhaf** or *byt they saw a large town, the largest in the world*.

NOTE 1.—After the masc. sg. and the plur. lenation of the comparative is found in sentences of the following type: **ny welsei dyn eiryoet llu degach . . . .** *noc oed hwnnw no man had ever seen a host fairer than that* RB. 90, 13; **na welsynt llongeu gyweiryach y hansawd** *noc wynt that they had not seen ships better equipped than they* RB. 27, 3.

(β) After a noun in the fem. sg. or the dual a following genitive is lenated when it is equivalent to an adjective, e.g. **kist vaen** *a stone chest*; **deu vaen vreuan** *two millstones*.

NOTE 2.—The genitive is lenated after **meint**, **ryw**, **kyvryw** and **sawl** (§ 76-7), e.g. **y veint lewenyd** *the amount of gladness*; **pa ryw wysc** *what kind of dress?* **kyvryw wr** *such a man*; **y sawl vrenhined** *all the kings*. Further, the genitive of proper names is lenated after certain nouns, e.g. **Cadeir Vaxen** *Maxen's Seat*; **Caer Vyrddin** *Carmarthen*; **Llan badarn** *lit. Padarn's Church*; **Ynys Von** *Island of Mon*; **Eglwys Veir** *Mary's Church*; **Gwlat Vorgan** *the land of Morgan*; **pobyl Vrytaen** *the people of Britain*; **ty Gustenin** *the house of Custerin* (cf. Mod. W. **ty Dduw**); **mam Gadwaladyr** *mother of Cadwaladr*; **Branwen verch Lyr** *Branwen daughter of Llyr*; **gwreic Vrutus** *wife of Brutus*; **deu vab Varedud** *two sons of Maredud*.

(γ) After proper nouns there is lenation of a following noun or adjective denoting a characteristic of a person, e.g. **Llud vrenhin** *King Lluð*, **Peredur baladyrhir** *Peredur of the long spear*.

NOTE 3.—The initial consonants of **mab** *son* and **merch** *daughter* are lenated, e.g. **Pryderi uab Pwyll** *Pryderi son of Pwyll*, **Aranrot verch Don** *Aranrod daughter of Don*.

NOTE 4.—Further instances of lenation in apposition are, e.g. **ewythred Arthur oedynt**, **urodyr y uam** *they were uncles of Arthur, his mother's brothers*, **Giluaethwy ac Euyd** . . . **y nyeint**, **ueibion y chwaer Gilvaethwy and Ewyð** *his nephews, his sister's sons*. **Aranrot uerch Don dy nith**, **uerch dy chwaer Aranrot** *daughter of Don thy niece, thy sister's daughter*.

(δ) Lenation is found in the genitive of the verbal noun, particularly when it is separated from the governing word, e.g. **menegi uot y crydyon wedy duunaw** *declaring that the cobblers had united*; **a dyuot** . . . **yn y vedwl uynet y hela** *and it came into his mind to go to hunt*; **a ryuedu o Owein yr mackwy gyuarch gwell idaw** *and Owein wondered that the youth should greet him*.

### (c) After the adjective.

(a) When an adjective in the positive degree precedes, the noun is lenated, e.g. **brawdoryawl garyat** *brotherly love*, **dirvawr wres** *excessive heat*, **amryuaelyon gerdeu** *divers songs*. So after the pronominal adjective **holl** *all*, e.g. **holl gwn** *all the dogs*, **holl wraged** *all the women*.

NOTE 5.—For the comparative the material to hand from R.B. is scanty; with lenation: **yn llei boen** *less pain* 146, without lenation: **mwy gobeith** *greater hope* 95, **muscrellach gwr** *a more helpless man* 13. In R.B. II.

there are some instances of lenation after **mwyy** *more*. After the superlative in RB. non-lenation seems to be the rule; in RB. II. lenation is more frequent.

NOTE 6.—In Celtic, when the adjective preceded the noun, it formed a compound with it, e.g. **hen-wrach** *old hag* (§ 34a), and in composition the lenation of the second element was regular, e.g. **eur-wisc** *golden dress*, **bore-vwyt** *morning-food, breakfast*. In Welsh, when the adjective came to be used freely before the noun, the lenation of the old compounds was retained in the positive,

NOTE 7.—On the analogy of lenation in compound words and of lenation of the noun following the adjective, in poetry, when the genitive precedes the noun, it may lenate, e.g. **byd lywyadwr** *the ruler of the world*, **o Gymry werin** *of the host of the Cymry*.

(β) When an adjective is repeated, e.g. **mwyy vwy** *vyd greater and greater will be*.

(d) After YN forming adverbs, and with predicative nouns and adjectives (§ 35), e.g. **yn vynyth** *often*, **yn borth** *as a help*, **yn wreic** *as a wife*. But **yn llawen** *gladly* (§ 15).

NOTE 8.—With regard to their influence upon a following word it is necessary to bear in mind that predicative **yn** lenates, that **yn** *in* is followed by the nasal mutation (§ 20b) and that **yn** with the verbal noun, e.g. **yn mynet** *going* (§ 126a), does not affect a following consonant.

(e) After numerals.

(a) After cardinal numbers.

**un** *one*. After the fem., lenation seems to be regular, e.g. **un wreic** *one woman*, **un vil** *one thousand*, **yr un gerdet** *the same going*. Initial **ll** is regularly uninfected, e.g. **un llynges** *one fleet*. After the masc. the usage seems to vary, e.g. **vn geir** *one word* RB. 197 = WB. 123, but **vn eir** RB. II. 222, **yr un march** *the same horse* RB. 9, but **neb vn varchawc** *any horseman* RB. II. 278, **yn un uaes** *in one field* RB. 114.

NOTE 9.—In Irish, **oin** regularly mutates a following consonant. According to Rowlands, Mod. W. **un** mutates in the fem.

**deu, dwy** *two*. After these lenation is regular, e.g. **deu barchell** *two pigs*, **deu lu** *two hosts*, **dwy verchet** *two daughters*. But **deu cant** *two hundred* RB. II. *passim*.

**chwech, chwe** *six* :—**chwech wraged** *six women* RB. 18, 16; but **chwe blyned** *six years* RB. II. 387, 404.

**seith** *seven* : **seith gantref** *seven cantreds* RB. 25, 44, **seith gelfydyt** *seven arts* RB. II. 200, **seith wystyl** *seven hostages* RB.



II. 327. But usually without lenation **seith cantref**, **seith cuppyt** *seven cubits*, **seith cant** *seven hundred*, **seith punt** *seven pounds*, **seith meib** *seven sons*.

**wyth eight**: **wyth drawst** *eight beams* RB. III, 21, **wyth gant** *eight hundred* RB. II. 386, but **wyth cant** 39, 40, 230, 257, 258, 385, **wyth temyl** *eight temples* 101, **wyth tywyssawc** *eight chiefs* 14.

**naw nine**. After this lenation is occasionally found, e.g. **naw rad** *nine ranks* LA. 17.

**mil thousand**: **mil verthyr** *a thousand martyrs* RB. II. 199.

10.—In **pumwyr** *five men*, **seithwyr** *seven men*, **nawwyr** *nine men*, **canwr** *a hundred men*, there seems to be composition.

(β) After ordinal numbers.

After the feminine ordinals from *three* onwards there is lenation, e.g. **y dryded geinc** *the third branch*, **y seithvet vlwydyn** *the seventh year*, **yr vgeinuet vlwydyn** *the twentieth year*.

11.—The same rule seems to hold with **eil** *other, second*, e.g. **yr eil marchawc** *the second horseman*, but **yr eil vlwydyn** *the second year*, and with **neill** *one of two*, e.g. **y neill troet** *the one foot*, but **y neill law** *the one hand*.

(f) After the pronoun.

(a) After the possessives **dy** *thy* and **y** *his*, e.g. **dy davawt** *thy tongue*, **ath lu** *and thy host*; **y benn** *his head*, **ae rud** *and his cheek*.

(β) After interrogatives, e.g. **pa le**, **py le** *where?* **pa beth** *what thing?*

(γ) In apposition, e.g. **ynteu Bwyll** *he Pwyll*, **hitheu wreic** *Teirnon she the wife of Teirnon*; **ef Vanawydan** *he Manawydan*; on **hachaws ni bechaduryeit** *because of us sinners*.

(g) After the verb.

(a) After the verb lenation is found not only of the object but also of the subject, whether the verb immediately precedes the lenated form or is separated from it, e.g. **mi a wnn gyghor** *da I know good counsel*, **y gwelynt uarchawc** *they saw a horseman*, **ny mynnei Gaswallawn** *y lad ynteu Caswallawn did not desire to slay him*. The proportion of lenation to non-lenation differs

in different parts of the verb. After certain parts of the verb lenation is absent or exceptional. Such are 3 sg. and 3 pl. pres. ind. act., 3 sg. pres. subj. act. and the passive forms. After the 3 sg. of the pret. ind. act. non-lenation of the subject is the rule; in R.B. lenation of the object is occasionally found when it directly follows the verb, e.g. **y kavas Uendigeit** *Uran he found Bendigeit Vran*, frequently when the subject precedes it, e.g. **y lladawd Peredur wyr** *yr iarll Peredur slew the earl's men*.

(β) After most of the forms of the verb "to be" lenation is found, most consistently in the predicate from its close connexion with the verb, but also in the subject whether it follows the verb immediately or is separated from it, e.g. ot **wyt uorwyn** *if thou art a maid*, **yd ym drist** *ni we are sad*, **yssyd urenhin** *who is king*, **yssit le** *there is a place*, **nyt oed uwy** *it was not greater*, **oedynt gystal** *they were as good*, **mi a uydaf borthawr** *I am gatekeeper*, **ni a vydwn gyuarwyd** *we will be guides*, **ny bydei vyw** *he was not alive*, **y bydynt barawt** *they should be ready*, **ny buost gyvartal** *thou hast not been just*, **tra uu vyw** *while she lived*, **pan uuant veirw** *when they were dead*, **buassei oreu** *it would have been best*, **byd lawenach** *be more joyous*, **bit bont** *let him be a bridge*, **bydwch gedymdeithon** *be ye comrades*, **tra vwyf vyw** *while I live*, **tra vych vyw** *while thou livest*, **tra vom vyw** *while we live*, **mal na bont ueichawc** *so that they may not be pregnant*, **pei bewn urathedic** *if I were wounded*, **a vei vawr** *which should be great*, **gwedy y beym uedw** *after we were intoxicated*, **nyt oes blant** *there is no offspring*, **budugawl oed Gei Kei** *was gifted*, **y hwnnw y bu uab** *to him there was a son*, **cyt bei lawer** *o geiryd though there were many cities*, **nyt oes in gyghor** *we have no counsel*, **oed well ytti geisaw** *it were better for thee to seek*, **tost vu gantaw welet** *it pained him to see*. There is, however, no lenation after **ys**, e.g. **ys gwir** *it is true* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. **kanys gwell genthi gyscu** *since she prefers to sleep*); after **nyt**, **nat**, **neut**, e.g. **nyt llei** *is not less*, **neut marw** *he is dead*; after **os**, e.g. **os gwr** *if he is a man*; after **ae** e.g. **ae gwell** *is it better?* after **yw**, e.g. **pan yw Peredur** *that it is Peredur* (unless the subject be

separated, e.g. hawd **yw** gennyf **gaffel** *I think it easy to get*); after **ytti**w, e.g. a **ytti**w **Kei** yn llys Arthur *is Kei in Arthur's court?* after **mae**, e.g. **y mae llech** *there is a flagstone* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. **y mae yma uorwyn** *there is here a maiden*); after **maent**, e.g. **y maent perchen** *there are owners*; after **byd**, e.g. ny **byd gwell** *it will not be better* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. or **byd gwell genwch bresswylaw** *if ye think it better to dwell*); after **boet**, e.g. **poet kyvlawn** dy rat titheu *may thy prosperity be complete*; after **bo**, e.g. pan **uo parawt** *when it is ready* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. pan **uo amser** in **uynet** *when it is time for us to go*).

#### (h) In adverbs and adverbial phrases.

In the interior of a sentence the initial consonant of an adverb or an adverbial phrase is often lenated, e.g. nyth elwir **bellach** byth yn vorwyn *thou shalt never more be called a maiden*, ny orffowysaf **vyth** *I will never rest*, pan daeth y paganyeit **gyntaf** y Iwerdon *when the pagans came first to Ireland*, bydwch yma **vlwydyn** y dyd hediw *be ye here a year to-day*, bu farw . . . **vis whefrawr** *she died in the month of February*, pebyllaw a oruc **lawer o dydyeu** *he encamped many days*. In the same way lenation is found in preposition and suffixed pronoun, e.g. ny eill neb vynet **drwydi** *no one can go through it*, a gymero yr ergit **drossof i** *who shall take the blow in my stead*, hir uu **gennyf i** y nos honno *that night seemed long to me*.

NOTE 12.—In origin this is only a special case of post-verbal lenation, like the corresponding change in Irish, for which see Pedersen, KZ. xxxv. 332 sq.

NOTE 13.—Lenation is found of the initial consonants of some prepositions and conjunctions: **ar**=O.W. **guar** (Ir. *for*), **gen** by **can**, **wedy** by **gwedy**=O.W. **guetig**, **wrth**=O.W. **gwrth**, **dan** by **tan**, **dros**=O.W. **trus**, **drwy** by **trwy**=O.W. **troi**, **ban** by **pan**, **bei** by **pei**. The reason of the weakening here, however, seems to be that the words are pretonic.

(i) After the prepositions **am**, **ar**, **att**, **can**, **heb**, **o** (**a**), **tan**, **tros**, **trwy**, **uch**, **wrth**, **y**, and frequently after the nominal preposition **hyt**, e.g. **am betheu** *about things*; **ar vrys** *in haste*; **att Bwyll** *to Pwyll*; **gan bawb** *with every one*; **heb vwy**t *without food*; **o gerd** *of music*; **dan brenn** *under a tree*; **dros**

**vor** *across the sea*; **trwy lewenyd** *through joy*; **uch benn** *above*; **wrth Gynan** *to Cynan*; **y vynyd** *upwards*; **hyt galan Mei** *till the first of May*.

(k) After a negative in phrases like **na wir** *it is not true* RB. 105; **na well** *it is not better* RB. 61.

(l) After **mor** *how, so* and **neu** *or*, e.g. **mor druan** *how wretched*; **neu vuelyn** *or horn*.

(m) After interjections.

(a) The vocative is lenated after **a**, **ha**, **oia**, **och**, **ub** e.g. **a vorwyn** *O maiden*; **oia wr** *ho! man*; **och Ereint** *alas! Gereint*; **ub wyr** *alack! men*. But without any preceding particle lenation of the vocative is found, e.g. **dos vorwyn** *go, maiden*.

(β) After **llyma**, **llyna**, and **nachaf**, e.g. **llyma luossogrwyd** *yn ymlit see! there is a host following* RB. II. 302; **llyna uedru** *yn drwc there is bad behaviour*; **nachaf uarchawc** *yn dyuot behold! a horseman was coming*.

## B. LENATION OF THE PRONOUN.

17. The pronoun is lenated :—

(a) As subject or object, or emphasizing an infixed or suffixed pronoun or possessive adjective, e.g. **elwyf ui** *I might go*, **gallaf i** *I can*, **ny buum drwc i** *I was not evil*, **y rodaf inneu** *I will give*, **arhowch uiui** *wait for me*, **na chabla di uiui** *do not blame me*, **nyt atwaenwn i didi** *I did not recognise thee*, **ath gud ditheu** *which hides thee*, **ohonaf i**, **ohonaf inneu** *by me*, **vy ysgwyd i** *my shield*, **dy grogi di** *thy hanging*, **dy lad ditheu** *thy slaying*.

NOTE 1.—But after final **t t** is usual, e.g. **y rodeist ti** *thou hast given*, **gan dy genyat ti** *with thy leave*, **dy vot titheu** *thy being*.

(b) Sometimes in apposition, e.g. **ni a awn ui a thi** *we will go, I and thou*, **keisswn ninneu ui a thi** *let us seek, I and thou*.

(c) After other lenating words, e.g. **gwae vi** *woe to me*, **neu vinneu** *or I*, **neu ditheu** *or thou*.

## C. LENATION OF THE VERB.

18. The verb is lenated :—

(a) After infixed pronoun of sg. 2, e.g. **yth elwir** *thou art called*.

(b) After relative **a**, e.g. govyn **a oruc** *he asked*.

(c) After the interrogative **pa**, **py**, e.g. hyt na wydat **pa** (or **py**) **wnaei** *so that she did not know what she should do*; **py liwy di** *why dost thou colour?*

(d) When the copula follows the predicate (§ 159), e.g. **llawen uu y uorwyn** *the maiden was glad*.

(e) After the verbal particle **yt** (§ 91 note 2) in the older language, e.g. **yt gaffei** *he should get*.

(f) After the verbal particle **ry** (but cf. § 21 note), e.g. **ry geveis** *I have got*. Similarly after **neur** (§ 95 note), e.g. **neur gavas** *he has got*.

(g) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. **a bery di** *wilt thou effect?*

(h) After the conjunctions **pan**, **tra**, **yny**, e.g. **pan golles** *when he lost*, **tra barhaawd** *while it lasted*, **tra wwyf** *as long as I am*, **yny glyw** *till he hears*, **yny welas** *till he saw*, **yny vyd** *till he is*.

(i) After the negatives **ny** (including **ony**, **pony**) and **na** (with the exception of the tenues § 21e), e.g. **ny allaf** *I cannot*, **ny ladaf** *I will not slay*, **kany vynny** *since thou dost not desire*, **pony wydut ti** *didst thou not know?* **na ovyn di** *do not ask*, Duw a wyr **na ladaf i** *God knows that I will not slay*.

NOTE.—But after **ny**, **na** the rule of lenation is not absolute. In particular initial **m** is commonly unchanged, e.g. **ny mynnaf** *I do not desire*, **hyt na mynnei** *so that he did not desire*. Further, initial **b** of forms of **bot** to be is commonly unlenated, e.g. **ny bu gystal** *it was not so good*; a wypo **na bo miui** *who shall know that it is not I*. But in the imperative lenation seems to be the rule, e.g. **na uit amgeled gennwch** *be not troubled*. Non-lenation after **ny** comes from the old non-relative forms (§ 21 note). **Na** originally ended in a consonant (**nac**), so that after it the lenation is irregular; so far as it lenates it has followed the analogy of **ny**.

## Nasal Mutation.

19. Nasal mutation is very irregularly written in Mid.W.MSS. The mutation of **nc** is expressed by **gk** or **gh**, the mutation of **nt**

commonly by **nt**, rarely by **nh**, the mutation of **mp** commonly by **mp**, sometimes by **mph** or **mh**. The mutation of **ng** is expressed by **gg** or **ngg**, the mutation of **nd**, **nb** by **n** or **nd**, and **m** or **mb**.

20. Nasal mutation is found :—

(a) After **vyn** *my*, e.g. **vygkynghor**, **vyghynghor** *my counsel*, **vyntat**, **vynhat** *my father*, **vypenn**, **vymphen**, **vymhen** *my head*, **vyggwreic** (**gwreic**) *my wife*, **vynggwely** *my bed*, **vynyvot**, **vyndyvot** *my coming*, **vymaraf** (**baraf**) *my beard*.

(b) After **yn** *in, into*, e.g. **ygkarchar**, **ygharchar** *in prison*, **ymperved**, **ymherved** *in the centre*, **ymhoen** (**poen**) *in punishment*; **yn diwed** (= **yn niwed**) *in the end*; **ymbwyt**, **ymwyt** (**bwyt**) *into food*.

(c) In certain phrases after numerals (chiefly with **blyned** *years* and **dieu**, **diwarnawt** *days*), e.g. **pump mlyned** *five years*, **chwech mlyned** RB. II. 397 (more usually **chwe blyned**) *six years*, **seith mlyned** *seven years*, **wyth mlyned** *eight years*, **naw mlyned** *nine years*, **naw nieu** *nine days*, **deng mlyned** *ten years*, **dec nieu** *ten days*, **deudec niwarnawt** *twelve days*, **pymtheng mlyned** *fifteen years*, **ugein mlyned** *twenty years*, **deugeint mlyned** *forty years*, **cant mlyned** *a hundred years*, **can mu** *a hundred kine*, **trychan mu** *three hundred kine*.

NOTE.—This usage started from those numerals which in Old Celtic ended in **n**: **seith** (cf. Ir. *secht* **n**-, Lat. *septem*; final **m** in Celtic became **n**), **naw** (cf. Ir. *nōi* **n**-, Lat. *novem*), **dec** (cf. Ir. *deich* **n**-, Lat. *decem*), **cant** (cf. Ir. *cēt* **n**-, Lat. *centum*).

### Spirant Mutation.

21. This is found :—

(a) After the numerals **tri** *three* and **chwe(ch)** *six*, e.g. **tri chantref** *three cantreds*, **tri pheth** *three things*, **chwe thorth** *six loaves*.

(b) After **y** *her*, e.g. **y chlust** *her ear*, **y throet** *her foot*, **y phenn** *her head*.

(c) After the prepositions **ac**, **a** *with*, **tra** *beyond*, e.g. **a chledyf** *with a sword*, **a thi** *with thee*, **tra thonn** *beyond wave*.

(d) After the conjunctions **a(c)** *and*, **no(c)** *than*, **o** *if*, e.g. **mam a that** *father and mother*, **traet a phenn feet and head**; **gwaeth no chynt** *worse than before*; **o chigleu** *if he has heard*.

NOTE 1.—After **kw** where spirant change is found: **cv** *threwna where it settles* BB. 44<sup>b</sup>, but **kw** *gaifei (cafei) where he should get* WB. 453; cf. **cud vit** BB. 44<sup>b</sup>, **cwd uyd** *where it will be* FB. 146.

(e) After the negatives **ny** and **na(c)**, e.g. **ny chysgaf** *I will not sleep*, **ny thyrr** *does not break*, **ny phryn** *does not buy*; **na chwsc** *do not sleep*, **na thorraf** *that I do not break*, **na marchawc na phedestyr** *neither horseman nor footman*.

NOTE 2.—But in the early poetry **ny** produces the spirant change only when it is non-relative; when it is relative a following **c**, **t**, or **p** is lenated, e.g. **ny char** *he does not love*, but **ny gar** *who does not love*. In the early poetry there is the same difference of treatment after the verbal particle **ry**, e.g. **ry charas** *has loved*, **ry garas** *who has loved*. This distinction between non-relative and relative forms must have extended to all consonants capable of mutation, but in the case of the other consonants confusion set in earlier. In later Mid. W. after **ny** the non-relative form has been generalised in the case of words beginning with **c**, **t**, **p**, the relative form, with certain exceptions, in the case of words beginning with other mutable consonants (cf. § 18 i). After **ry** the relative form was generalised. For further details see Eriu III. pp. 20 sq.

## h in Sentence Construction.

**22.** After certain words **h** appears before a following word beginning with a vowel.

(a) After the infixed and the possessive pronoun **m**, e.g. **am h-** *mymlityassant who followed me*, **om h-anvod** *against my will*.

(b) After the infixed pronoun **e**, e.g. **ae h-** *arganvu who perceived him*.

(c) After **y** *her*, e.g. **y h-enw** *her name*.

NOTE.—In Irish also **h** appears after **a** *her*, e.g. **a h-ainm** *her name*. The Irish and Welsh **h** here comes from the original final **s** of the possessive.

(d) After **an** *our*, e.g. **an h-arueu** *our arms*.

(e) After **eu**, *their*, e.g. **eu h-arueu** *their arms*.

(f) After **ar** before **ugeint** *twenty*, e.g. **un ar h-ugeint** *twenty one*.

## THE ARTICLE.

23. In O.W. the article is **ir** throughout, e.g. **ir pimphet eterin** *the fifth bird*, **dir finnaun** *to the fountain*. In Mid.W. **yr** remains before vowels and **h**, e.g. **yr amser** *the time*, **yr alanas** (from **galanas**) *the bloodfine*, **yr henwr** *the old man*; before other consonants except **y** it becomes **y**, e.g. **y bwyt** *the food*, **y wreic** (from **gwreic**) *the woman*; before **y** the usage varies, e.g. **yr iarll** or **y iarll** *the earl*. But if the article be fused together with a preceding conjunction or preposition, or if the **y** be elided after a preceding vowel, then **'r** remains, e.g. **y nef ar dayar** *heaven and earth*, **yn gyuagos yr gaer** *near to the city*, **gwiryon yw'r uorwyn** *ohonof i* *the maiden is innocent as regards me*.

## SYNTAX OF THE ARTICLE.

24. (a) In addition to its use before common nouns the article appears regularly before the names of certain countries, such as **yr Affrica** *Africa*, **yr Asia** *Asia*, **yr Alban** *Scotland*, **yr Almaen** *Germany*, **yr Eidal** *Italy*, **yr Yspaen** *Spain*, e.g. **vn yw yr Asia**, **deu yw yr Affrica**, **tri yw Europa** *Asia is one, Africa is two, Europe is three* FB. 216. Occasionally the article appears before names of persons, e.g. **yr Beli mawr** (= **y Beli uawr** WB. 191) *to Beli the Great* RB. 93, 2; **mwyhaf oe vrodyr y karei Lud y Lleuelys** *Llud loved Llevelys more than any of his other brothers* ib.

(b) The article is not used before a noun followed by a dependent genitive, e.g. **gwyr ynys y kedyrn** *the men of the island of the strong*, unless it be accompanied by a demonstrative pronoun, e.g. **or meint gwyrtheu hwnnw** *from that amount of miracles*, or unless the genitive be the equivalent of an adjective, e.g. **y werin eur** *the golden chessmen*, **y moch coet** *the wild pigs* (lit. *the pigs of the wood*), **y peir dateni** *the cauldron of rebirth, the regenerative cauldron*.



## THE NOUN.

## NUMBERS AND CASES.

25. In Welsh the old Celtic declension is completely broken down. Of the three genders the neuter has been lost. The dual, which, as in Irish, is always preceded by the numeral for *two*, in some classes of nouns would phonetically have fallen together with the singular; in Welsh this has been generalised so that the dual (apart from forms like **deu ychen** *two oxen*) coincides in form with the singular; a trace of the dual inflection remains in the lenation of a following adjective, e.g. **deu vul gadarn** (from **cadarn**) *two strong mules*, **deu vilgi vronwynnion vrychion** *two whitebreasted brindled greyhounds*. In the regular inflexion there remains only one case for each number; in the singular this corresponds sometimes to the old nominative, e.g. **car** *friend* = Ir. *carae*, sometimes to the form of the oblique cases, e.g. **breuant** *windpipe* = Ir. *brāge*, *g. brāgat*; a few traces of lost cases still survive in phrases, e.g. **meudwy** *hermit* (lit. *servant of God*), where **dwy** is the genitive of **duw**; **erbynn** *against* (= Ir. *ar chiunn*), where **pynn** (from **\*pendī**, from **\*pendū**) is the dative of **penn** *head*; **peunydy** *every day*, **peunoeth** *every night*, where **peun-**, which in O.W. would be **\*poun-**, comes from **\*popn-**, the old accusative singular of **pob** *every*.

## SYNTAX OF THE CASES.

26. As in Irish, the nominative may stand absolutely at the beginning of the sentence to introduce the subject of discourse, e.g. **y wreic honn** *ym penn pythewnos a mis y byd beichogi idi*, lit. *this woman, at the end of a fortnight and a month there will be conception to her*. In prose the genitive follows the noun on which it depends, e.g. **enw y mab** *the name of the son*; in poetry it may precede, e.g. **byt lywaydur** = **llywaydur byt** *the ruler of the world*; sometimes, as in Irish, it is used after an adjective meaning *with respect to a thing*, e.g. **nŷ bydŷ anuodlawn y phrŷt** *thou wilt not*

*be displeased with her form.* The accusative can be recognised only from the construction; in poetry the accusative of a place-name is common after verbs of motion, e.g. *dywed y down Arwystli say that we will come to Arwystli* MA. 192<sup>b</sup>.

#### FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

27. A. The plural is based on Old Celtic plural formations.

(a) Plural with *-ī* infection (§ 7b), e.g. *march horse*: *meirch*, *manach monk*: *meneich*, *maen stone*: *mein*, *oen lamb*: *wyn*, *asgell wing*: *esgyll*, *corn horn*: *cyrn*, *escob bishop*: *escyb*, *gwr man*: *gwyr*.

NOTE 1.—This represents the old plural formation of *-o-* stems, e.g. *meirch* from *\*marci* from *\*marcoi*. In part, however, it might represent the plural of *-i-* stems, cf. Ir. *súili eyes*: *súil eye*. In *dagr tear* the plur. *deigr* (= Ir. *dêr*) comes from *\*dacru*, the plur. of a neut. *-u-* stem.

NOTE 2.—Many substantives which regularly form their plural otherwise, particularly such as form their plural in *-ion*, follow this inflexion after numerals above *two*, e.g. *tri gweis three boys*, *seith meib seven sons* (GC.<sup>2</sup> 283).

(b) Plural in *-eu*, *-ieu* (O.W. *-ou*, *-iou*), e.g. *gen jaw*: *geneu*, *penn head*: *penneu*, *cledyf sword*: *cledyveu*, *pebyll tent*: *pebyllyeu*, *glin knee*: *glinyeu*.

NOTE 3.—*-ou*, *-eu* started from *-oues*, the nom. pl. of *-u-* stems, cf. Gaulish *Lugoves*.

(c) Plural in *-on* *-ion*, e.g. *medyc physician*: *medygon*, *cenaw whelp*: *cenawon*, *lleidr robber*: *lladron*, *mab son*: *meibyon*, *dyn man*: *dynyon*, *gelyn enemy*: *gelynyon*. This is the common ending of adjectives.

NOTE 4.—*morwyn maiden* becomes in the plural *morynyon*.

NOTE 5.—*-on* is based on *-ōnes*, the nom. pl. of masc. and fem. *-n-* stems, cf. Gaulish *Lingōnes*. The borrowed *lleidr robber*: *lladron* represents an older *\*latrī* (from *\*latrū latrō*); *\*latrōnes*; similarly *dreic dragon*: *dragon*, *Seis Saxon*: *Saeson*.

(d) Other old consonantal plurals, e.g. *car relative*: *carant* (from *\*carants*: *\*carantes* = Ir. *carae*: *carait*), *ci dog*: *cwn* (from *\*kuū*: *\*kunes*), *ych ox*: *ychen*, *brawt brother*: *broder*, *troet foot*: *traet*, *ty house*: *tei* (an old neut. *-s-* stem, cf. Ir. *tech*:

tige). Under the influence of §27a **carant** became **cereint**, **broder** became **brodyr**; in the same way may be explained **nei** *nephew*: **neieint**, **gof** *smith*: **goveint**. Some neut. **-n**-stems make their plur. in **-ein**, e.g. **enw** (O.W. **anu**) *name*: **enwein**, **cam** *step*: **cemmein**; here **\*-en** might have been expected as in Ir. **bēim** *blow*: **bēmnen**; the change of **\*-en** to **-ein** may be explained as above.

28. B. The plural is formed by various suffixes, many of which appear in the formation of abstract nouns.

(a) **-awr**, **-iawr**, e.g. **ysgwyt** *shield*: **ysgwydawr**, **gwaew** *spear*: **gwaywawr** (also **gwaewar**, **gwewyr**), **cat** *battle*: **cadyawr**.

NOTE.—This formation is mostly poetical.

(b) **-awt** (= **-awd**), e.g. **pysc** *fish*: **pyscawt**, **gorwyd** *steed*: **gorwydawt**.

(c) **-et** (= **-ed**), e.g. **merch** *daughter*: **merchet**, **pryf** *worm*: **pryvet**.

(d) **-ed** (= **-eđ**), e.g. **bys** *finger*: **byssed**, **dant** *tooth*: **danned**, **gwreic** *woman*: **gwraged**.

(e) **-eit**, **-ieit** (= **-eid**, **-ieid**), e.g. **mil** *animal*: **mileit**, **barwn** *baron*: **barwneit**, **barwnyeit**.

(f) **-i**, e.g. **llestyr** *vessel*: **llestri**, **cawr** *giant*: **cewri**, **saer** *artificer*: **seiri**.

(g) **-ot** (= **-od**), e.g. **hyd** *stag*: **hyddot**, **llwdn** *beast*: **llydnot**.

(h) **-oed** (= **-oedđ**), e.g. **mor** *sea*: **moroed**, **ieith** *language*: **ieithoed**.

(i) **-yd** (= **-yđ**), e.g. **avon** *stream*: **avonyd**, **gwlat** *country*: **gwledyd**, **chwaer** *sister*: **chwioryd**.

29. C. Some nouns are collective, with a singular formation in **-ynn** masc., **-enn** fem., e.g. **adar** *birds*: **ederyn** *a bird*, **calaf** *reeds*: **celevyn** *a reed*, **coll** *hazles*: **collenn** *a hazle*, **tywys** *ears of corn*: **tywysen** *a corn ear*.

## THE ADJECTIVE.

## GENDER.

30. There is a special form of the feminine only in the singular, and only in adjectives containing **y**, **w**, which in the feminine became **e**, **o** (§ 7a), e.g. **gwynn** *white*: **gwen**, **melyn** *yellow*: **melen**, **bychan** *small*: **bechan**, **brith** *variegated*: **breith**, **llwmm** *bare*: **llomm**, **crwnn** *round*: **cronn**.

In the singular the adjective is lenated after a feminine noun, e.g. **gwreic dec** *a beautiful woman* (§ 16ba); in the plural there is no lenation.

NOTE.—In the Celtic adjective there were **-o-** stems, **-i-** stems and **-u-** stems, which are distinguishable in O.Ir., e.g. **tromm** *heavy* from **\*trummo-s**, **cruind** *round* from **\*crundi-s**, and **il** *much* from **\*pelu-s**. Only the **-o-** stems had a fem. in **-ā**, so that only in these is the Welsh change of vowel etymologically justified. But in Welsh, after the loss of final syllables, the three classes were indistinguishable in the masculine, and the vowel-change in the feminine spread analogically from the **-o-** stems to the others, e.g. **crwnn** from **\*crundis** formed a feminine **cronn** after the analogy of **tromm**: **trwmm**, etc.

## FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

31. The plural is formed:—

(a) By change of vowel e.g. **bychan** *small*: **bychein**, **ieuanc** *young*: **ieueinc**.

(b) By adding **-on**, e.g. **du** *black*: **duon**, **gwineu** *bay*: **gwineuon**.

(c) By adding **-yon** (its usual formation), e.g. **gwynn** *white*: **gwynnyon**, **melyn** *yellow*: **melynyon**.

## CONCORD.

## Gender.

32. In the singular the attributive adjective agrees in gender with its noun, e.g. **gwas melyn** *an auburn lad*, **morwyn benngrech velen** *a curly-headed auburn maiden*. With the predicative adjective agreement is also found, e.g. **un** *ohonunt oed amdrom* *one of them was very heavy* RB. 54, 17, **oed amdnoch**

**llynges** *the fleet was shattered* MA. 150<sup>b</sup>, bit **wenn gwylyan** *the seagull is white* FB. 247, **llem awel** *keen is the wind* FB. 255, **ys lledan y lenn** *its mantle is broad* FB. 146, **bolch y lauyn** *his blade is notched* MA. 172<sup>a</sup>; but here the masculine form is also found, e.g. **llym awel** *keen is the wind* BB. 45<sup>a</sup> 1, **pan yw gwyrd llinos** *when the linnet is green* FB. 133, **oedd bwlch llafn yn llaw gynnegin** *the blade was notched in a practised hand* MA. 217<sup>b</sup>, **guaedlyd y lein** *bloody is his spear* MA. 184<sup>a</sup>.

### Number.

33. With the attributive adjective there is concord, the dual or a singular noun preceded by a numeral having the construction of the plural, e.g. **danned hiryon melynyon** *long yellow teeth*, **deu vackwy wineuon ieueinc** *two auburn young lads*, **pedeir meillionen gwynnyon** *four white blades of clover*. But there are many exceptions; with certain adjectives the singular is regularly used; such are adjectives in **-awc**, **-awl**, **-eid**, **-ic**, comparatives and superlatives, some other simple adjectives such as **mawr** *great*, **tec** *beautiful*, and compound adjectives; e.g. **gwyr arvawc** *armed men* (but exceptionally **o vrenhined coronogyon** *of crowned kings* WB. p. 90<sup>a</sup>), **llygeit hebogeid** *hawklike eyes*, **niveroed mawr** *great numbers*, **dyrnodeu calet-chwerw** *hard bitter buffets*. With the predicative adjective there are found on the one hand, e.g. **bychein ynt wynteu** *they are small* RB. 60, **wynteu a veynt veirw** *they would be dead* Hg. I. 138, **oedd beilch gweilch** *heroes were proud* MA. 217<sup>b</sup>, **kertoryon neud ynt geith** *now poets are captive* MA. 157<sup>b</sup>, on the other hand, e.g. **cadarn** *oed y holl aelodau* *all his limbs were strong* CM. 26, **balch iawn yw dy eiryeu** *thy words are right haughty* CM. 34, **marw ynn** *they are dead* MA. 164<sup>a</sup>, **rud ynt wy** *they are red* FB. 284, **doeth y veirt** *his bards are learned* MA. 262<sup>a</sup>, **ys da y gampeu** *his feats are good* MA. 237<sup>b</sup>. The whole subject needs a thorough investigation.

### Order.

34. (a) In Welsh, as in the other Celtic languages, the adjective normally follows the noun, e.g. **dyn doeth** *a wise man*, **gwreic**

**dec** *a fair woman*, **arveu trymyon** *heavy arms*. In Celtic, when the adjective preceded, it formed a compound with the noun, e.g. Gaulish **Cambo-dunum**, which would in W. be \***cam-din**, O.Brit. **Cuno-maglos** lit. *lofty chief* = W. **Cynvael**, W. **hen-đyn** *old man* (= Ir. *sen-duine*) from \***seno-dunynos**, W. **prif-dinas** *chief city* (cf. Ir. *prīm-dūn chief fort*), W. **hen-wrach** *old hag*, which would in Irish be \**sen-fracc*. From this principle W. has departed in that, under conditions the details of which have still to be investigated, the inflected adjective may precede the noun, e.g. **bolch-lauyn** *a cutting blade* MA. 263<sup>a</sup>, **gwen llaw** *white hand* MA. 153<sup>b</sup>, **amryvaelon gerdeu** *various songs*.

(b) In various phrases the noun with the preposition **o**, **a** follows the adjective, e.g. **ys drwc a gedymdeith** *a uuost di thou hast been a sorry comrade*, **bychan a dial** *oed an lloski ni our burning were a small revenge*, **ys dyhed o beth** *it is a strange thing*.

#### THE PREDICATIVE NOUN AND ADJECTIVE WITH YN.

35. A predicative noun or adjective is often preceded by **yn** (lenating), e.g. **gwedy llosci canhwylł ohonei yn oleuat** *idaw after she had lighted a candle as a light to him*, **mi ath roessum yn wreic y Uanawydan** *I have given thee as a wife to Manawyddan*, **ych gelwir chwi yn Grystonogyon** *ye are called Christians*, **neum goruc yn oludawc** *he has made me wealthy*, **a phob ty a welei yn llawn o win** *and every house he saw full of wine*, **yd oed ef yn holliach** *he was quite well*, **un a welei yn amdrom** *one (fem.) he saw very heavy*, **paham y maent hwy yn varw o newyn** *why are they dead with hunger?* **mi a wnaſ seith cant ohonawch yn ueirw** *I will make seven hundred of you dead men*, **an gunel in rit** *may He make us free*, **eu gwneuthur yn rydyon** *to make them free*, **eu clusteu yn gochyon** *their ears red*, **eu harwydyon yn purwynn** *their standards pure white*. The concord after the feminine and the plural still needs investigation.

## ADJECTIVE PHRASES.

36. In place of a simple adjective may be found an adjectival phrase, e.g. gwr **dirvawr y veint** *a man of huge size* (lit. *a man huge his size*), eurwalch balch **bolch y daryan** *a proud golden hero with hacked shield* (lit. *hacked his shield*), gwreic **digonach y thecket** *a woman of more perfect beauty*, dynodeu **diuessured eu meint** *mighty buffets*, **drwc a dyn y thygetuen** *a woman of unhappy fate* (lit. *ill of a woman her fate*), ys **drwc a wyr eu dihenyd** *vydem ni we should be men of an ill ending*, pan yttoedynt **yn digrifaf gantunt eu gware** *when they were most interested in their play*, y wreic **vwyhaf a garei** *the woman whom he most loved*.

## COMPARISON.

37. (a) The regular suffix of the comparative is **-ach**, of the superlative **-haf** (for the phonetic changes see § 11g), e.g.—

| Positive.                                   | Comparative.       | Superlative.       |
|---------------------------------------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| <b>tec</b> (= <b>teg</b> ) <i>beautiful</i> | <b>tegach</b>      | <b>teckaf</b>      |
| <b>tlawt</b> (= <b>tlawd</b> ) <i>poor</i>  | <b>tlodach</b>     | <b>tlottaf</b>     |
| <b>cyffelyb</b> <i>like</i>                 | <b>cyffelybach</b> | <b>cyffelyppaf</b> |

NOTE.—In Mod. W. the consonantism of the superlative has spread to the comparative, e.g. **teg**, **tecach**, **tecaf**.

(b) The following are irregular :—

|                                                 |               |                                   |                                      |
|-------------------------------------------------|---------------|-----------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <b>agos</b>                                     | } <i>near</i> |                                   |                                      |
| <b>cyfagos</b>                                  |               |                                   |                                      |
| <b>bychan</b> <i>small</i>                      |               | <b>nes</b> (Ir. <i>nessa</i> )    | <b>nesaf</b> (Ir. <i>nessam</i> )    |
| <b>da</b> <i>good</i>                           |               | <b>lle</b> (Ir. <i>lugu</i> )     | <b>lleiaf</b> (Ir. <i>lugem</i> )    |
| <b>drwc</b> <i>evil</i>                         |               | <b>gwell</b>                      | <b>goreu</b>                         |
| <b>hawd</b> <i>easy</i>                         |               | <b>gwaeth</b>                     | <b>gwaethaf</b>                      |
| <b>hen</b> <i>old</i> (Ir. <i>sen</i> )         |               | <b>haws</b>                       | <b>hawsaf</b>                        |
| <b>hir</b> <i>long</i> (Ir. <i>sīr</i> )        |               | <b>hyn</b> (Ir. <i>sinīu</i> )    | <b>hynaf</b>                         |
| <b>ieuanc</b> <i>young</i> (Ir. <i>ōac</i> )    |               | <b>hwy</b> (Ir. <i>sīa</i> )      | <b>hwyaf</b> (Ir. <i>sīam</i> )      |
| <b>isel</b> <i>low</i> (Ir. <i>īssel</i> )      |               | <b>ieu</b> (Ir. <i>ōa</i> )       | <b>ieuaf</b> (Ir. <i>ōam</i> )       |
| <b>llydan</b> <i>broad</i> (Ir. <i>lethan</i> ) |               | <b>is</b>                         | <b>isaf</b>                          |
| <b>mawr</b> <i>great</i> (Ir. <i>mōr</i> )      |               | <b>llet</b> (Ir. <i>letha</i> )   | <b>llettaf</b>                       |
| <b>tren</b> <i>strong</i> (Ir. <i>trēn</i> )    |               | <b>mwy</b> (Ir. <i>mōa</i> )      | <b>mwyhaf</b> (Ir. <i>mōam</i> )     |
| <b>uchel</b> <i>high</i> (Ir. <i>ūassal</i> )   |               | <b>trech</b> (Ir. <i>tressa</i> ) | <b>trechaf</b> (Ir. <i>tressam</i> ) |
|                                                 |               | <b>uch</b>                        | <b>uchaf</b>                         |

### Construction of the Comparative and Superlative.

38. (a) The comparative is followed by **no**, before vowels **noc** *than*, e.g. **ny bu hwy no hynny** *it was not longer than that*, **mw y vrywys ef y dyd hwnnw noc undyd** *more he threw on that day than on any single day*.

(b) The superlative is followed by the preposition **o**, e.g. **y uorwyn deckaf onadunt** *the fairest maiden of them*.

(c) In sentences like *the more the better* the superlative is used, e.g. **pei vwyhaf y lladei ef y march pellaf** *vydei hitheu y wrthaw ef the more he struck the horse the farther she was from him* RB. 9, 13; **goreu yw gennyf i bo kyntaf** *the sooner it is the better it pleases me* RB. 12, 4.

### THE EQUATIVE.

39. The possession by two objects of a quality in the same degree is expressed by a derivative in **-het** (= **-hed**) from the adjective preceded by **cyn-**, **cy-**, e.g. **kynduhet (du) ar muchud** *as black as jet*, **kyngadarnet (cadarn) ac Adaf** *as strong as Adam*, **kyndecket (tec) a hi** *as fair as she*, **kynvêlynet (melyn) ar eur** *as yellow as gold*, **kynehofnet (ehovyn) a hynny** *as fearless as that*, **kynwynnet (gwynn) ar eiry** *as white as snow*, **kygadarnet a brenhin** *as strong as a king*, **kyduet ar muchud** *as black as jet*, **kywynnet ar alaw** *as white as the lily*.

NOTE 1.—The Celtic preposition **com-** would in Welsh become **cym-**, **cyn-**, **cyf-**, **cy-** according to the following sound, and would be liable to various changes in connexion with a following consonant, e.g. **com + vowel** > **cyf**, **com + l-** > **cyfl-**, **com + w-** > **cy-**, **com + p-** > **cymh-**, **com + b-** > **cymm-**, **com + g-** > **cyng-**, **com + d-** > **cynn-**, etc.; there is an interesting example of the regular development in **cythrymhet (trwmm)** RB. 112, for **ntr** becomes **thr**. But the form **cyn-** with analogical lenation became the general form before all sounds, though for a time it had to contend with **cy-**, the form which would arise in Celtic before initial **w**. For a discussion of the formation see Zimmer KZ. xxxiv. 161 sq., Loth Rev. Celt. xviii. 392 sq., Stern CZ. iii. 135 sq.

NOTE 2.—Equality may also be expressed by **mor—a**, e.g. **pryf mor dielw a hynny** *a creature so vile as that*, **am gyflafan mor anwedus ac a wnaethoed** *on account of a crime so base as he had committed*.

### THE ADVERB.

40. The adverb is regularly formed from the adjective by prefixing **yn** (lenating), e.g. **yn vawr (mawr)** *greatly*, **yn llawen** *gladly*,



**yn drwmm** (**trwmm**) *heavily*, **yn well** *better*, **yn vwyhaf** *most*. But, if it precedes the verb, the adjective is used without **yn**, e.g. **mynych** y dywedut *thou didst often say*; in the following sentence both forms occur: kanys **mwyl** y karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet. a hitheu yn y dremygu ynteu **yn vwy** nor rei ereill *for he had always loved her more than the others, while she contemned him more than the others* RB. II. 65.

## THE NUMERALS.

## 41. CARDINALS AND ORDINALS.

| <i>One, etc.</i>                                              | <i>First, etc.</i>                                 |
|---------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------|
| i. un                                                         | cyntaf                                             |
| ii. deu, f. dwy                                               | eil                                                |
| iii. tri, f. teir                                             | trydyd, f. tryded                                  |
| iv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir                                 | petwryd, petweryd, f. petwared; also pedwryd, etc. |
| v. pump                                                       | pymhet                                             |
| vi. chwech, chwe                                              | chwechet                                           |
| vii. seith                                                    | seithvet                                           |
| viii. wyth                                                    | wythvet                                            |
| ix. naw                                                       | nawvet                                             |
| x. dec, deng                                                  | degvet                                             |
| xi. un ar dec                                                 | unvet ar dec                                       |
| xii. deudec                                                   | deudegvet                                          |
| xiii. tri, f. teir, ar dec                                    | trydyd, f. tryded, ar dec                          |
| xiv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar dec                        | petwryd, etc., f. petwared, etc., ar dec           |
| xv. pymthec, pymtheng                                         | pymthegvet                                         |
| xvi. un ar bymthec                                            | unvet ar bymthec                                   |
| xvii. deu, f. dwy, ar bymthec                                 | eil ar bymthec                                     |
| xviii. tri, f. teir, ar bymthec                               | trydyd, f. tryded, ar bymthec                      |
| xix. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar bymthec, un eisieu o ugein | petwryd, etc., f. petwared, etc., ar bymthec       |
| xx. ugeint, ugein                                             | ugeinvet                                           |

NOTE.—The form **deng** is found only before nouns beginning with certain sounds, cf. Rev. Celt. XXVIII. 201.

**xxi.-xcix.** In O.W. **trimuceint** is found for *thirty*. The usual reckoning, however, is by multiples of *twenty*:—**deugein(t)** (O.W. **douceint**) *forty*, **deugeintvet** *fortieth*, **trugein(t)** *sixty*, **trugeinvet** *sixtieth*, **petwarugein(t)** *eighty*, **petwarugeinvet** *eightieth*. The intermediate numbers are expressed by addition, e.g. **un ar hugein(t)** *twenty-one*, **dec erydyr ar hugeint** *thirty ploughs*, **deudec brenhin ar hugeint** *thirty-two kings*, **deng mlyned a deugeint** *fifty years*, **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint** *seventy-two years*, **petwryd ar ugeint** *twenty-fourth*. This reckoning may extend beyond a hundred, e.g. **pedeir gwlat a seith ugeint** *one hundred and forty-four countries*.

**c.-ccioo.** **Cant** *hundred*, **canvet** *hundredth*. From this the other hundreds are formed by prefixing the cardinals:—**deucant** or **deugant**, **trichant**, **petwarcant**, **pumcant**, **chwechant**, **seithcant**, **wythcant**, **nawcant**. **Mil** *thousand*, **dwy vil** = *two thousand*, etc. **Un vlwydyn ar bymthec ar hugeint a deucant** = 236 *years*; **chwech marchawc a thrugeint a phumcant** = 566 *horsemen*; **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint ac wythcant** = 872 *years*; **deg mlyned a phetwar ugein a chant a mil** = 1190 *years*. **ccioo. myrd** *myriad*.

### Syntax of the Cardinals and Ordinals.

42. (a) After **deu**, **dwy**, the singular (i.e. historically the dual § 25) form is regularly used; but there are exceptions, e.g. **deu ychen** *two oxen* (where, however, the form might be dual), **dwy chwiorod** *two sisters* LA. 39, RB. II. 39, **dwy burloywduon hirueinon aeleu** *two brilliant black long slender eyebrows* (by **dwy ael**) LA. 93, **deu rudellyon lygeit** *two ruddy eyes* ib., **deu perffeithloyw gochyon rudyeu** *two perfect brilliant red cheeks* ib., **deu nyeint** *two nephews* RB. II. 69, **dwy wraged** *two wives* ib. 239 **dwy vlyned** *two years* ib. 240. As to the higher numbers the general rule is that, if there be a plural with internal vowel change (§ 27a), the plural is used, e.g. **tri meib** *three sons*, but otherwise the noun is in the singular, e.g. **teir ynys** *three islands* (pl. **ynysed**), **petwar marchawc** *four horsemen* (pl. **marchogyon**). There are, however,

exceptions, e.g. **teir chwioryd** *three sisters*, **pump gwraged** *five women*, **trychant tei** *three hundred houses*; so very often with **dyd** *day* pl. **dieu**, and **blwydyn** *year* pl. **blyned**. Compare the exceptions after **deu** above. Another mode of expression is, e.g. **tri chawr o gewri** *three giants*, lit. *three giants of giants*.

(b) The ordinals precede the noun, e.g. **y betwared vlwydyn** *the fourth year*. But **cyntaf** usually follows, e.g. **y marchawc kyntaf** *the first horseman*; sometimes, however, it precedes, e.g. **kyntaw geir** a **dýwedaw** *the first word that I will say* BB. 41<sup>b</sup> 1. The ordinal may denote not the order in a series, but, as also in Irish, one of a certain number, e.g. **odena y kerdus er tir a naw kedem-deith ganthav**, **ar nauvet** a **las ar hynt** *thence he came to land with nine comrades, and one of the nine was slain at once* Arch. Cambr. 1866 p. 114, **y trýdý gwr** a **dienghis o Gamlan** *one of the three men who escaped from Camlan* WB. 463; **e tredyt anhebchor** *one of the three indispensables* BCh. 8.

#### DISTRIBUTIVES.

43. These are expressed by prefixing **pob** *every* to the cardinal, e.g. **eu bwrw pob dec pob deudec** *throwing them by tens and twelves* Hg. II. 160, **gwin ý bid hi ý vedwen in diffirin Guý a sirth ý chegev pop vn pop dvý** *happy the birch in the valley of the Wye, whose branches fall by twos and threes* BB. 24<sup>a</sup>.

#### MULTIPLICATIVES.

44. These are expressed by **gweith** f. preceded by the cardinal, e.g. **unweith** *once*, **dwý weith** *twice*, **teir gweith** *thrice*, **pedeir gweith** *four times* etc.

### THE PRONOUN.

#### PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

##### The Independent Pronoun.

45. Independent pronouns fall into three sub-divisions, (a) the simple pronoun, (b) the emphatic pronoun, (c) the conjunctive or contrasting pronoun (*I also, I on my part, I on the other hand*,

etc.) When attached to a verb as its subject the pronouns are liable to weakening, e.g. **vi**, **i** for **mi**, **di** for **ti**, **ditheu** for **titheu**. Classes (a) and (c) are used also to reinforce an infixed pronoun (§49a), a pronominal preposition (§52), or a possessive pronoun (§56), or possessive adjective (§58); then, too, they are liable to the same reduction (§17a).

| (a) Simple.                                                            | (b) Emphatic.                                                            | (c) Conjunctive.                                  |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|
| <i>I, me</i> <b>mi</b> , <b>vi</b> , <b>vy</b> , <b>i</b> , <b>y</b> . | <b>mivi</b> , <b>myvi</b> , <b>myvy</b> ,<br><b>vivi</b> , <b>vyvi</b> . | <b>minheu</b> , <b>minneu</b> ,<br><b>inneu</b> . |
| <i>We, us</i> <b>ni</b> , <b>ny</b> .                                  | <b>nini</b> , <b>nyny</b> .                                              | <b>ninheu</b> , <b>ninneu</b> .                   |
| <i>Thy, thee</i> <b>ti</b> , <b>di</b> , <b>dy</b> , <b>de</b> .       | <b>tidi</b> , <b>tydi</b> , <b>dydi</b> ,<br><b>dydy</b> .               | <b>titheu</b> , <b>ditheu</b> .                   |
| <i>Ye, you</i> <b>chwi</b> .                                           | <b>chwichwi</b> .                                                        | <b>chwitheu</b> .                                 |
| <i>He, him</i> <b>ef</b> (O.W. <b>em</b> ).                            | <b>efo</b> .                                                             | <b>ynteu</b> .                                    |
| <i>She, her</i> <b>hi</b> , <b>hy</b> .                                | <b>hihi</b> .                                                            | <b>hitheu</b> .                                   |
| <i>They, them</i> (h) <b>wy</b> ,<br>(h) <b>wynt</b> .                 | (h) <b>wyntwy</b> .                                                      | (h) <b>wynteu</b> .                               |

NOTE 1.—In **chwi** the **w** may be omitted after **w** in the verb, e.g. **ewchi** go ye, **dowchi** come ye.

NOTE 2.—**wy** is the earlier form, which became **wynt** under the influence of the ending **-nt** of the 3 plur. of the verb, just as O.Ir. **ē** *they* became in Mid.Ir. **iad**. In Mid.W. **wynt** is particularly used when it precedes the verb, e.g. **wynt a welynt** *they saw*, but **y gwelynt wy**; this, however, is a later distinction, in earlier Welsh **wy** is used everywhere, e.g. **wy gwnaethant** *they did*, **wy ladassant** *they slew*.

46. The independent pronouns are used as the subject of a sentence, as the object of a sentence, where, however, they enter into concurrence with the infixed pronoun (§48), (which, to judge from Irish, was the original method of expressing the object), after prepositions which did not enter into a unity with the pronoun (§52), and after some conjunctions. The following examples will illustrate the usage :—

(a) **mi** a wna*f* *I will do*; pan y gweleis **i ef** *when I saw him*; nyt yspeilwys ynteu **vi** *he did not strip me*; a rithwys Duw cyn no **mi** *whom God created before me*; **ti** a wely *thou wilt see*; a wely **di** *dost thou see?* kymer dy hun **ef** *take it thyself*; nyt oes seith cantref

well noc **wy** *they are not seven cantreds better than they*; gyt ac **wynt** *along with them*.

(b) kynt y kyuarchawd ef well y mi no **miui** idaw ef *he greeted me before I greeted him*; pa le y keisswn i **dydi**? pan geissych di **vyvi**, keis parth ar India "*where should I seek thee?*" "*When thou seekest me, seek towards India*"; gofyn a oruc idi ae **hihi** oed yn peri hynny *he asked her if it was she who was causing that*.

(c) Mivi a rodaf vyg cret, heb hi, na charaf i dydi ac nath vynnaf yn dragywydawl. **minneu** a rodaf vyg cret, heb y Peredur, na dywedaf **ynneu** eir byth wrth Gristiawn yny adewych **ditheu** arnat vyg caru i yn vwyhaf gwr "*I pledge my faith,*" said she, "*that I do not love thee and that I will not desire thee to all eternity.*" "*I, on my part,*" said Peredur, "*pledge my faith that I will never speak a word to Christian soul, until thou shalt confess that thou lovest me more than any man;*" ac yn keissaw bwrw y gelein ar y march yn y kyfrwy, y dygwydei **ynteu** yr llawr ac y dodei **hitheu** diaspat *and as she sought to cast the corpse on the horse into the saddle, it kept falling to the ground, and she raised a cry*.

NOTE.—**ynteu** etc., is also used before a proper name, e.g. y wybod dy atdeb di am hynny y deuthum i. Rof i a Duw, heb ynteu Bwyll, llyna vy atdeb i ytti, "*I have come to learn thy answer about that.*" "*Between God and me,*" said Pwyll, "*here is thy answer*" RB. 11. cf. RB. 25, 65, 77, 79, 81, etc., **wynteu y Galissyeyt** CM. 1; before a common noun, e.g. sef a wnaeth **ynteu yr eryr** *this the eagle did* RB. 78, a **hitheu wreic** Teirnon a gytsynnywys *and the wife of Teirnon agreed* RB. 22; after a proper name, e.g. **Troilus ynteu** lleiaf mab y Briaf oed herwyd oet *Troilus was Priam's youngest son* RB. II. 7, so RB. 14, II. 8, 9, 14, 22, **Castor a Pholux wynteu** a aethant *Castor and Pollux went* RB. II. 9, **y Telepus ynteu** RB. II. 17; after a common noun, e.g. a **gwyr Troea wynteu** a ymhoelassant *and the men of Troy on their part returned* RB. II. 20; and in instances like: y gelwit hi Lundein neu **ynteu** Lwndrys *it was called Lundein or Lwndrys* RB. 93, **neu ynteu** ony edy hynny udunt *or again if you do not allow them that* RB. II. 44. Cf. Mod. W. **ynte**.

47. **Issem, ysef, sef**. In O.W. the pron. **em** is used with **iss**, **is** is in phrases like **issem** i anu *that is his name*. From **issem** comes in Mid.W. **ysef, sef**, e.g. **ysef** a rodaf inneu *this is what I will give*; **sef**, gwreic a vynnawd Kicua *that was the wife he desired*, **Kigfa**; **ssef** a gafas yn y chyghor fo y ynyalwch *this is what she resolved upon, to flee into a wilderness*; **sef** y kyrehassant y dref uchaf o Arllechwed *they made for the highest town of Arllechwedd*;

arglwyd, heb ynteu, minneu a allaf dy rydhau ditheu. **sef** ual y gallaf "*Lord,*" said he, "*I can free thee. This is how I can do it;*" **ssef** y gwelynt varchawc *then they saw a horseman.* In a similar way **ef** is used by itself, e.g. pan dyuu y thymp idi, **ef** a dyuu y hiawnbwyll idi *when her time of labour came, then her right senses came to her.*

## 48.

## Infixd Pronoun.

| Sing.                                             | Plur.                                  |
|---------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>me</i> - <b>m</b> -                         | <i>us</i> - <b>n</b> -                 |
| 2. <i>thee</i> - <b>th</b> -                      | <i>you</i> - <b>ch</b> -               |
| 3. <i>him, her, it</i> - <b>s</b> -, - <b>e</b> - | <i>them</i> - <b>s</b> -, - <b>e</b> - |

## REMARKS.

49. (a) The infixd pronoun may be strengthened by putting the corresponding simple or conjunctive pronoun after the verb, e.g. a thydi **am** gwely **i** *and thou shalt see me*, euo **ath** gud **ditheu** *he will hide thee.*

(b) In the third person **-e-** is used after the relative particle **a**, e.g. mi **ae** gwelaf *I see him*, and after the conjunction **tra**, e.g. **trae** llathei pob tri *while he slew them by threes* BB. 48<sup>a</sup>, mi **ae** kynhalyaf hyt **trae** gallwyf *I shall maintain it as long as I can* Hg. I, 4; elsewhere **-s-** is used. After the verbal particle **yd-**, however, if the verb begins with a consonant, there is no visible pronoun of the third person, e.g. **y** gwelaf *I see her* RB. 278, 6; a phan **i** gweles meibion Collwyn *and when the sons of Collwyn saw him* MA. 729<sup>a</sup>; if the verb begins with a vowel **yh** appears, e.g. **y** huanones *sent it* WB. 104, **y** hedewynt *they left them* WB. 186; similarly after **yny** *until*, e.g. ny dygaf i un daryan **yny** huanono Duw im *I shall not bear any shield till God send it to me* Hg. I. 15. After **pan** *when* the infixd pronoun is regularly preceded by **y-**, e.g. **pan** **yth** wnaethpwyd ti *when thou wast made*; in the third person it is **pan** **y(h)**, e.g. **pann** **y** harcho udunt *when he asks it of them* LA. 56.

(c) In early poetry in connexion with **ny** and **ry** there are in the third person special forms, **nwy**, **nyw**, **rwy**, **ryw**, used when the verb is relative, e.g. ir nep **nuy** hatnappo *to one who does not*

recognise it BB. 4<sup>b</sup>, nyt kerdaur **nyu** moluy *he is not a poet who does not praise him* MA. 174<sup>b</sup>, y ren **rwy** digonse *the King who had made them* FB. 138. In non-relative usage the infixed pron. after **ny** is **-s-**, the form of the non-relative infixed pronoun after **ry** I have not been able to establish.

NOTE.—The infixed pronoun may, as in Irish, anticipate a following object, e.g. **ai** torro hac aý dimanuo ý **bryeint hunn** *who shall violate and diminish this privilege*, aý enrydedocao ý **breint hunn** *who shall respect this privilege* Lib. Land. 121, **y** harchwn ni **dy** drugared *we ask thy mercy* RB. II. 44.

50. The infixed pronoun follows:—

(a) The relative particle **a**, e.g. mynn y gwr **a-n** gwnaeth *by Him who made us*, Duw **a-ch** nodho *may God protect you*, mi **a-e** harhoaf *I will await him, her, it, or them*, **a-e** lladawd ef *who killed him*, y niver **a-e** gwelei wynt *the multitude that saw them*.

(b) The verbal particle **yd**, e.g. **y-m** gelwir *I am called*, **ywch** kymhellasant *they have compelled you*.

(c) The infixing particle **a-** (§ 94), e.g. **a-m** bo *may there be to me*, **a-th** volaf *I will praise thee*, **a-s** rodwy trindawt trugared *may the Trinity give him mercy*, gwedi **a-n** gwelwch *after ye see us*, pei **a-s** archut *if thou hadst asked it*, kyt **a-m** llatho *though he should slay me*. So when this **a-** has been replaced by **y-**, e.g. **y-s** rodho Duw ymi *may God give it me* LA. 121.

(d) The verbal particle **ry-** in the earlier language, e.g. **ry-m** goruc *he has made me*. But in later Mid.W. the pronoun is infixed before **ry-** by means of **yd-**, e.g. **y-th** ry gereis *I have loved thee*.

(e) The particle **neu-**, e.g. **neu-m** goruc *he has made me* MA. 141<sup>a</sup>, **neu-s** cud *hides it* FB. 272.

(f) Sometimes in early poetry **dy-** of compound verbs, e.g. **dy-m** ryd *gives me*.

(g) The negatives, e.g. **ny-m** oes *there is not to me*, **ny-s** gweleis *I have not seen him, her, it, or them*, **cany-ch** gwelas neb *since no one has seen you*; **na-m** gommed *do not refuse me*, mi a debygaf **na-ch** rydhawyt *I think that you have not been freed*.

NOTE.—In later Mid.W. **nys** seems sometimes to be used merely in a relative sense, e.g. yn y wlat **ny-s** ry welsei *in the country that he had not seen* RB. 114, 13=ýn ý wlad ný rý welei WB. 471. This usage may have

developed from cases where the nominative stands at the head of the sentence introducing it (§ 26), e.g. *amheu yr hynn a dywedwch chwi ny-s gwnaf i* lit. *doubting of what you say I will not do it*. A meaningless **-s**, however, is found when the verb is non-relative, e.g. *nys gohiryasant* *they did not delay* RB. II. 48.

(h) Certain conjunctions :—**tra-e** *llathe i* while he slew them BB. 48<sup>a</sup>, **yny-m** *byrywyt i* till I was thrown RB. 169, **o-s** *lledy i* if thou slayest him Hg. I. 368. Some conjunctions are followed by the infixing **a**, see above (c).

51. The infixed pronoun commonly expresses the accusative relation. With the verb 'to be,' however, it regularly expresses its dative relation, e.g., **am bo** *may there be to me, may I have*, vn tat **ae bu** *one father they had*; it may further express the dative relation with other verbs, e.g. *y perffeith garyat hwnnw an rodho yr yspryt glan may the Holy Spirit give us that perfect love* LA. 103, **an gunel iechid** *may He work salvation for us* BB. 20<sup>b</sup>.

#### PRONOUN WITH PREPOSITION.

52. In Welsh as in Irish the pronoun is regularly fused together with the preposition. After **ac** *with* and **gwedy** *after*, however, the pronoun follows separately, e.g. **a mi** *with thee*, **gwedy ni** *after us*; the explanation seems to be that the usage of these words as prepositions is secondary. With respect to the formation, the following points may be noted.

(a) In the first and second persons (except after **y** *to*) there is an intervening vowel **a**, **o** (**aw**), or **y** (and in 2 pl. also **w**), so that in these persons there are the following series :—

| Sing.                   | Plur.                          |
|-------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1. <b>-af, -of, -yf</b> | <b>-am, -om, -ym</b>           |
| 2. <b>-at, -ot, -yt</b> | <b>-awch, -och, -wch, -ych</b> |

(b) In the 3 sg. masc. the ending is **-aw**, in the 3 sg. fem. **-i** (inflecting a preceding vowel) and **-ei**, e.g. **oheni** and **ohonei**; sometimes the inflected vowel spreads analogically, e.g. 3 pl. **ohenynt**. In the 3 pl. the oldest ending was **-u**, whence developed later **-ud** (i.e. **-uđ**), **-unt**, **-ynt**. In the third persons **-aw**, **-u**, etc., are commonly preceded by a dental.



(c) In the 1 sg. and 3 pl. there are also endings **-wyf, -wynt**.

(d) After the prepositions **ar, o, am** are inserted respectively **-n-, -hon-, -dan-** (i.e. the prep. **tan** *under*). In the 3 pl. there are certain other insertions.

53. The forms assumed by the pronouns in connection with the several prepositions will be seen from the following table:—

|                             | Sing.                                                                                         | Plur.                                                                                                 |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>am</b> <i>about</i>      | 1. amdanaf, ymdanaf<br>2. ymdanat<br>3m. amdanaw, ymdanaw<br>3f. ymdeni, amdanei,<br>ymdanei  | amdanam<br>amdanawch<br>amdanunt, ymdanunt,<br>amdanadunt, ym-<br>danadud, ymdana-<br>dunt, amdanwynt |
| <b>ar</b> <i>on</i>         | 1. arnaf<br>2. arnat<br>3m. arnaw<br>3f. arnei, arni, erni                                    | arnam<br>arnawch, arnoch<br>arnunt, arnynt, ar-<br>nadud, arnadunt                                    |
| <b>att</b> <i>to</i>        | 1. attaf<br>2. attat<br>3m. attaw<br>3f. attei, etti                                          | attam<br>attawch<br>attunt, attadunt                                                                  |
| <b>can, gan</b> <i>with</i> | 1. genhyf, gennyf<br>2. genhyt, gennyt<br>3m. gantaw, ganthaw,<br>gentaw<br>3f. genti, genthi | genhym, gennym<br>genhwch, gennwch<br>gantunt, ganthu,<br>ganthud, ganthunt                           |
| <b>heb</b> <i>without</i>   | 1. hebof<br>2. hebot<br>3m. hebdaw<br>3f. hebdi                                               | hebdunt                                                                                               |
| <b>is</b> <i>below</i>      | 3f. adisti                                                                                    |                                                                                                       |

|                            | Sing.                                       | Plur.                                         |
|----------------------------|---------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------|
| <b>nem</b> <i>except</i>   |                                             |                                               |
| <i>of</i>                  | 2.                                          | nemoch                                        |
| <b>o</b> <i>from</i>       | 1. ohonaf, ohanaf,<br>ohonof                | ohonam, ohonom                                |
|                            | 2. ohonat, ohonawt,<br>ohonot               | ohonawch                                      |
|                            | 3m. ohonaw                                  |                                               |
|                            | 3f. oheni, ohoni, ohonei,<br>ohanei, ohenei | ohonu, ohonunt,<br>ohenynt, onadu,<br>onadunt |
|                            |                                             |                                               |
| <b>rac</b> <i>before</i>   | 1. ragof                                    | ragom, rogom                                  |
|                            | 2. ragot                                    | ragawch, ragoch                               |
|                            | 3m. racdaw, rogdaw                          | racdu, racdunt,<br>rocdunt                    |
|                            | 3f. recdi, racdi, rocdi,<br>rygthi          |                                               |
| <b>ro</b> <i>between</i>   | 1. yrof                                     | yrom                                          |
|                            | 2. yrot                                     | yryoch, yroch                                 |
|                            | 3m. yrydaw                                  | yrydunt                                       |
|                            | 3f. yrydi                                   |                                               |
| <b>rwng</b> <i>between</i> | 1.                                          | yrynghom                                      |
|                            | 2. ryngot                                   | ryngoch                                       |
|                            | 3m. ryngtaw, ryngthaw,<br>ygrythaw          | ryngdunt, ryngtunt,<br>ryngthunt, ryndynt     |
|                            | 3f. ryngthi                                 |                                               |

NOTE.—In O.W. there is also a 3 pl. *igridu* Lib. Land. XLIII, l. 9, and in poetry from *cyfrwng* a 3 pl. *cyfryngthud*.

|                         |                     |                     |
|-------------------------|---------------------|---------------------|
| <b>tan, dan</b>         | 1. adanaf           | ydanam              |
| <i>under</i>            | 3m. ydanaw, adantaw | adanunt, ydanunt,   |
|                         | 3f. deni, adanei    | adanadunt           |
| <b>tros</b> <i>over</i> | 1. trossof          | trossom             |
|                         | 2. trossot          | trossawch, trossoch |
|                         | 3m. trostaw         | trostud, trosdunt   |
|                         | 3f. trosti          |                     |

Usually with initial *d*, **drossof** etc.

|                               | Sing.                                                     | Plur                                          |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------|
| <b>trwy</b><br><i>through</i> | 1. trwydof<br>2. trwydot<br>3m. trwydaw }<br>3f. trwydi } | trwydunt                                      |
| <b>uch</b> <i>above</i>       | 1.<br>3m. odyuchtaw }<br>3f. oduchti }                    | uchom                                         |
| <b>wrth</b><br><i>towards</i> | 1. wrthyf<br>2. wrthyt<br>3m. wrthaw }<br>3f. wrthi }     | wrthym<br>wrthych, wrthywch<br>wrthu, wrthunt |
| <b>y</b> (O.W. di) <i>to</i>  | 1. im<br>2. itt<br>3m. idaw }<br>3f. idi }                | in<br>ywch<br>udu, udud, udunt                |
| <b>yn</b> <i>in</i>           | 1. ynof<br>2. ynot<br>3m. yndaw }<br>3f. yndi }           | ynoch<br>yndunt                               |
| <b>yr</b> <i>for</i>          | 1. yrof<br>2. yrot<br>3m. yrdaw                           | erom<br>yroch<br>yrdunt, erdunt               |

54. The above forms may be strengthened by the addition of the simple or the conjunctive pronouns, e.g. **arnaf i, gennym ni, itti, ohonawch chwi, idaw ef, erni hi, udunt hwy; yrof inneu, attat titheu, gennwch chwitheu, ohonei hitheu, attunt wynteu.**

#### 55. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

|                 |              |               |                        |
|-----------------|--------------|---------------|------------------------|
| 1. <i>mine</i>  | <b>meu</b>   | <i>ours</i>   | <b>einom, einym</b>    |
| 2. <i>thine</i> | <b>teu</b>   | <i>yours</i>  | <b>einwch, einywch</b> |
| 3. <i>his</i>   | <b>eidaw</b> | <i>theirs</i> | <b>eidud, eidunt</b>   |
| <i>hers</i>     | <b>eidu</b>  |               |                        |

56. They are used (a) alone, (b) preceded by the article, (c) preceded by a possessive adjective, (d) after a noun, which may be preceded by a possessive adjective. They may be strengthened by a following personal pronoun. The following examples will illustrate the usage :—

(a) y sawl a uo **meu** *all that are mine* ; ny bo **teu** dy benn *may not thy head be thine*, milwriaeth kymeint ac a oed **eidunt** *all the valour that was theirs*, y rei a oed **eidaw ef** *those that were his*, nyt yttoed y llew **yn deu** ytti *the lion was not thine* Hg. I. 63, nyt oes petrus genyf gaffel holl Freinc **yn einym** *I have no doubt that we should get all France as ours* RB. II. 116.

(b) neb un mor wedus cledyf ar y ystlys **ar meu i** *none whose sword on his side is so becoming as mine* ; y mae **y meu i** y lle hwnn *this place is mine* ; ath gedymdeithas yssyd adolwyn gennyf y gaffel. keffy, myn vyg cret, a dyro ditheu **y teu**, “*and I would pray to have thy friendship.*” “*Thou shalt have it, by my faith, and give me thine;*” deu parth vy oet a deu parth **y teu ditheu** *two-thirds of my life and two-thirds of thine* ; dwc uendith Duw **ar einym** gennyt *take with thee God’s blessing and ours* ; ef a daw y dwyn yr einwch *he will come to carry off your property* ; py darpar yw yr **einwchi** yna *what preparation is that of yours there?* nyt oed olwc degach **nor eidi** *there was no aspect fairer than hers.*

(c) pa vedwl yw **dy teu ti** *what purpose is thine?* mivi a dodaf vyg korff yn erbyn **y eidaw** *I will set my body against his.*

(d) ar dy drugeinuet **or rei teu ditheu** *with sixty of your men* CM. 8 ; **o rei eidaw ef** *of his* LA. ; **or petheu einym nynhev** *of our things* LA. 164 ; **dy ymadrawd teu di** *thy speech* Hg. II. 1.

## 57. POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

|               | a                                  | b             | a            | b                     |
|---------------|------------------------------------|---------------|--------------|-----------------------|
| 1. <i>my</i>  | <b>vy, vyn</b> (before explosives) | <b>'m</b>     | <i>our</i>   | <b>an, yn</b>         |
| 2. <i>thy</i> | <b>dy</b>                          | <b>'th</b>    | <i>your</i>  | <b>ach, ych, awch</b> |
| 3. <i>his</i> | <b>y</b>                           | <b>'e, 'y</b> | <i>their</i> | <b>eu, y</b>          |
| <i>her</i>    | <b>y</b>                           | <b>'e, 'y</b> |              |                       |

## Remarks.

58. (a) The **b** forms occur in fusion with a preceding preposition or conjunction. Such forms in the 2 pl. seem to be comparatively rare, e.g. **ych** plith *in your midst* by **yn ych** plith LA., etc. **ach** rydit *and your freedom* RB. II. 189; more usually **yn awch** medyant chwi *in your power* RB. II. 50.

(b) With the prep. **y** in the third persons there is a variety of forms : **y, yw, eu, oe, oc eu**.

(c) The possessives may be strengthened by the addition of a simple or conjunctive pronoun after the noun.

59. Examples : (a) **vy arveu** *my arms*, **vy nyuot** (**dyvot**) *my coming*, **an meirch ninneu** *our horses*, **dy benn** *thy head*, **awch cledyveu** *your swords*, **y wreic ef** *his wife*, **y phenn** *her head*, **eu hieith** *their tongue*.

(b) **ym tat** *to my father*, **am arveu** *and my arms*, **yn porthi ni** *supporting us* (lit. *our supporting*), **ath teulu** *with thy household*, **ach rydit** *and your freedom*, **ydys ych gwahawd** *you are invited*, **ywch didanu** *to comfort you*, **och pechodeu** *from your sins*, **ae waet ynteu** *and his blood*, **y** (= **yw** WB.) **letty** *to his lodging* RB. 284, **ae ueirch yw y rei hynn** *and these are his horses* RB. 28, **oe chladu** *to bury her*, **y cheissaw** *to seek her*, **oe hanvod** *against her will*, **oe harveu** *from their arms*, **y kestyll** *to their fortresses*, **oe gwlatod** *to their countries*, **oc eu porthi** *to support them*.

NOTE.—Sometimes, as in Irish, the possessive seems to anticipate a following genitive, e.g. **yn y geissaw ynteu Peredur** *seeking for Peredur* WB. 140, **y hwyneb hitheu Riannon** *the face of Riannon* RB. 18, 27, **am y mýnwgýl** (without **y** RB. 117, 19) **y uorwýn** *about the neck of the maiden* WB. 475.

## SELF.

60. This is expressed by sg. **hun, hunan**, pl. **hun, hunein** added to personal pronouns or to possessive pronouns or adjectives, e.g. **my hun, myvy vy hun** *I myself*, **ohonaf vy hun** *by me myself*, **ym vy hunan** *to me myself*, **vym penn vy hun** *my own head*, **arnom ny hunein** *upon us ourselves*; **dy hun** *thou thyself*, **yth**

person **dy hunan** *in thy own person*; or **tat ehunan** *from the father himself*, **ny digawn ehunan** *he is not able himself*, **ef ae byryawd ehun** *he cast himself*, **idaw ehun** *to himself*; **hi ehunan** *she herself*, **ohonei ehunan** *by her herself*; **wynt ehun** *they themselves*, **yr etholedigyon ehunein** *the elect themselves*, **yrydunt ehun** WB. 211 = **yryngtunt ehunein** RB. 272 *between themselves*, **yn eu cnawt ehun** *in their own flesh*, **yn eu rith ehunein** *into their own form*.

## DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

61. **hwnn** *this*, **hwnnw** *that*.

| Sing.          | Plur.         | Sing.        | Plur.          |
|----------------|---------------|--------------|----------------|
| M. <b>hwnn</b> | } <b>hynn</b> | <b>hwnnw</b> | } <b>hynny</b> |
| F. <b>honn</b> |               | <b>honno</b> |                |
| N. <b>hynn</b> |               | <b>hynny</b> |                |

## 62. These pronouns are used :—

(a) absolutely, e.g. **beth yw hwnn?** *heb y Peredur wrth y kyfrwy. kyfrwy yw, heb yr Owein* “*What is this?*” *said Peredur, with reference to the saddle.* “*It is a saddle,*” *said Owein*; **Peredur oed y enw, a ieuhaf oed hwnnw** *Peredur was his name and he was youngest*; **yna y kymmerth ynteu yr hutlath. camma di dros honn,** *heb ef then he took the magic wand.* “*Step over this,*” *said he*; **yn ol honno y kerdwys ef** *he went after her*; **a hyn a dywedaf ytti** *and this I will tell thee*; **mi a wnaf na chaffo ef viui vyth. pa ffuryf vyd hynny?** *heb y Pwyll* “*I will effect that he shall never get me.*” “*How will that be?*” *said Pwyll*; **yn ol hynny** *after that.*

(b) After a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. **ger llaw auon a elwit yn yr amser hwnnw** *Sabrina, yn yr amser hwnn y gelwir hitheu Hafren, beside a river that was called at that time Sabrina, at this time it is called Severn*; **yn yr ynys honn** *in this island*; **y nos honno** *that night*; **yr anniveileit hynn** *these animals*; **yr enweu hynny** *those names*. Similarly in the plural with **rei**, e.g. **pa ryw aniveileit yw y rei hynny?** *what kind of animals are those?*

(c) Preceded by the article, e.g. dywet, heb y Gereint, py fford oreu inni gerdet or dwy hyn. Goreu itt gerdet hon, heb ef, ot ey **yr hon** issot nŷ deuy trachefyn vyth “*Tell,*” said Gereint, “*which of these two roads is best to travel.*” “*It is best for thee to travel by this one,*” said he; “*if thou travel by the lower one, thou wilt never come back.*” It may be followed by a genitive, e.g. Heuel ar doythyon . . . a ossodassant eu hemendyth **ar honn Kemry holl** *Howell and the wise men set their curse and that of all the Welsh* BCh. 1. In particular **yr hwnn**, etc., is frequently followed by a relative clause, e.g. bei dywetut ti y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn **yr hynn** a ovynny ditheu *if thou wouldst tell the thing that I desire of thee, I would tell that which thou desirest*; ef a vennyc fford itti ual y keffych **yr hynn** a geissy *he will show thee a road so that thou mayest obtain what thou seekest*; pwy bynnac . . . a drem-yckont dysgu **yr hynn** a dylyynt y wneuthur *whoever despise learning what they ought to do*; Bryttaen oreu or ynyssed **yr hon** a elwit gynt y wen ynys *Britain, the best of the islands, which was formerly called the White Isle*; yr heul **yn yr hwnn** y mae tri pheth *the sun in which are three things*. In this usage the plural is **y rei**, e.g. gwraged oll eithyr **y rei** oed yn gwassanaethu *all the women except such as were serving*; gweirglodyeu . . . **yn y rei** y maent ffynhoneu gloew eglur **or rei** y kerdant ffrydeu *meadows in which are clear bright springs, from which issue streams*. This device for expressing an inflected relative is particularly common in the translation literature.

#### ARTICLE + SUBSTANTIVE + ADVERB.

63. Some adverbs have a demonstrative force along with a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. deu ychen, y lleill yssyd **or parth hwnt** yr mynyd ar llall **or parth yma** *two oxen, one of them is on yonder side of the mountain, the other on this side*; both yw **y rei racko?** *what are those yonder?* att **y vorwyn** draw *to the maiden yonder*.

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

64. **neb** (= Ir. *nech*) *some one* is used :—

(a) Substantivally, e.g. a weleist di **neb** *hast thou seen any one?*  
 nyt adwaeney **neb** efo *no one recognised him.*

(b) With the article before a relative clause, e.g. ediuar uyd **yr neb** ae wnaeth *whoever has done it will repent it*; ny chigleu i dim **or neb** a ouynnwch chwi *I have heard nothing of him of whom you ask* RB. 129.

(c) Adjectivally, e.g. gwell yw dedyf Cristonogaeth no **neb dedyf** or byt *the law of Christendom is better than any law in the world.*

65. **pawb** (= Ir. *cāch*) *every one* is used substantivally, e.g. sef a orugant **pawb** or teulu *that is what each one of the household did*; Peredur a rodes **y bawp** gystal ae gilyd *Peredur gave to every one as much as to the other.*

66. **pob** (the unaccented form of **pawb**, = Ir. *cach*, *cech*) is used adjectivally, e.g. **pob peth** *every thing*. **Pob** is also used with **un** *one*, e.g. **pob un** onadunt *every one of them*; the plural is **pob rei**, e.g. a **phob rei** ohonunt o bop parth a gladassant y rei meirw *and both sides buried the dead* RB. II. 30.

67. **oll** *all*, e.g. y deulu **oll** *all his household*; gwraged **oll** *all the women*; cewri ynt **oll** *they are all giants*. Before a noun is found **holl**, e.g. **yr holl gwn** *all the dogs*. In composition with numerals there appear **ell**, **ill**, **yll** e.g. **ell deu**, **ill deu**, **yll deu** *both*; **ell pedwar**, **yll pedwar** *all four*.

NOTE.—A compound **hollre** is found, e.g. **y rolre seint** *all the saints* BB. 36<sup>a</sup>, **yn holre oludoed** *in all manner of wealth* LA. 165, **hollre genedyl** *anifeileit every kind of animals* LA. 166.

68. **arall** *another*, pl. **ereill**, is used :—

(a) Substantivally, e.g. kymer ef a dyro y **arall** *take it and give it to another*; da **arall** *the goods of another*; penneu rei a dygynt, llygeit **ereill**, a chlusteu **ereill**, a breicheu **ereill** *they took away the heads of some, the eyes of others, and the ears of others, and the arms of others.*

(b) Adjectivally, e.g. **marchawc arall** *another horseman*; **y**



**gymeint arall** *as much again*; **arveu gwell nor rei ereill** *arms better than the others*.

**69. neill** *one of two*, e.g. **y neill** or **llewot** *one of the two lions*; **y gwydyat vot yndaw y neill** *ae gwr ae gwreic he knew that there was in it either a man or a woman* Hg. I. 54; **ar y neill law** *y gwr oed Peredur yn eisted Peredur was seated on one hand of the man*; **pob un ar neilltu** *each one separately*.

**70. y llall** *the other*, pl. **y lleill**, e.g. **y kymmerth Peredur hanner y bwyd idaw ehun ac adaw y llall yr vorwyn** *Peredur took half of the food to himself and left the other to the maiden*; **ar vn y bydei borth ef idaw a gollei y gware, ar llall a dodei awr** *and the one whom he was helping lost the game, and the other raised a shout*; **paham na chadarnnhawyt y lleill** *velle why were not the others thus strengthened?* LA. 8; **cwypm y lleill** *the fall of the others* LA. 8; **y daw y llall** *his other son-in-law*, an **brodyr y lleill** *our other brethren* LA.

**71. y neill, y lleill**, — **y llall** *the one—the other*, e.g. **y neill ohonunt yn was gwineu ar llall yn was melyn** *one of them an auburn lad, the other a yellow lad*; **yn y orffeï y lleill ar y llall** *till the one overcame the other*. With a substantive **arall** is used in place of **llall**, e.g. **or neill tu—or tu arall** *on the one side—on the other side*.

**72. y gilyd** is used for *the other* in expressions like:—**dyrnodeu calet a rodei bawp onadunt y gilyd** *each of them gave hard buffets to the other*; **yn un or teir person noe gilyd** *in one of the three persons than in another*; **or mor pwy gilyd** *from sea to sea*; **corph ni glivit pa leueir y gilit** *body, who hearest not what thy fellow says* BB. 10<sup>b</sup>.

NOTE.—**y gilyd** (=Ir. a chēle) means literally *his fellow*, but, as in Irish, the phrase has become petrified in this form, and is used without respect to gender, number, or person.

#### SUBSTANTIVES IN A PRONOMINAL FUNCTION.

**73. dim** *thing*, e.g. **kymer gret y mackwy na dywetto dim** or **a welas yman** *pledge the youth that he will not tell aught of what he has seen here*; **heb allel gwneuthur dim lles** *without being able to do any good*.

74. **peth** m. *thing*, e.g. *kymmer dy varch nu a pheth oth arueu take thou thy horse then and some of thy arms*; *onyt ef a wyr peth or hyenn unless he knows something of this*.

75. **rei**, e.g. **rei onadunt** *some of them*, **rei drut rei mut** *some bold, some dumb* FB. 164, cf. § 62 (c).

76. **ryw** m. *kind*, e.g. **pa ryw chwedleu** *yssyd gennynt what kind of news hast thou?* *na allei neb ryw dyn marwawl datkanu so that no mortal man could proclaim*; *ymlad ar ryw dyn hwnnw to fight such a man as that* RB. II. 182; *gwelet y ryw gatwent honno to see such a fight as that* ib. 58; *drwy y ryw edewidyon twyllodrus hynny through such false promises as those* ib. 104. Similarly **cyvryw**, e.g. **yr kyfryw wr hwnnw** *to a man of such a kind* ib. 65.

NOTE.—Observe that in expressions like **y ryw dyn hwnnw** the pronoun is attracted in gender and number to the noun preceding. Cf. the similar attraction with **sawl** below.

77. **sawl** f. *multitude* and **meint** *greatness*, e.g. **yr sawl** *a dihgassei oe wyr yn vyw to those of his men who had escaped alive*; *yr honn (sc. breich) a ladawd y sawl gewri which slew so many giants*; *by sawl nef ysyd how many heavens are there?* **y sawl nifer hwnnw** *such a number as that* RB. II. 139; **y ssawl vlvynydded hynny** *so many years as that* ib. 44; *colli y meint gwyr a oed idaw to lose all the men that he had* ib. 46; *blyghau a oruc Goronilla rac meint oed o varchogyon gyt ae that Goronilla became angry because there were so many soldiers with her father* ib. 66; *ymerbynyeit ar ueint allu hwnnw to encounter such a force as that* ib. 348; *yn y veint perigyl honno in so great danger as that* ib. 160; **y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny** *such great victories as that* ib. 199.

78. **un** *one*, e.g. *eithyr bot yn prudach pryt Gwydyon noc un y gwas except that the aspect of Gwydyon was graver than that of the lad*.

#### INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

79. **pwyl** *who, what*, used substantively, e.g. **pwyl wyt** *who art thou?* **y bwy y rodit** *(they discussed) to whom it should be given*

RB. 258; dywet **pwý** a uu yma *tell who was here*; govyn **pwý** yw eu tystyon *to ask who are their witnesses*; **pwý** yw dy enw di *what is thy name?* LA. 128; **pwý** well genhýt *which dost thou prefer?* WB. 487; dayar **pwý** y llet neu pwy y thewhet *the earth, what is its breadth or what its thickness?* FB. 133; **pwý** kynt ae tywyll ae goleuat *what was first, darkness or light?* FB. 301. In the sense of *what thing?* is used **pa beth**, **py beth**, commonly abbreviated to **peth**, **beth**, e.g. **peth** yw y rei racko *what are those yonder?* a wdost ti **peth** wyt pan vych yn kyscwyt *knowest thou what thou art when thou art asleep?* FB. 145; a gofyn idaw **beth** a wnaei a phwy oed *and asked him what he was doing and who he was.*

NOTE.—The use of **pwý** before a noun is exceptional, **pwý** ýstýr WB. 454, 456=**pa ystyr** RB. 101=**py ystyr** 103.

80. **pa**, **py** *what?* adjectivally, e.g. **pa drwc** digoneis inheu ytti *what evil have I done to thee?* **py drwc** yw hynny *what evil is that?* This interrogative enters into various phrases, e.g. **pa le**, **py le** (also **ble**) *where?* **pa veint**, **py veint** *how great?* **pa ryw**, **py ryw** *of what kind?* **pa sawl** *how many?* **Pa** and **py** are also found with the addition of **un**, pl. **rei**, e.g. **pa un** wyt titheu *who art thou?* ef a ovynnawd udunt **pa rei** oedynt *he asked them who they were.*

NOTE 1.—**Pa** and **py** seem to be used without distinction of meaning. In the Mabinogion when the Red Book has **pa** the White Book has very frequently **py**.

NOTE 2.—In the earlier literature **pa** and **py** are found also without a noun, e.g. **pa** roteiste oth olud *what hast thou given of thy wealth?* BB. 10<sup>b</sup>; **pa** wnaí *what shall I do?* FB. 282; hyt na wydat or byt **pa** wnaei (= **py** wnaei WB. p. 212) *so that she did not know at all what she should do* RB. 273; **py** holy di y mi *what seekest thou of me?* RB. 128, cf. further FB. 127, 145, 216, MA. 189<sup>b</sup>. Cf. also **pa** daruu y **Garadawc** *what has been the fate of Caradawc?* RB. 41, so 59, 287 (= **pý** WB. p. 221), **py** derw itti 176; **pathawr** (= **pa-th-dawr**) *what does it matter to thee?* WB. 430=**pythawr** p. 215; Duw reen **py** bereist lyvwr *Lord God, why hast Thou made a coward?* FB. 251; **py** liuy di *why dost thou colour?* RB. 102.

NOTE 3.—**Pa** and **py** are followed by a preposition in **pahar** *for what?* e.g. **pahar** e roet *for what it was given* BCh. 30; **paham**, **pa rac**, **py rac** and **pyr** (= **py yr**) *why?* e.g. **pýr** (= **pý rac** RB. 126) ý kýuerchý dý *why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

NOTE 4.—**pa diw**, **py diw**. The following occurrences of this may be noted:—Quid (i. **pa diw**, lit. *for what*) tibi Pasiphae pretiosas sumere vestes? Ox. 41<sup>a</sup>. Cunctis genitoris gloria uestri laudetur celsi thronus est cui

regia caeli, where *est cui regia caeli* is translated literally and unidiomatically by *issit padiu itau gulat* Iuv. 39<sup>b</sup>. Gwynn y uyt **py diw** y rodir kerennyd Duf a hoedyl hir *blessed is he to whom is given the friendship of God and long life* FB. 308. (If a man gives a thing, and a dispute arises between two men as to *to which of them* it has been given, the word of the donor shall decide) **pa dyu** y rodes *to whom he gave it* BCh. 31. **pa diw** y damweinei y uudugolyaeth *to which the victory should fall* RB. II. 57 (so with **y to**, **y by diw** y damweinhei y uudugolyaeth onadunt 162, cf. CM. 32). **pa diw bynnac** y mynnynt hwy y rodi hi *to whomsoever they desired to give it* RB. II. 24, cf. further 181, 185. Here the use of **yd**, not **a** (§ 84), indicates that **diw** is a prepositional phrase (= *to him, to it?*).

**81.** **pw**y bynnac, **pa**, **py**—bynnac, **pa** beth bynnac, **peth** bynnac. The addition of **pynhac** or **pynnac** gives the sense of *whosoever, whatsoever*, e.g. **pw**y bynnac ae kaffei *whoever should take it*; **pa** dyn pwyllauc **benac** a ladho enuyt *whatever sane man shall slay an idiot*; **pa** le bynnac y gwelwn vwyt *wherever I saw food*; **py** fford bynnac y ffoynt *whatever way they fled*; **peth** bynnac a dywettei Peredur *whatever Peredur said*.

#### RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

**82.** In Welsh there is no inflected relative. In clauses which according to the Welsh idiom are relative, relativity is expressed by the relative particle **a** when the clause is positive, by the negative **ny** (cf. § 21 note) when the clause is negative, e.g. pechodeu **a** gyffesser ac **ny** wneler yr eilweith *sins that are confessed and that are not committed a second time*. Before the details of relative usage are considered, there are several general points to be noted.

**83.** (a) The relative **a** is not used :—

(a) Before the relative form **yssyd**, **syd** *who is, which is*, e.g. nifer a uu ac a uyd uch nef is nef meint **yssyd** *the multitude that has been and that will be, above heaven, below heaven, all that there are* FB. 114.

(β) Before the verb **pieu** (§ 161), e.g. Efracw iarll bioed iarllaeth yn y gogled *Evracw the earl had an earldom in the north*.

(γ) Regularly in the earlier Welsh, and usually throughout the Mid.W. period before the verbal particle **ry**, e.g. mi **ryth gereis** *I have loved thee*.

(δ) Before the copula when preceded by the predicate (§ 159), e.g. **llawen uu** *he was glad*; **pwyt wyt** *who art thou?* (but **pwyt a uu** *yma who was here?*)

(b) (α) In Mid.W. prose **a** is frequently absent before **oed** *was*, e.g. **Arthur oed** *yg Kaerllion Arthur was in Caerllion*. In the Mabinogion the White Book has often **a oed** when the Red Book has **oed**, cf. WB. 227, 229, 250, 453, with RB. 101, 165, 166, 183.

(β) In early poetry **a** is very often omitted, e.g. **Duu vet** (= **Duw a ved**) *God rules* BB. 15<sup>a</sup> by **Duw a wet** 13<sup>a</sup>. The details have still to be investigated.

84. In certain constructions the preverbal particle **yd** (= Mod.W. **yr**) seems to enter into concurrence with relative **a**, and in Mod.W. grammars **yr** is given along with **a** as a relative particle. This, however, comes from reading English syntax into Welsh; historically, the use of **yd**, **yr** points to a non-relative construction. In the Celtic languages the rules for the use of the relative are peculiar. In particular it should be noted that in Welsh an adverbial or prepositional phrase is not as such followed by the relative construction, e.g. **mwyhaf** *oe vrodyr y karei* *Lud y Llewelys* *Llud loved Llewelys more than any of his other brothers*; **pan uei mwyhaf yd ymgerynt** *when they most loved one another*; **bit chwero y talhaur** *in y diwet bitterly will it be paid for in the end*; **mi a brynaf dy gerennyd. pa delw, heb ynteu, y pryny di** *"I will buy thy friendship." "In what way," said he, "wilt thou buy it?"* **lle y gwelych eglwys** *wherever thou seest a church*; **or lle yd oed** *from the place where he was*; **yn y rei y maent ffynhoneu** *in which there are fountains*; **ar hynny att y kwn y doeth** *ef thereafter he came to the hounds*. With the first instance may be contrasted expressions like **y wreic vwyhaf a garei** *the woman whom he most loved*, where without **mwyhaf** the clause would be relative, **y wreic a garei** *the woman whom he loved*; similarly **gwreica da it a wedei** *to wed would suit thee well* WB. 453.

85. In the Celtic sentence the verb normally comes first, e.g. **y kymerth** *y marchawc y march* *the horseman took the horse*. In Irish, when part of the sentence is to be emphasised it is brought

forward by means of the copula, e.g. **is ē beres** *it is he who carries* ; sometimes the copula is omitted. In Welsh a part of the sentence is emphasised in the same way; the copula form, however, is regularly omitted. Thus in the example given above, if the subject were to be emphasised, the sentence would run : **y marchawc** a gymerth y march ; if the object, **y march** a gymerth y marchawc. In accordance with the preceding paragraph, if the subject or object be thus brought forward, the following clause will be relative in form, but not if an adverbial or prepositional phrase be brought forward, e.g. **mw y karei** *he loved more* ; **attunt yd aeth** *he went to them*.

NOTE.—In the development of Welsh **yd** tends to spread at the expense of **a**.

### The Expression of Case in the Relative.

86. In the relation of subject or object of a following verb, in positive clauses **a** is used (except in so far as it must or may be omitted, § 83), in negative clauses **ny**, e.g. **y gwr a doeth** *the man who came* ; **y vorwyn a weleist** *the maiden whom thou hast seen* ; **y wreic yssyd yno** *the woman who is there* ; **meibon ny ellynt ymlad** *boys who could not fight*.

87. In connection with the use of **a**, **ny**, the following points call for special notice :—

(**a**) **or a** (Mod.W. **ar a**), neg. **or ny**, **ar ny**, lit. *of that which* (or *which not*), *of what* (or *what not*), e.g. **pawb or a oed yno** *everyone who was there* (lit. *of that which was there*) ; **or a welsei o helgwn ny welsei cwn unlliw ac wynt** *of all the hounds that he had seen he had never seen hounds of the same colour as they* ; **pob peth or ny damweinassant eiroet** *everything that has never happened* LA. 33 ; **nyt oes neb or ath welei ar nyth garei** *no one who saw thee would not love thee* ; **pob peth or a uu ac yssyd ac a vyd** *everything that was and is and will be* (where rel. **a** is regularly omitted before **yssyd**) ; **llawer or yssyd da** *many who are good*. In the above examples the relative **a** appears in positive clauses. But after **or** = *of that by which*, etc., in accordance with § 84, **yd** is used, e.g. **gorchymynneu**

Duw a wneynt o bop fford **or y gellynt** *they did God's commandments in every way in which they could* LA. 119; ffo. . a oruc Pandrassus a gwyr Groec y gyt ac ef y bob mann **or y tebyckynt** *caffel dianc Pandrassus with the Greeks fled to every place from which they thought to find escape* RB. II. 44. In sentences like: paup **or y rodho** y brenhyn ofrum idaw *everyone to whom the king gives a present*, or ba hustying bynnac . . . **or y kyfarffo** y gwynt ag ef *every whisper that the wind meets* RB. 60, the use of **yd** is due to the form of the relative clause (§ 89).

NOTE.—As Zimmer has shewn, CZ. II. 86 sq. **or**, **ar** is made up of the preposition **o**, **a** + the article **yr**. Similarly **yr**=**y** to + **yr**: ef a dely medhecynyat rad **yr a** uo en e llys *he is obliged to give free medical attendance to such as are in the palace* BCh. 18.

(b) Without an antecedent **a**, neg. **ny**, is used in the sense of *what* as the subject or the object of a sentence, in a genitive relation, and after a preposition, e.g. **a gahat** o uedic da *what was got of good physicians*; mi a wna **yssyd** waeth it *I shall do what is worse for thee*; ys tir (= dir) nithiau **ny bo** pur *it is necessary to sift what is not pure* BB. 42<sup>b</sup>; y kymerth yntev gwrogaeth **a oed** yno onadunt *he received the homage of such of them as were there* RB. 267; **yr a welsynt** o wryt *on account of what they had seen of food*; **or a glywyssynt** o gerd *of what they had heard of song*; mi a vydaf **wrth a dywedeisti** *I shall follow thy advice*; hyt na cheffwch byth werth un geinawc **oc yssyd** yn y dref *so that you shall never get a pennyworth of what is in the town* Hg. II. 169. In a sentence like: sef a oruc Scuthyn yn llaŷen gŵneuthur **yr oedit yn y erchi** idaw *Scuthyn did gladly what was asked of him* LA. 111, the form of the relative sentence does not admit of **a** (§ 88).

88. The genitive relation *whose*, *of which*, is expressed with the help of the possessive adjective before the noun on which in English the *whose* would depend. In Welsh, if the noun following the possessive be not under the government of a preposition the clause is relative, if it be under the government of a preposition the clause is non-relative, e.g. (a) Teithi Hen **a** oresgynnwys mor **y kyuoeth** *Teithi Hen whose kingdom the sea submerged* RB. 108; peth arall **ny ellych** byth **y gaffel** *another thing that thou wilt never be able to get*;

(b) y gur **y** buost neithwyr **yn y dy** *the man in whose house thou wert last night*; y gwr **y** buost **yn y geissaw** *the man whom thou hast been seeking*.

NOTE.—In: yr hynn a odologyssynt ac a yttoedynt **yn y damunaw** *that which they craved and were desiring* RB. II. 34, **a** is used where the above rule would require **yd**. In MA. 267<sup>a</sup> occurs: gwr am dotyw gwall **oe golli** *a man from whose destruction loss has come to me*. Further exceptions seem to be very rare; I have noted: amperffeith yw caru y peth **y galler y gassau** *it is imperfect to love the thing that may be hated* LA. 86; wrth na bu yn dyn **y** bei arnaf i **y ofyn** *because there was no living man the fear of whom was on me* CM. 30.

89. Where in English the relative is preceded by a preposition (*to whom*, etc.) in Welsh the relation is expressed by a preposition + personal pronoun, and the clause is non-relative, e.g. hŷnŷ elŷch yr koet ŷ dodhwyŷ **trwyddaw** *till thou goest to the wood through which thou hast come* WB. 228; yno y byd eneidew ry darffo **udunt** penydyaw *there are souls that have finished penance* (lit. *to whom penance is past*) LA. 129.

NOTE 1.—In the inverted sentence (§ 85) Madawc uab Maredud a oed **idaw** Powys *Madawg son of Maredudd had Powys* RB. 144, the clause is expressed relatively. Similarly in another special type of sentence: Achelarwy **a uu lawen gantaw** *Achilles was pleased* RB. II. 31, cf. RB. II. 189·20, RB. I. 94·5. In the translation literature a number of exceptions occur:—y rei **a uo ragor arnunt** *those on whom there is pre-eminence* LA. 32, cf. 130·27, 131·2, 135·8, 149·17, all in sentences of the same type; y rei hynny **a ry daroed** (= earlier W. **rydaroed**) **udunt** gwrthlad Maxen *those who had succeeded in expelling Maxen* RB, II. 111; mein **a ellit gwneuthur gweith onadunt** *stones from which building could be made* RB. II. 167; gwr...**a wedo idaw** *a man to whom it is fitting* CM. 77.

NOTE 2.—The following is an exceptional construction:—gwelet y bed a vynnei **trw y kaffei** (= **trw yt gaffei** WB. 453) *gwreicka he wished to see the grave through which he might be able to marry* RB. 101; na chadarnhao dyn kelwyd **trwy twng trwy y colletto** y gymodawc *that a man shall not confirm a falsehood by an oath through which he may ruin his neighbour* LA. 143; **trwy y bei** *through which there should be* LA. 144.

## SUBSTITUTES FOR THE RELATIVE.

90. Particularly in the translation literature there are various devices for getting an equivalent of the relative admitting of a casual construction. Such are **yr hwnn**, pl. **y rei** (§ 62c), **y neb** (§ 64b), **y sawl** (§ 77).



## THE VERB.

## PREVERBAL PARTICLES.

The Particle *yd*.

91. In Mid.W. prose this particle usually appears as **yd** (i.e. **yd̃**) before a vowel or **h**, as **y** before other consonants. But by the side of **yd** there is found from the fourteenth century **yr**, which in Mod.W. has completely superseded **yd**.

NOTE 1.—Occasionally **y** appears before **h**, e.g. **y hanoed** RB. II. 109, **y hanoed** LA.

NOTE 2.—In RB. **yt** with lenation appears before a consonant in **yt gweirwyt** (from **cyweirwyt**) 120. In the WB. version of the *Kulhwch* story **yt** (i.e. **yd**) is more frequent: **ýt gaffei**, **ýt gaffo** 453, **ýt uo** 458, **ýt werthey** 470, **ýt vȳd** 471, **ýt uerwit** 478. In BB. **yt** (= **yd̃**) is regular before vowels: **it oet** 10<sup>b</sup>, **it aethant** 11<sup>a</sup>, **it imne** 15<sup>b</sup>, **it elher** 17<sup>a</sup>, **ýt hoet** 22<sup>b</sup>, 23<sup>a</sup>, **it adcorssant** 23<sup>b</sup>, **it vif** 25<sup>b</sup>, **it arwet** 51<sup>a</sup>, **it aw** 51<sup>b</sup>; it is written **id** twice in **id aeth** 49<sup>a</sup> marg. Before consonants there appears both **y** and **yd** (= **ýt** of WB.); the latter lenates, though the change is not always expressed. Before **g**, **t**, **d**, **ff**, **s**, **m**, **n**, **ý** only appears: **ý godriccawr** 51<sup>a</sup>; **ý tirran** 1<sup>b</sup>, **ý talhaur** 16<sup>a</sup>, **ý tereu** 32<sup>a</sup>, **ý tragho** 35<sup>b</sup>; **ý deuthan** 1<sup>b</sup>, **ý daeth**, **ý doethan** 2<sup>a</sup>, **ý doethan** 2<sup>b</sup>, **ý darparan** 3<sup>a</sup>, **ý dylanuan**, **ý daruuan** 3<sup>b</sup>, **ý diadaud** 10<sup>b</sup>, **ý dinwassute** 11<sup>b</sup>, **ý deuth**, **ý del** 21<sup>a</sup>, **ý doeth** 22<sup>b</sup>, **ý deuthant** 23<sup>b</sup>, **ý deuant** 25<sup>a</sup>, **ý dav** 32<sup>a</sup>, **ý dinwassune** 44<sup>a</sup>, **ý duc** 44<sup>b</sup>, **ý diwedi** 51<sup>b</sup>, **ý dodir** 53<sup>b</sup>; **ý ffoes** 22<sup>b</sup>; **ý sirthei** 50<sup>a</sup>; **ý mae** 13<sup>b</sup>, 32<sup>a</sup>, 34<sup>a</sup>, 34<sup>b</sup>, 35<sup>a</sup>, 41<sup>b</sup>; **ý nottvȳ** 38<sup>b</sup>. Before **p** and **r** **yd** only: **id pridaw** 21<sup>a</sup>, **yd portheise** 27<sup>a</sup>; **ýd rotir** 23<sup>b</sup>. Before other consonants the usage varies,—**c**: **ý kuȳnan** (infixed pron.?) 2<sup>a</sup>, **ý kisceisse** 25<sup>a</sup>, **ý keweis** (infixed pron.?) 43<sup>b</sup>, but **id gan** 8<sup>a</sup>, **id keiff** 43<sup>a</sup>, **id cuitin** 48<sup>a</sup>, **ýd gan** 54<sup>a</sup>. **gw**: **ý gvna** 34<sup>b</sup>, **ý gweleise** 36<sup>a</sup>, 36<sup>b</sup>, **ý guȳstluȳ** 38<sup>a</sup>, **ý guiscav** 41<sup>b</sup>, but **id woriv** 9<sup>a</sup>, **ýd welese** 27<sup>a</sup>, **ýd vna** 32<sup>a</sup>. **b**: **ý bu** 33<sup>b</sup>, **ý bit** 28<sup>a</sup>, but **ýd vei** 34<sup>b</sup>, **ýd vo**, **ýd vit** 42<sup>a</sup>, **ýd uit** 44<sup>b</sup>. **ll**: **ý llas** 36<sup>b</sup>, **ý lleinw** 51<sup>a</sup>, but **id lathennawr** 26<sup>a</sup>, **id lathei** 48<sup>b</sup>. In the O.W. glosses it only appears: **it dagatte** Mart. Cap. 4<sup>b</sup>, **it darnesti** Iuv. p. 88. From all this it may be inferred that there was a period in Welsh when the particle was **yd̃** before vowels, **yd** with lenation before consonants. As to the origin of non-lenating **y**, it is probable that it started from verbs beginning with **d**. As **adȳn** *wretch* comes from \***ad-ȳdn**, so, e.g. \***yd̃ duc** would give \***yd uc**. From association with the other forms of the verb this would naturally come to be regarded as **y duc**, and hence, probably with the help of **y** containing an infixed pronoun (§ 50<sup>b</sup>), **y** might spread as the general form before consonants. As to the later **yr**: **y** for **yd̃**: **y**, it is probably due to the influence of the forms of the article **yr**: **y**.

NOTE 3.—In **ac yr gyscwys** RB. 28, **ual yr lygryssit** RB. 54, **ual yr notayssynt** CM. 57, **yr = y ry**, cf. § 93 note 4.

## Usage of yd.

92. In normal Mid.W. prose the particle **yd**, which has no appreciable meaning, is, with certain exceptions, used regularly before indicatives and subjunctives, e.g. **yd af** yn egyl gyt ac wynt *I will go as angel along with them*; **y deuei** y kythreul *the devil used to come*; ac yno **y gwelas** ef pedeir gwraged *and there he saw four women*; yn y lle **y gwelsei** Gynon *in the place where he had seen Cynon*; lle **y gwelych** eglwys *wherever thou seest a church*; **val y gwelas** y gwr Peredur yn dyuot *as the man saw Peredur coming*; megys **y mynnei** ehun *as he himself desired*; hyt **y buant** *as long as they were*.

93. But it is not used:—

(a) at the beginning of a clause before a subjunctive of wish or command, e.g. **diwýccom-ne** a digonhom o gamuet *may we make atonement for the iniquity which we have done* BB. 15<sup>b</sup>; **hanpych** gwell hail! dos titheu ar Arthur . . . ac **erchých** hýnný idaw go *thou to Arthur and ask that of him* WB. 454; Agamemnon . . . a dwawt . . . **gossottynt** hwy y neb a vynnynt yn y le ef *Agamemnon said they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place* RB. II. 24.

NOTE 1.—Contrast **yng ngoleu addef nef yt nodder** *in the light of the heavenly home may he be protected* MA. 174<sup>a</sup>.

(b) When the verb is repeated in answers, e.g. **a bery di?** **paraf** *wilt thou effect? I will*.

(c) In such instances as the following:—Bei dywedut ti y mi y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn y titheu yr hwnn a ovynny ditheu. **Dywedaf** yn llawen, heb yr Owein “*if thou wouldst tell me what I ask of thee, I would tell thee what thou askest.*” “*I will tell gladly,*” says Owein; ath gedymdeithas yssyd adolwyn gennyf y gaffel. **Keffy** myn vyg cret “*and I pray to obtain thy friendship.*” “*Thou shalt obtain it by my faith,*” ac yna y dywawt Peredur: **diolchaf** ynneu y **Duw na** thorreis vy llw *and then Peredur said: “I give thanks to God that I have not broken my oath”* (cf. the use of **na** § 237 c).

(d) When the predicate precedes the copula, e.g. **llawen vuant** *they were glad*.

NOTE 2.—But with verbs of naming **yd** with an infixed pronoun is used when the predicate precedes, e.g. **Peredur ym gelwir** *I am called Peredur*.

(e) After a negative, e.g. **ny welas** *he did not see*; **pony wdost** *dost thou not know?*

(f) In relative construction, e.g. **ef a doeth** *he came*.

(g) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. **a wely di** *dost thou see?*

(h) After the particle **neut**, e.g. **neud ynt** *geith now they are slaves* MA. 157<sup>b</sup>.

(i) After **mad well**, e.g. **mad devthoste** *happily didst thou come*, BB. 44<sup>a</sup>, unless there be an infixed pronoun, e.g. **mat yth anet** *happily wert thou born* FB. 101.

(k) After **moch soon** (= Ir. *mos*), e.g. **moch guelher** *soon will be seen* BB. 1<sup>b</sup>.

(l) After certain conjunctions, e.g. **can buost** *since thou hast been*; **kwt gaffei** *where he should get* WB. 453; **cyn gwnel** *though he does*; **kyt dywetto** *though he should say*; **o gwely** *if thou seest*; **pan welsant** *when they saw*; **pei kaffwn** *if I should get*; **tra vych** *while thou art*; **yny digwyd** *till he falls*. But it is used with an infixed pronoun after **pan**, e.g. **yr pan yth weleis** *since I saw thee*; so after **tra** (but cf. § 49<sup>b</sup>), e.g. **hyt tra yn dygyrcher** *so long as we are visited* RB. 105.

NOTE 3.—After **gwedy** after the usage is not very clear. Before a following vowel, we have on the one hand **gwedy ed eystedont** *after they sit* BCh. 53, **gwedy yd elont** *after they go* Hg. I. 11, **gwedy yd elom** *after we go* Hg. II. 146, on the other hand **gwedy aruerych** *after thou dost practise* LA. 90. Before a following consonant, in BCh. **gwedy y** (e.g. **gwedy e kafo** *after he gets* 34) is more common than **gwedy** (e.g. **gwedy roder** *after she is given* 130); in BB. is found **wide kywisscaran** (leg. **kywisscarun**) *after we separate* 12<sup>b</sup>; **gwýdi darffo** *after it is over* 4<sup>b</sup>; in Mid. W. prose **gwedy** is much more common than **gwedy y**, but it is a question how far **gwedy** comes after fusion from **gwedy y**. It is to be noted that infixing **a-** (§ 94) is found after **gwedy** as well as after the conjunctions which are not followed by **yd**; this would seem to suggest that the use of **yd** after **gwedy** was not original, but there is need for further investigation based on fuller material.

NOTE 4.—In Mid. W. prose **yd** is sometimes found before **ry**, even when there is no infixed pronoun, e.g. **fford y rý** [**djuost** *the way by which thou hast come* WB. 138; **ym pob gwlat or ý rýfuom** *in every country in which I have been* ib. 144; **y ry dugassei** *he had brought* RB. II. 139; **megys y ry wnathod** *as he had done* ib. 161. Cf. the instances of **yr** § 91 n. 3.

94. In later Mid.W. the use of **yd** is more extensive than at an earlier period. In the archaic prose of the story of Kulhwch and Olwen it is often wanting in the White Book version where it is present in the Red Book, and in the earlier poetry it is rarer still; the conditions of the earlier usage have still to be investigated. It may be noted that in earlier Welsh, when **yd** is not syntactically permissible, **a-** is used to infix a pronoun, e.g. **a-m bo** *may there be to me* BB. 17<sup>b</sup>; **ath uendiguiste** *he has blessed thee* 18<sup>a</sup>; **as attebwys** *answered them* FB. 139; **as redwn** (leg. **rodwn**) *we will give it* WB. 475. In prose this usage survives after some conjunctions, e.g. **gwedy an gwelwch** *after ye see us* Hg. II. 1; **gwedy as cladawch hi** *after ye bury her* LA. 81; **pei as rodei** *if he gave it* RB. 136. This **a** tends to become **y** under the influence of the infixed pronoun after **yd** (**y-m**, etc.), e.g. **ys po** *may there be to him* BB. 53<sup>b</sup>; **bei yscuypun** *if I had known it* BB. 41<sup>a</sup>; **bei ys gattei** *if it had permitted it* WB. 424=**pei as gattei** RB. 274; **kyt ym lladho** *though he slay me* RB. 280=**kyt am llatho** Peniarth MS. 4. With fusion, e.g. **peis mynnynt** *if they desired it* LA. 69.

### THE PARTICLE **ry**.

95. The particle **ry**, which corresponds etymologically to the Ir. verbal particle **ro-**, and resembles it in its uses, is in Welsh a disappearing particle; it is much less frequent in Mid.W. prose than in the early poetry.

NOTE.—**Ry** is sometimes reduced to **r**, e.g. **nŷr darffo** WB. 230=**ny darffo** RB. 168; **nar geueis** *that I did not get* Hg. II. 265; **ar ethynt** (v.l. **a ethynt**) *that have passed* RB. II. 205; **ar doethoed** (= **a dathoed** RB. 197) *who had come* WB. 62; **wedyr vligaw** (= **wedy y vlingaw** Hg. II. 112) *after his flying* CM. 102. From **neu + ry** has come the common Mid.W. **neur**, cf. **neur dialawd** (= **neu rŷ dialawd** WB. 404) *he has avenged* RB. 259; **neur daroed** (= **neu rŷ daroed** WB. 402) *it was over* RB. 258. For **yr** = **y ry** see § 91 n. 3.

96. In Mid.W. prose **ry** is used :—

A. With the indicative.

(a) Optionally with the perfect (as distinguished from the preterite, § 108), e.g. **uŷ llŷsuam rŷ dŷgvŷs** (= **a dynghwys** RB. 102) *im my stepmother has sworn to me* WB. 454; **pawb rŷ gauas** (= **a gauas** RB. 113) *ŷ gŷuarws everyone has received his boon* WB. 470; **drycheuwch ŷ fŷrch uŷ aeleu rŷ syrthwŷs** (= **a syrthwŷs** RB. 119) *ar auleu vŷ llygeit raise the forks of my eye-lashes which have fallen on my eyeballs* WB. 478; **llawer dyd yth ry gereis** *I have loved thee many a day* RB. 118; **nŷs rŷ geueis** (= **nys keueis** RB. 126) *I have not got him* WB. 487; **ny ry giglef i eirmoet dim y wrth y uorwyn** *I have never heard anything of the*

*maiden* RB. 113; a ffan **ry dyuu** amser mab a anet a elwit Bown and when the time was come, there was born a son who was called Bown Hg. II. 119.

(b) Optionally with the pluperfect, e.g. gwallocau a oruc y rŷn **ry adawsei** (=yr hyn **a adawssei** RB. 101) *he neglected what he had promised* WB. 453; a thrist oed genthi, **kanŷ ry welsei** (= **kany welsei** RB. 116) *eiroet y uŷnet ae eneit ganthaw a delhei y erchi y neges honno and she was sad, for she had never seen anyone who came on that quest depart with his life* WB. 474; a chael yn y uedwl **na ry welsei** *eiryoet mab a that kyndebycket ar mab y Pwyll and he thought that he had never seen son and father so like as the boy was to Pwyll*; a chynn ymgyweiryaw yn y gyfrwy neur **ry adoed** *heibyaw and before he had settled himself in his saddle, she had passed by*. In the sentence: *dechreu amouyn a gwyrda y wlat beth uuassei y arglwydiaeth ef arnadunt hwy y vlwydyn honno y wrth ry uuassei kyn no hynny he began to ask the nobles of his country how his rule over them had been that year compared with what it had been before* RB. 7, **ry uuassei** seems to express priority relatively to the preceding **buassei**.

**B.** With the subjunctive.

(a) With the present subjunctive **ry** appears sometimes when it has a perfect sense, e.g. ohonot ti yŷt gaffo ef kanŷ **ry gaffo** (= **yr nas kaffo** RB. 101) *o arall from thee he shall get (offspring) though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **kyt ry wnelych** di sarhaedeu . . . *kyn no hynn nys gwney bellach though thou hast committed outrages before this, thou shalt not commit them further* RB. 99; yno y byd eneidau ry darffo vdunt penydyaw *there are the souls that have ended their penance* LA. 129. But also without **ry**, e.g. a chyn **gwnel** gameu it . . . *ny buost ti hawlwr tir a dayar eiryoet and though he has wronged thee, thou hast never been a claimant of land and earth* RB. 44.

(b) With the past subjunctive, when it has the sense of a pluperfect, **ry** not infrequently appears, e.g. mŷnet a oruc serch y uorwŷn ym pob aelawt itaw **kŷnnŷ ry welhei** (= **yr nas gwelsei** RB. 102) *eiroet love for the maiden entered every limb of him though*

*he had never seen her* WB. 454; *nýd oed waeth kýuarwýd ýn ý wlad ný rý welei* (= *nys ry welsei* RB. 114) *eiroet noc ýn ý wlad ehun he was not a worse guide in a country that he had never seen than in his own country* WB. 471; *a chyn lawenet vu a chyt rý delei idaw iechyt and he was as joyous as though health had come to him* RB. II. 183; *pei mi rý wascut* (= *a wascut* RB. 116) *uelly ný oruydei ar arall uyth rodi serch im if it had been me whom thou hadst so squeezed, no other one would ever have been able to show me love* WB. 474. But also without **ry**, e.g. *pei ys gwypwn ny down yma if I had known it, I would not have come hither* RB. 29, 20.

C. With the infinitive when it has a perfect or pluperfect sense, e.g. *adnabot a oruc rý gaffel dynawt ohonaw he perceived that he had got a buffet*; *gwedy rý golli eu kyrn after their horns had been lost* RB. 194.

97. In early Welsh poetry the use of **ry** is much more common than in prose; there it has also some syntactical uses which have been lost in prose (cf. Eriu II. 215 sq.)

(a) With the indicative preterite, when it has a perfect sense, **ry** is much more frequent than in the prose language. As in the case of Irish **ro**, the general definition of this usage is that the past is viewed from the standpoint of the present. There may be a reference either to the personal experience of the speaker, e.g. *mi rýth welas I have seen thee* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>, *rim artuad I have been blackened* BB. 12<sup>a</sup>, or to an indefinite past, e.g. *ry gadwys Duw dial ar plwyf Pharaonus God has kept vengeance on Pharaoh's people* FB. 170.

With respect to this usage, however, the following points have to be noted:—

1. **ry** is not found:—

(a) After a negative, e.g. *ni threghis ev hoes their life has not passed away* BB. 11<sup>a</sup>; contrast *ry treghis eu hoes* FB. 128. There are rare exceptions in the later poetry.

(β) After *mad well*, e.g. *mad devthoste ýg corffolaeth happily hast Thou come into the flesh* BB. 44<sup>a</sup>.

(γ) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. *a gueleiste gureic hast thou seen a woman?* BB. 22<sup>b</sup>. But in prose *a ry fu has he been?* WB. 121.

2. **ry** is not preceded by relative **a**. In the later poetry there are very rare exceptions.

3. A pronoun is infixed after **ry**; it is not put before it with **yd** or **a**, e.g. *ry-n gwarawt has helped us* FB. 126, or *Dofyd ry-n digones if it is the Lord that has made us* FB. 113. In the later poetry there are rare exceptions.

(b) With the subjunctive of wish it is used optionally in positive (but never in negative) sentences, e.g. *ry phrinomne di gerenhit may we buy Thy friendship* BB. 44<sup>b</sup>; *rym gwares dy voli may Thy praise help me* FB. 109, by *ath uendicco may it bless thee* BB. 18<sup>a</sup>; but *ný buve trist may I not be sad* BB. 17<sup>b</sup>.

(c) With the present indicative:—

1. **Ry** may express possibility, e.g. *ry seiw gur ar vn conin a man can stand on a single reed* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>.

NOTE.—In prose there is an instance of **ry** with the present indicative in: ef a **ry** eill ych neckau *he may refuse you* RB. 60. With **gallu**, **ry** is also found in the potential, e.g. ef **ar allei** vot yn wir a dywedy di *what thou sayest may be true* Hg. I. 81, similarly 224, 267, 272; without **ry**: ef a **allei** llawer mab colli y eneit *many youths might lose their life* WB. 100. From the perfect sense inherent in the verb, **ry** is found with the present and imperfect of **darvot** *to be finished*, e.g. os y uwrw **ry** derýw *if he has been thrown* WB. 125; **neur daroed** idaw diffeithaw traean Iwerdon *he had already laid waste the third part of Ireland* RB. 135.

2. In a subordinate clause of a general sentence it may have the sense of a perfect, e.g. ti a nodyd a **ry geryd** *Thou savest those whom Thou hast loved* FB. 180. The same sense is found in the subjunctive, when that mood is syntactically required, e.g. **ry brynw[y]** nef nyt ef synn *whosoever has purchased heaven will not be confounded* FB. 307; a **ry gotwy** glew gogeleu ragtaw *let him who has angered a brave man shun him* MA. 191<sup>a</sup>.

(d) In the later poetry it is used with the future, or with the subjunctive in a future sense, without any apparent meaning, e.g. arth o Deheubarth a dirchafuý. **ry llettaud** y wir ew tra thir mýnvý *a bear from the South will arise. His men will spread over the land of Mynwý* BB. 30<sup>a</sup>; bydinoed Katwaladyr kadyr y deuant. **ry drychafwynt** Kymry, kat a wnant *the hosts of Cadwaladr mightily will they come. The Cymry will rise up, they will give battle* FB. 126.

## CONJUGATION OF THE VERB.

### Verbal Classes.

98. In Celtic as in Latin there were various types of verbal conjugation. In Old Irish the different types may still to a great extent be distinguished, e.g. 3 sg. **-beir** *carries* from \***beret**, **-guid** *prays* from \***godit** (cf. Lat. capit), **-cara** *loves* from \***carāt** (cf. Lat. amat), **-lēici** *leaves* from \***lancīt** or the like (cf. Lat. audit or monet; in Celtic ē became ī). In Welsh the several types have become obscured. There remain, however, some traces of an original difference. Such are the different forms of the 3 sg. pres. ind., e.g. **geill** (to **gallu** *to be able*) which would go back to \***gallīt** or the like, **cymmer** *takes* which would correspond to an Ir. con-beir and would go back to **com-beret**, **car** *loves* = Ir. -cara; further the various forms of the 3 sg. pret. act. in **-as**, **-es**, **-is** and of the pret. pass. in **-at**, **-et**, **-it**. In particular should be noted such series as **geilw** (to **galw**, *to call*): **gelwis**: **gelwit**; **ceidw** (to **cadw** *to preserve*): **cedwis**: **cedwit**; **llysg** (to **llosgi** *to*

*burn*): **llosges**: **llosget**; **ceiff** (to **caffael** to *get*): **cavas**: **cavat**. Here there is great need for a collection of material from early texts. In some cases an original radical conjugation is indicated by certain formations peculiar to verbs of the root class, e.g. the **-t** preterites **aeth** = Ir. -acht and **cymmerth** = Ir. con-bert to pres. **a** = Ir. -aig and **cymmer** = Ir. con-beir; the pret. **gwarawt** = Ir. fo-räith to **gwaret** to *help*; and preterites passive like **llas** = Ir. -slass to **llad** to *kill*.

### Voice.

99. There are two voices, the active and the passive. The deponential form which is found in Old-Irish has disappeared in Welsh.

### Number.

100. In the active there are two numbers, the singular and the plural. In the passive there is only one form for both numbers.

101. In the concord of a verb with a plural subject Welsh shews certain peculiarities:—

(a) If the subject be unexpressed, or if it be a personal pronoun, the verb is in the plural, e.g. **y doethant, y doethant wy, wynt a doethant** *they came*.

NOTE.—Exceptions are rare, e.g. **os wynteu ae med hi** *if it is they that possess it* RB. 91; **poet wynt athiffero** *let it be they who defend thee* CM. 35; **nyt wy dyweit** *geu llyfreu* *Beda the books of Beda do not lie* FB. 159; **wy a gynheil y bit** *they support the world* FB. 217; **hwy a orfyf** *they shall prevail* MA. 141<sup>b</sup>. An example with the copula is: **ys hwŷ yr rei hŷnnŷ** (= **sef yw y rei hŷnnŷ** RB. 121) *Nŷnhŷaw a Pheibŷaw they are Nynnyaw and Peibŷaw* WB. 480.

(b) Otherwise in the prose of the Mabinogion the singular is the usual construction, e.g. **y kerdwys y kennadeu** *the messengers set out*; **beth yw y rei racko?** *egylyon ynt what are those yonder? They are angels*. But sometimes the verb is in the plural, particularly in WB. and in the more archaic texts, e.g. **y deu vrenhin a nessayssant** *the two kings drew near* RB. 5; **a meicheit Matholwch a oedŷnt** (= **oed** RB. 35) *ar lan ŷ weilgi and the swineherds of Matholwch were by the shore of the sea* WB. 50; **ŷ trywŷr a ganant** *eu kŷrn the three sound their horns* WB. 485 = RB. 125, 18;



**naw brenhin** coronawc **a oedýnt** wýr idaw *nine crowned kings who were his men* RB. 244; **seithwýr a oýdýnt** y danaw *seven men were under him* (by **naw eglwys ereill a vydei** *there were nine other churches*) WB. 385 = RB. 245; **ý rei a oedýnt** (= **oed** RB. 165) *ýn gwassanaethu those who were serving* WB. 227; **bliant oedýnt** (= **oed** RB. 165) **ý lleinýeu** y bwrt *the tablecloths were of fine linen* WB. 227; kwt **ýnt** (= **ble mae** RB. 101) **plant** *ý gwr where are the children of the man?* WB. 453. Sometimes the plural is found with a collective noun, e.g. **gwelsant niuer** Otgar eu meint *the people of Odgar saw their number* RB. 136, 3. In the earlier poetry the plural is quite common, and in corresponding constructions in Old Irish the plural is regular. In Welsh there has been an encroachment of the singular upon the plural, as there has been in later Irish.

### Person.

**102.** In the active there are three persons of each number. In the passive there is only a third person, the first and second persons being expressed, as in Irish, by means of pronouns, e.g. **y-m gelwir** *I am called*, **y-th elwir** *thou art called*, **ny-n cerir** *we are not loved*, **ny-ch cerir** *ye are not loved*; **kattwer vi** *let me be kept*.

NOTE.—In the third person there are instances of an infixed pronoun, when the verb is non-relative, e.g. kyt **ys galwer** *though they are called* LA. 88, megys **pei as gossottit** *as if it were placed* Hg. I. 304; but, on the other hand, e.g. **na rodher** *that it be not given* RB. 258, **pan ollyngit** *when it was set free* Hg. I. 315. The matter calls for further observation.

**103.** The verb regularly agrees in person with the subject, e.g. **mi a welaf** *I see*, **ti a wely** *thou seest*, **ny a dywedwn** *we say*, **mi a thi a ryuelwn** *thou and I will fight*, **mi a Bown a wysgwn** *yn arueu ymdanam a thitheu a wysgy ymdanat* *Bown and I will put on our arms, and thou wilt put on thine*. In the passive, where there is no distinction of person, the third person is used everywhere, e.g. **mi a gerir** *I am loved*. The 3 sg. copula form **ys** is used, like the corresponding Ir. is, with pronouns of the first and second persons, e.g. **ys mi** (= Ir. is *mē*) *it is I*.

Occasionally in a relative clause the verb is in the 3 sg. when the antecedent is in the first or second person, e.g. **mi rŷth welas** *I have seen thee* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>; **ae ti a eirch uy merch? ys mi ae heirch** *is it thou who askest for my daughter? It is I who ask for her* WB. 479; **mi ay had[e]ilyawd** *I built it* WB. 394.

NOTE.—These last examples represent the original construction, which has in Welsh been replaced by congruence with the pronoun. The 3 sg. is the regular construction in Breton, e.g. **me<sup>da</sup>uelas** *I saw*, in Cornish, e.g. **why a ergh** *ye seek*, and in Old Irish, e.g. **is mē asbeir** *it is I who say*.

### The Moods.

**104.** There are three finite moods, the indicative, the subjunctive and the imperative. The Celtic languages have developed no proper infinitive; the place of the infinitive in Welsh as in the other Celtic languages is taken by a verbal noun, with nominal inflexion and with nominal construction. There is a passive participle in **-edic** and a verbal of necessity in **-adwy** (corresponding to the Irish verbal of necessity in **-thi**).

### The Indicative.

**105.** The tenses of the indicative are present, imperfect, preterite, and pluperfect. Syntactically the present serves also as a future; in the earlier language, however, there are also special future forms (§ 130). The imperfect is used both as an imperfect indicative and as a conditional (in the latter usage it corresponds in usage to the Irish secondary future). The preterite is used both as preterite and as perfect; in the latter usage it is often preceded by **ry**, particularly in the earlier language (§§ 96, 97). The pluperfect is a new development of the British division of Celtic; it has the same endings as the imperfect, and has been formed to the preterite stem on the analogy of the imperfect to the present. It is used (a) as a pluperfect indicative, (b) as a pluperfect conditional, in which sense, however, the imperfect continues to be used in Mid.W., (c) as a pluperfect subjunctive, in which usage it tends in Mid.W. to replace the past tense of the subjunctive (§ 111). The following examples will illustrate the uses of the tenses of the indicative.

## PRESENT.

**106. (a)** Actual present, e.g. beth **yw** hwnn? Kyfrwy **yw** *what is this? It is a saddle*; ti a **wely** ý sawl vorýnyon hýgar **ýssýd** ýn ý llys hon *thou seest all the amiable maidens who are in this court* WB. 155.

(b) Consuetudinal present, e.g. ef a **wyl** pawb or a del ý myýwn ac nýs **gwyl** neb efo *he sees everyone who enters and no one sees him* WB. 156.

(c) Of an action lasting into the present, e.g. **ys** gwers **yd wyf** yn keissaw a olchei vyg cledyf *I have been seeking for a while some one to burnish my sword* RB. 126; pump mlyned ar ethynt yr pan **yttym** ni yn arueru or ryw seguryt hwnnw *five years have passed away since we have been enjoying that ease* RB. II. 205.

(d) Historic present, e.g. nyt kynt **yd yskynn** ef ar y uarch noc **yd a** hitheu hebdaŵ ef *no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him* RB. 11; nachaf gwr du . . . a **welant** lo! *they saw a black man* WB. 486; a phan **daw** (= **doeth** WB. p. 204) hyt lle yd oed Gwenhwyvar kyuarch gwell a oruc idi *and when he came to the place where Gwenhwyvar was he greeted her* RB. 262; gossot a oruc ynteu ar y marchawc . . . yny **hyllt** y daryan ac yny **dyrr** yr aruev *he made an onset on the horseman, till he cleft the shield and broke the arms* RB. 271.

(e) As future, e.g. dywet y Arthur pa le bynnac y bwyf i gwr idaw **vydaf**, ac o **gallaf** lles a gwassanaeth idaw, mi ae **gwnaf**. A dywet na **deuaf** y lys vyth yny ymgaffwyf ar gwr hir *say to Arthur that wherever I am I will be his man, and if I can do him advantage and service, I will do it. And say that I will never come to his court till I encounter the tall man.*

## IMPERFECT.

**107. (a)** Of an action going on or a state existing in past time, e.g. val y **kyrchei** ef y bont ef a **welai** varchawc yn dyuot *as he was making for the bridge, he saw a horseman coming* WB. p. 216; nyt y fford a **gyrchei** y tref or bont a gerdawd Gereint *it was not by the road that went from the bridge to the town that Gereint went*

WB. p. 217; yma **yd oedwn** yn kerdet ui ar gwr mwyaſ a **garwn**. ac ar hynny y doeth tri chawr o gewri attam *we were travelling, I and the man whom I most loved. And thereupon there came to us three giants* WB. 441; pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eingon gof a **oed** yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc **oedwn** *when first I came here there was here a smith's anvil, and I was a young bird* RB. 129.

NOTE 1.—Note the use of the imperfect with a negative in such sentences as the following: **nyt eynt** hwy oe bod *they would not go willingly* RB. 32; yr hynny **ny thawei** yny dygwydws kysgu arnei *for all that she would not be silent, till sleep fell upon her* RB. II. 51.

NOTE 2.—The imperfects of **clybot** *to hear* and of **gwelet** *to see* are frequent in narrative, parallel with the preterite of other verbs, e.g. y dyd yd aeth ef parth a chaer Dathyl, troi o vywn y llys a wnaeth hi; a hi a **glywei** lef corn *the day that he went towards Caer Dathyl, she walked within the court, and she heard the sound of a horn* RB. 74, 6; a dyuot yr brifford ae chanlyn a orugant. A choet mawr a **welynt** y wrthunt. A ffarth ar coet y deuthant. Ac yn dyuot or koet allan **y gwelynt** pedwar marchawc aruawc. Ac edrych a orugant arnunt *and they came to the highway and followed it. And they saw before them a great wood. And they went towards the wood. And they saw four armed horsemen coming out of the wood. And they gazed upon them* RB. 270, 19.

(b) Representing in indirect speech a present indicative of direct speech, e.g. a galw a wnaeth attaw y verch hynaf idaw Goronilla a gofyn idi pa veint **y karei** hi efo. A thygu a wnaeth hitheu y nef a daear bot yn vwy **y karei** hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chredu a wnaeth ynteu idi hynny, a dywedut, kan **oed** kymeint **y karei** hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean y gyuoeth genti hi y wr a dewissei yn ynys Prydein *and he called to him his eldest daughter Goronilla, and asked her how much she loved him. And she swore by heaven and earth that she loved him more than her own life. And he believed her in that and said that, since she loved him so much as that, he would give the third of his kingdom with her to the man whom she should choose in the island of Britain* RB. II. 65.

(c) Of a repeated or customary action in past time, e.g. a phy beth bynnac a dywetei ar y dauawt, ef ae **kadarnhei** oe weithret ae arueu *and whatever he said with his tongue, he used to make it good by his deeds and his arms* RB. II. 41; kymeint ac a wnelit y dyd or gweith, tranoeth pan gyuotit neur **daruydei** yr dayar y lynku *as much of the work as was done by day, overnight when they arose the earth had swallowed it* RB. II. 141; ar rwym a **wneyit**

yna rwng deu dyn a wnaethpwynt y rwng Gereint ar uorwyn *and the bond that used to be made then between two persons was made between Gereint and the maiden* RB. 262, 25.

(d) As secondary future or conditional.

(α) As a secondary tense to the future, e.g. can gwŷdŷwn i **ŷ** **dout** ti ŷm keissyaw i *for I knew that thou wouldst come to seek me* WB. 249; diheu oed genthi na **deuei** Ereint uyth *she was sure that Gereint would never come* WB. 441; ny wydyat hi beth a **wnaei** *she did not know what she should do* RB. 268, 29.

(β) In the apodosis of a future or possible conditional clause, e.g. bei gwnelhit uŷg kŷghor i nŷ **thorrit** kŷfreitheu llŷs ŷrdaw *if my counsel were followed, the laws of the court would not be broken on his account* WB. 458; pei clywhut ti ymdidan y marchogyon racco . . . mwy **vydei** dy oual noc y mae *if thou heard the discourse of yonder horsemen, thy anxiety would be greater than it is.*

(γ) In the apodosis of a past or impossible conditional clause, e.g. py ham vilein, heb ef, y gadut ti efo heb y uenegi imi. Arglwyd, heb ef, ny orchymyneisti euo imi; pei as gorchymynnud nys **gadwn** "*why, villain,*" said he, "*didst thou let him go without letting me know?*" "*Lord,*" said he, "*thou didst not give me such instructions. If thou hadst instructed me I should not have let him go*" WB. p. 216; pei oet idaw, ef a **ledit** (= **ladyssit** RB. 193, 8) *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* WB. 117.

NOTE 3. To **bot** to be the regular conditional is **bydwn**. The imperfect **oed**, however, (like Ir. *ba*) is used in a modal sense in expressions like the following: **oedwell genhŷf** (= Ir. *ba ferr limm*) *noe ŷssŷd ŷm gwlat bei oll ŷt uei val hŷnn I should prefer to all that is in my kingdom that it should be all like that* WB. 487.

#### PRETERITE.

**108. (a)** As preterite (the regular narrative tense), e.g. ac ŷmhoŷ lud a **oruc** ar ŷ marchawc, ac ar ŷ gossot kŷntaf ŷ uwrw ŷr llawr ŷ dan draet ŷ uarch. a thra **barh[a]awd** ŷr un or pedwarugein marchawc, ar ŷ gossot kŷntaf **ŷ bŷrŷawd** pob un onadunt. Ac o oreu ŷ oreu **ŷ doe[t]hont** attaw eithŷr ŷ iarll. Ac ŷn diwethaf oll **ŷ doeth** ŷ iarll attaw *and he turned on the horseman, and at the*

*first onset he threw him to the ground, under the feet of his horse. And while there remained one of the eighty horsemen, at the first onset he overthrew every one of them. And there came to him always one better than the last, except the earl. And last of all the earl came to him* WB. 432 ; y gysgu yd **aethant** y nos honno. a phan **welas** y meichat lliw y dyd, ef a **deffroes** Wydyon *that night they went to sleep. And when the swineherd saw the hue of day, he aroused Gwydyon* RB. 78, 12.

(b) Corresponding to a perfect in indirect speech, e.g. a thranoeth Agamemnon a wyssywys y bobyl y gyt, ac a diwadawd na **bu** ef eiryoet chwanawc yr amherodraeth honno. ac a dywawt nas **kymmerth** ef hi onyt o uedwl iawn *and next day Agamemnon summoned the people together, and denied that he had ever been desirous of that sovereignty. And he said that he had not taken it except with just intention* RB. II. 24.

(c) As perfect, e.g. coet **ry welsom** ar y weilgi yn y lle ny **welsam** eiryoet vn prenn *we have seen a wood upon the sea where we have never seen a single tree* RB. 35, 24; pwy a **ganhadwys** itti eisted yna *who has given thee permission to sit there?* WB. p. 225 ; Bendigeit Uran ar niuer a **dywedassam** ni a hwylyassant parth ac Iwerdon *Bendigeit Vran and those whom we have mentioned set out towards Ireland* RB. 35, 14.

## PLUPERFECT.

109. (a) As pluperfect indicative, e.g. or a **welsei** ef o helgwn y byt ny **welsei** cwn un lliw ac wynt *of all the hounds that he had seen anywhere he had never seen dogs of the same colour as them* RB. 1, 21 ; ual **y gnottayssei** tra uu yn llys Arthur kyrchu twrneimeint a wnaei *he resorted to tournaments as he had been wont to do while he was in Arthur's court* RB. 268, 6 ; a dyuot kof idaw y dolur yna yn uwy no phan **y cawssei** *and then there came to him the recollection of his sorrow more than when he had received it* WB. p. 218.

(b) As pluperfect conditional, e.g. **buassei** well itti pei rodassut nawd yr mackwy *it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the lad ;* a phei nat ystyriei yr Arglwyd Duw ohonunt

wy, ef a **wnaethoed** oual tra messur udunt *and if the Lord God had not considered them he would have caused anxiety beyond measure to them* Hg. II. 71.

(c) Replacing the subjunctive in a pluperfect sense, e.g. bei **buassut** wrth vy gyghor i, ny chyuaruydei a thi na thrallawt na gofit *if thou hadst followed my counsel, neither affliction nor trouble would have come nigh unto thee* Hg. II. 123; pei **doethoed** ef yn y lle wedy dilyw, wynt a dywedynt y mae vrth Noe ac Effream y dywedassei Duw pob peth or a dywedessynt *if he had come immediately after the Flood they would have said that it was to Noah and Abraham that God had said everything that they had said* LA. 17.

### The Subjunctive Mood.

#### THE FORMATION OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

**110.** The sign of the subjunctive is **h**; for the changes that **h** undergoes in conjunction with a preceding sound see § **11g**. Examples:—sg. 3 pres., **coffaho**: **coffau** *to remember*; **carho**: **caru** *to love*; **sorho**: **sorri** *to be angry*; **talho**: **tal** *pay*; **prynho**: **prynu** *to buy*; **mynho**: **mynnu** *to desire*; **bendicco**: **bendigaw** *to bless*; **cretto**: **credu** *to believe*; **atteppo**: **attebu** *to answer*; **llatho**: **llad** *to slay*; **tyffo**: **tyvu** *to grow*. After a preceding **h**, **h** is lost by dissimilation, e.g. **parhao**: **parhau** *to continue*; **amheuo**: **amheu** *to doubt*. Further **h** does not appear after **ch**, e.g. **archo**: **erchi** *to ask*, after **ff**, e.g. **caffo**: **caffael** *to get*, after **ll**, e.g. **gallo**: **gallu** *to be able*, or after **s**, e.g. **keisser** BB. 26<sup>b</sup>, **llafassed** BB. 27<sup>a</sup>, **yssynt** WB. 467. In the present tense the subjunctive has distinctive endings; in the past tense the endings are the same as in the imperfect indicative, so that here the **h** is the only distinguishing mark, except in the few verbs that have a special subjunctive stem.

NOTE 1.—In Mid.W. a new **h** subjunctive is formed analogically to the indicative of verbal stems ending in **d**, e.g. **cerdho** RB. 293 = **certho** WB. p. 211 : **cerdet** *to go*, **lladho** WB. p. 210 = **llatho** WB. 419 : **llad**, **rothom** RB. 105 = **rothom** WB. 458 : **rodi** *to give*; from stems ending in **v** the regular form is rare, **tyffei** : **tyvu** WB. 453, but **prouher** : **provi** *prove* BB. 3<sup>b</sup>, **safhei** : **sevyll** *to stand* WB. 466 = RB. 110. There are already in Mid.W., particularly in its later period, examples of complete confusion

of the subjunctive with the indicative stem, e.g. **clywut** RB. 274=**clȳvut** WB. 423 = **clȳwhut** WB. p. 212 : **clȳbot** *to hear*, **clȳwyh** RB. 270 = **clȳwhyh** WB. p. 209, **guelud** : **gwelet** *to see* BB. 29<sup>b</sup>, **talo** RB. 268=**talho** WB. 415, **sorro** : **sorri** BB. 28<sup>b</sup>, **cenich** : **canu** *to sing* BB. 42<sup>b</sup>, **medrei** RB. 76=**metrei** WB. 104 : **medru** *aim at*, **mynnei** RB. 277=**mynhei** WB. p. 214, **cerdo** RB. 273=**certho** WB. p. 211, **llado** RB. 270=**lladho** WB. p. 210=**llatho** WB. 419, **rodo** RB. 286=**rotho** WB. p. 220, **ȳvei** : **ȳvet** *to drink* BB. 48<sup>b</sup>. This confusion has spread analogically from cases like **gallu**, **erchi**, etc., where the subjunctive stem was in Old Welsh identical with the indicative, and from cases where later the two forms fell together by the operation of phonetic law, e.g. **mynho** *to* **mynno**, like **minheu** *I* *to* **minneu**. The old forms are most persistent in stems in **g**, **d**, **b**.

NOTE 2.—The earlier history of the Welsh subjunctive is very obscure. Vendryès, however, in the *Mémoires de la Société de linguistique de Paris*, XI. 258 sq. has made it probable that **h** came from prehistoric **s**, so that the formation would resemble that of the Irish *s*-subjunctive, from which, however, it differs in that in Welsh there must have been a vowel between **s** and the final consonant of the verbal stem. The explanation given by Stern, CZ. III. 383 sq. is untenable. In Early Welsh there are two subjunctives identical in formation with the Irish *s*-subjunctive :—**duch** *may he lead* from \***douc-set** : **dwyn** *to lead*, and **gwares** *may he help* from \***vo-ret-set** : **gwaret** *to help*.

#### THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

III. In early Welsh, as in Irish, the subjunctive had two tenses, a present, which syntactically had the function of a present and of a perfect, and a past, which syntactically had the function of an imperfect and of a pluperfect; in the sense of perfect and pluperfect the subjunctive may be preceded by **ry** (§ 96B.) In the later Mid.W. period the past subjunctive in a pluperfect sense tended to be replaced by the pluperfect indicative (§ 109C); sometimes in the same passage one text has the original subjunctive while another has the pluperfect indicative, e.g. **kȳn nȳs rȳ welhei** WB. 454 = **yr nas gwelsei** RB. 102, 5 *though he had not seen her*; **pei as gorchymynnūt** WB. p. 216 = **pei as gorchymynnassūt** RB. 280, 7 *if thou hadst commanded it*. The indicative origin of the usage is particularly clear in forms like **pei doethoed** *if he had come* LA. 17.

NOTE.—This substitution is parallel to the general tendency to replace the subjunctive stem by the indicative; it was noted above that no instances have been found of subjunctive **h** after **s**; thus, if **ȳsswn** from **ȳssu** *to eat* might be either indicative or subjunctive, a pluperfect indicative like **carasswn** *I had loved* might easily have come to be used in a subjunctive sense. In **ry wnelsūt** WB. p. 223 = **gwnelūt** WB. 445, RB. 290, a pluperfect has been formed analogically to the past subjunctive **gwnelūt** (§ 142).



## THE USAGES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

**112.** A thorough investigation of the uses of the subjunctive as contrasted with the indicative in Mid.W. is still wanting<sup>a</sup>. The following examples may serve to illustrate the principal types; further instances will be found under the conjunctions. Under the various headings are given, so far as they occur, ( $\alpha$ ) instances of the present subjunctive, ( $\beta$ ) instances of the past subjunctive.

**113. A.** The subjunctive in main clauses.

(a) Wish.

(a) **an duch** ir gulet *may He bring us to the feast* BB. 20<sup>b</sup>; **Duw a rotho** da itt *may God give good to thee* WB. p. 204; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine* RB. 103, 6.

NOTE.—A wish with reference to the past is expressed by the indicative, e.g. **Och Iessu na dýffv** wý nihenit *O Jesus! that my death had come* (lit. *Alas! Jesus, that my death did not come*) BB. 25<sup>b</sup>; **och Gindilie na buost** gureic *would, Cynddilig, that thou hadst been a woman* BB. 46<sup>a</sup>.

(b) Command.

(a) **yscýthrich fort** a delhich ti. a **llunhich** tagneuet *make smooth a road that thou mayest come and cultivate peace* BB. 42<sup>b</sup>; **dos . . . ac erchych** hynny idaw *go and ask that of him* RB. 102, 11; **dyuot a wnelhych** gennyf *come with me* RB. 118, 2; **dabre genhiw ným gwatter** *come with me, let me not be refused* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>.

( $\beta$ ) In indirect speech a command is transferred to the past subjunctive, e.g. **Agamemnon . . . a d[y]wawt y peidei ef ar llywodraeth honno yn llawen . . . a gossottynt** hwy y neb a vynynt yn y le ef *Agamemnon said that he would gladly give up that command, and that they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place* RB. II. 24.

(c) Futurity. This usage is common in poetry, but rare in prose.

(a) **ohonot ti ýt gaffo** ef kanýs rý gaffo o arall *from thee he shall get it, though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **nýth atter ti** (= **nyth ellyngir di** RB. 104, 8) ý mýwn *thou shalt not be admitted* WB. 457; **nyt arbettwy** car corff y gilyd *one kinsman will not*

<sup>a</sup> A beginning has been made by Atkinson, *On the Use of the Subjunctive Mood in Welsh*, "Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy, 1894," pp. 459 sq., but he deals only with the present subjunctive.

*spare the body of another* FB. 127; *cad a uyt ym Mynyt Carn a Thrahaearn a later there will be a battle in Mynydd Carn, and Trahaearn will be slain* MA. 142<sup>a</sup>.

**114. B.** The subjunctive in subordinate clauses.

(a) Negatively after verbs of thinking, swearing, etc.

(a) *ny thybygaf inheu na wypych ti haedu ohonaw ef hynny I do not think that thou dost not know that he has deserved that* RB. II. 157; *hyt na bo neb a wypo na bo ti vo Gwrlois so that no one may know that thou art not Gwrlois* RB. II. 179; *mi a tynghaf dynghet idaw na chaffo ef enw yny kaffo gennyf i I lay this fate on him that he will not get a name till he gets it from me* RB. 69, 21; *o rodwch gret na wneloch gam idi if ye pledge yourselves to do her no wrong* RB. 117, 15.

NOTE 1.—But in indirect speech as such the indicative is the mood used. With the last example contrast: *y Duw y dygaf vyg kyffes nae werthu nae ellwng nas gwnaf i I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56, 8; similarly 215, 15.

(β) *nyt er tebygu ohonaw ef na bei deilwg it was not because he thought that it was not worthy* RB. II. 26; *neb or ae gwelei ny wydyat na beynt eur no one who saw them knew that they were not gold* RB. 62, 1. After a primary tense:—*na wn . . . pei kahwn dÿsc nas gwÿpwn I do not know that, if I got instruction, I would not know how to do it* WB. 127.

(b) In indirect interrogation.

(a) *aet un y wybot pwy vo let some one go to learn who he may be* RB. 9, 1; *manac y mi pa furyf y gallwyf hynny show me how I can do that* RB. 3, 4; *yny wyper a uo byw until it be known whether he will live* RB. 261, 4; *y edrych a allwyf y dial arnaw to see whether I can avenge him on him* RB. 204, 12; *dewis ae ti a elych yr llys ae titheu a delych gyt a mi y hela ae minneu a yrro vn or teulu choose whether thou wilt go to the court, or whether thou wilt come with me to the chase, or whether I shall send one of the household* RB. 237, 9.

(β) *heb wybot pwy vei eu gelynyon pwy vei eu gwyr ehunein without knowing who were their enemies, who their own men* RB. II. 105; *val yd oed Kynan Meiradawc yn pedrussaw beth a wnelei as Kynan Meiradawc was hesitating as to what he should do*

RB. II. 114; a medyl yaw pa ffuruf **y gellynt** ymlad ar deu lu *and they considered how they could fight with the two armies* RB. II. 76; ef a peris y dwyn yw lys y edrych a **uei** vyw *he caused him to be brought to his court to see whether he would live* WB. p. 222.

NOTE 2.—But in dependent interrogation as such the subjunctive is not required, e.g. ny wn i pw y **wyt** ti *I do not know who thou art* RB. 2; govyn a oruc pw y **oedynt** a pha le pan **hanhoedynt** a phy daear **y magyssit** arnei a phy achaws **y dathoedynt** y deyrnas ef *he asked who they were, and whence they came, and in what land they had been reared, and for what reason they had come to his kingdom* RB. II. 131; gouyn a wnaeth ae offeir yat oed ef *he asked if he was a priest* Hg. I. 33; edrych yn y chylch a oruc a **yttoed** ef yn deffroi *she looked round about her to see if he was awaking* RB. 274, 30.

(c) Concessive clauses:—

(a) a **chyt archo** ef ytti yr eil na dyro *and though he ask thee for a second (blow), do not give it* RB. 3, 19; tydi am gwely i **kany welwyf** i dydi *thou shalt see me, though I do not see thee* RB. 173, 18.

(β) a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi ef a gymyrth y rybud *and though he was angry with her, he took her warning* WB. p. 215.

(d) Conditional clauses:—

(β) e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130, 5; bei **ys cuypun**...nys **gunaun** *if I had known it I would not have done it* BB. 41<sup>a</sup>; or **gwnelei** ef hynny ynteu a rodei y verch idaw ef *if he did that he would give him his daughter* RB. II. 26.

NOTE 3.—In present conditional clauses the present indicative with **o** is used (§ 224<sup>a</sup>).

(e) Clauses of comparison:—

(a) gwnaet iawn **mal y barno** goreugwyr y llys *let him give satisfaction as the nobles of the court shall decide* RB. 261, 4.

(β) **mal y dycke**i eu teghetuennu y ffoassant *they fled as their fortunes led them* RB. II. 73. Of unreal comparison, e.g. llyma yssyd iawnhaf itti . . . dyuot yma auory ym kymr y i **mal na wyppwn** i dim y wrth hynny *that is thy most proper course, to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it* WB. p. 215.

(f) Temporal clauses:—

(a) o lladaf i y gwr racco mi ath gaf ti **tra vynywyf**. a **gwedy** nath **vynywyf** mi ath yrraf ymdeith *if I slay yonder man, I will*

*take thee as long as I desire ; and when I no longer desire thee, I will cast thee forth* WB. p. 215 ; **pan agorer** y creu beuny d yd a allan *when the sty is opened every day, it goes out* RB. 78, 7 ; **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely a wneuthum yrot ti *when thou thyself comest to thy land, thou wilt see what I have done for thee* RB. 6 ; ny luniaf i esgydeu idi **yny welwyf** y throet *I will not shape shoes for her till I see her foot* RB. 70, 24.

(β) a pheri yr kigy d **gwedy y bei** yn dryllyaw kic dyuot idi a tharaw bonclust arnei beuny d *and he made the butcher, after he had been cutting up the flesh, come to her and box her ears every day* RB. 34, 9 ; a **ffan uei** hýttraf Gereint y llawenhaei y gwr *and whenever Gereint prevailed, the man rejoiced* WB. 398 ; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood, he would travel on the top of the wood* RB. 108, 21 ; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were thrown into the cauldron till it was full* RB. 39, 23.

(g) Final clauses, and clauses following verbs of effecting, commanding, desiring, etc.

(α) carchara wynt **hyt nat elont** dracheuyn *imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14 ; mi a wna f **na chaffo** ef viui vyth *I shall effect that he shall never get me* RB. 13, 16 ; ny allaf i **na chysgwyf** *I cannot refrain from sleep* RB. 277, 4 ; sef y harchaf itt **na mynnych** wreic *my request of thee is that thou shalt not seek a wife* RB. 100, 20.

(β) ereill a gyghorei it rodi dy uerch y un o dylyedogyon y deyrnas hon **ual y bei** vrenhin gwedy ti *others counselled thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom, so that there might be a king after thee* RB. II. 114 ; Andromacta...a anuones at Briaf y beri idaw wahard Ector **nat elei** y dyd hwnnw yr vrwydyr *Andromache sent to Priam to get him to prevent Hector from going to the battle that day* RB. II. 22 ; adolwyn a wnaeth Elenus **na wnelit** hynny *Helenus begged that that might not be done* RB. II. 32.

NOTE 4.— But in mere consecution the indicative is used, e.g. ar y llech y mae kawc aryant wrth gadwyn aryant **mal na ellir** eu gwahanu *on the flag there is a silver goblet on a silver chain, so that they cannot be separated* RB. 167 ; kyseu a wneuthum i **ual na wybuum** pan aeth ef *I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 26.

(h) Relative clauses, including similar clauses of a non-relative type.

(α) wely di a **wnelych** *here is what thou must do* RB. 271, 23; kein wlad nef boed ef **yt el** *the fair land of heaven, may it be there that he goes* MA. 263b; a **vo** penn bit bont *let him who is head be bridge* RB. 36; y gymeint a **wypwyf** i mi ae dywedaf *all that I know I will tell* RB. 131; o mynwn nineu arueru o rydit a **vo** hwy *if we wish to enjoy freedom any longer*; pwy bynnac a **vynno** kanlyn Arthur bit heno y Ghernyw gyt ac ef *whoever wishes to accompany Arthur, let him be with him to-night in Cornwall* RB. 160; kymer y march kyntaf a **welych** *take the first horse that thou seest* RB. 9; na uyd...**yr** a **dotter** yndi vyth *however much be put into it it will never be (full)* RB. 15; ny cheiff ymwan...y gwr ny **bo** gyt ac ef y wreic vwyhaf a **garho** *no man will be allowed to contend who has not with him the lady whom he most loves* RB. 252; a oes ohonawch chwi a **adnapo** y uarchoges *racco is there any one of you who knows yonder horsewoman?* RB. 8; keis ath **ladho** *seek someone to slay thee* RB. 5; gwna ty...y **geingho** ef *make a house in which he may find room* RB. 37, 21

(β) Sef y gwelei y llew yn y ganlyn . . . ual milgi a **uackei** ehun *he saw the lion following him like a hound that he had reared himself* RB. 187; pedeir meillonon gwynnnyon a dŷuei yn y hol mŷn **yd elhei** *four white blades of clover grew after her wherever she went* WB. 476; digavn oed hŷnnŷ yn tal gwasanaeth a **uei** uwŷ nor un a wneuthum i *that were sufficient as pay for a greater service than that which I have done* WB. 426; a pheth bynnac a **dywettei** Peredur wrthi chwerthin a wney hitheu yn uchel *and whatever Peredur said to her, she laughed aloud* RB. 237; a chymeint oed eu gwybot ac nat oed ymadrawd . . . yr isset **y dywettit** . . . nys **gwypynt** *and such was their knowledge that there was no conversation, however low it was uttered, that they did not know* RB. 94, 18. After a primary tense: kynhebic yw yr neb a **wasgarei** gemeu mawrweirthyawc dan draet moch *he is like one who should scatter precious stones under the feet of swine* RB. II. 122.

### The Imperative.

**115.** In the active the imperative has two persons in the singular and three in the plural; in the passive it is identical in form with the subjunctive. The negative is **na**. Examples:—**gat** i mi vynet *allow me to go*; **na wiscet** dim ymdanei *let her not put anything on*; kyrchu tref arall a **wnawn** *let us make for another town*; **na rodher** *let there not be given*. The only idiom that calls for special notice is the following:—mi a rodaf vy iarllaeth yth uedyant a **thric** gyt a mi *I will give my earldom into thy possession, if thou wilt stay with me* (lit. *and stay with me*) RB. 278, 14.

### The Participle Passive in -edic.

**116.** Examples:—arueu y gwyr **lladedic** *the arms of the slain men*; ynteu **madeuedic yw** ganthaw y godyant ef *as for him, the injury done to him is forgiven by him* WB. 404; Gwawl . . . a doeth parth ar wled a **oed darparedic** idaw *Gwawl went to the feast that was prepared for him* RB. 14, 22.

### The Verbal in -adwy.

**117.** Examples:—nyt **barnadwy** yn volyant *it is not to be judged a praise* Hg. II. 83; nyt **kredadwy** *it is not to be believed* CM. 111; a chanys **credadwy** yw y anedigaeth **credadwy** y varwolyaeth *and since his birth is credible, his death is credible* CM. 21; midwyf bard **moladwy** *I am a poet worthy of praise* FB. 203; odit a uo **molediw** *few are worthy of praise* FB. 272; os da gennyt ti ac or byd **ragadwy** bod it *if thou approvest and if it is pleasing to thee* RB. II. 133; a **phrofadwy** yw ry golli ohonaf i vyn ngolwc *and it is clear that I have lost my sight* Hg. I. 83; vegys bilein **profadwy** *like a proved villain* Hg. II. 129.

### The Verbal Noun or Infinitive.

#### FORMATION.

**118.** The following are the chief types of formation of the verbal noun :—

(a) The prehistoric suffix has disappeared, so that the verbal noun is now identical in form with the stem of the verb. Examples:

|                                                            |                                                       |
|------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>ammeu</b> <i>doubt</i> : <b>amheu-af</b> <i>I doubt</i> | <b>galw</b> <i>call</i> : <b>galw-af</b>              |
| <b>cyvarch</b> <i>ask</i> : <b>cyvarch-af</b>              | <b>gellwng</b> <i>let go</i> : <b>gellyng-af</b>      |
| <b>dianc</b> <i>escape</i> : <b>diangh-af</b>              | <b>gwarandaw</b> <i>listen</i> : <b>gwaran-daw-af</b> |
| <b>diodef</b> <i>suffer</i> : <b>diodev-af</b>             | <b>llad</b> <i>slay</i> : <b>llad-af</b>              |

Further in some denominatives, e.g. **bwytta** *eating*: **bwytta-af**, **cardotta** *begging*, **lledratta** *stealing*, **pyscotta** *fishing*.

**119.** (b) The verbal noun still shows a suffix.

(a) **-i**, e.g.—

|                                                  |                                                   |
|--------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|
| <b>bod-i</b> <i>drown</i> : <b>bod-af</b>        | <b>mol-i</b> (O.W. <i>molim</i> ) <i>praise</i> : |
| <b>cyvod-i</b> <i>rise</i> : <b>cyvod-af</b>     | <b>mol-af</b>                                     |
| <b>erch-i</b> (O.W. <i>erchim</i> ) <i>ask</i> : | <b>per-i</b> <i>cause</i> : <b>par-af</b>         |
| <b>arch-af</b>                                   | <b>tew-i</b> <i>be silent</i> : <b>taw-af</b>     |
| <b>meneg-i</b> <i>shew</i> : <b>manag-af</b>     | <b>torr-i</b> <i>break</i> : <b>torr-af</b>       |

(β) **-u**, e.g.—

|                                               |                                              |
|-----------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|
| <b>can-u</b> <i>sing</i> : <b>can-af</b>      | <b>gwassanaeth-u</b> <i>minister</i> :       |
| <b>car-u</b> <i>love</i> : <b>car-af</b>      | <b>gwassanaeth-af</b>                        |
| <b>dysg-u</b> <i>teach</i> : <b>dysg-af</b>   | <b>mynn-u</b> <i>desire</i> : <b>mynn-af</b> |
| <b>gall-u</b> <i>be able</i> : <b>gall-af</b> | <b>pryn-u</b> <i>buy</i> : <b>pryn-af</b>    |

This is the common form of the verbal noun from denominatives in **-ha-**, e.g. **cennatta-u** *send message*: **cennatta-af**, **dynessa-u** *approach*: **dynessa-af**, **rydha-u** *free*: **rydha-af**.

(γ) **-aw**, e.g.—

|                                                 |                                                    |
|-------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------|
| <b>gwisg-aw</b> <i>clothe</i> : <b>gwisg-af</b> | <b>bedydy-aw</b> <i>baptize</i> : <b>bedydy-af</b> |
| <b>lliw-aw</b> <i>colour</i> : <b>lliw-af</b>   | <b>medyly-aw</b> <i>think</i> : <b>medyly-af</b>   |

(δ) -at, -et, -ut, e.g.—

adeil-at *build*: adeil-af

gorderch-at *make love*: gorderch-af

cerd-et *go*: cerd-af

yv-et *drink*: yv-af

gwel-et *see*: gwel-af

dywed-ut (also dywedwyt)  
*say*: dywed-af

ymchoel-ut *turn*; ymchoel-af

(ε) Various suffixes found only in a few verbs:—

cymryt *take*: cymmer-af

dilit *follow*: dilyn-af

dyffryt *protect*: differ-af

ymlit *pursue*: ymlyn-af

edvryd *restore*: adver-af

godiwes *overtake*: godiwed-af

goglyt *shun*: gogel-af

arhos *await*: arho-af

adolwyn *entreat*: adolyg-af

dwyn *lead*: dyg-af

amwyn *protect*: amyg-af

ehed-ec *fly*: ehed-af

red-ec *run*: red-af

ered-ic *plough*: ard-af

caffael, cael *get*: caff-af

gallel (by gallu) *be able*: gall-af

gadael (by gadu) *allow*:  
gad-af

sev-yll *stand*: sav-af

chwerthin *laugh*: chward-af

igian *sob*: igi-af

darllein *read*: darlle-af

llevain *cry*: llev-af

#### USAGE.

120. The infinitive, being merely a verbal noun, has all the constructions of a noun; it has, however, become so far attached to the verbal system that it forms a perfect by prefixing the particle **ry** (§ 96c). Examples:—

(a) nyt oed vynyct yt gaffel bud *it was not a common thing for you to get profit*; mynneu a ryuedeis gallu ohonaw ef mynet yn dirybud y mi *I wondered that he could go without informing me*; gwedy llad y gwyr hynny *after those men had been slain*; cyn awch mynet ymdeith atdeb a geffwch *before you depart* (lit. *before your*



going) *you shall get an answer*; heb y **uenegi** imi *without showing it to me*; y eu **gochel** *to avoid them*.

(b) gwedy clybot yn Rufein **ry oresgyn** o Garawn ynys Brydein *after it had been heard in Rome that Carawn had conquered the island of Britain*. Sef a wnaethant lldiaw yn vwy no meint am **ry wneuthur** ac wynt kyfryw dwyll a hwnnw *they were exceeding wroth that such treachery had been done to them* RB. II. 75.

121. The verbal noun has no distinction of voice. If it depends upon **gallu** *to be able* or **dylyu** *to owe*, then, if the sense be passive, **gallu** and **dylyu** are put in the passive, e.g. gwreic **y gellir dywedut** idi y bot yn deckaf or gwraged *a woman of whom it can be said that she is the fairest of women*; ni a atwaenwn y neb a **dylyer y kymryt** y gantaw *we know those that ought to be taken from him* RB. 16, 20.

122. The agent with the verbal noun is commonly expressed by the preposition **o** following the noun (cf. the corresponding Irish construction with *do*), e.g. gwedy **gorwed ohonaw ef** ar traws yr auon *after he had lain across the river*; gwedy **ry gyscu ohonaw** *after he had slept*; rac dy **lad ohonaw** *lest thou shouldst be slain by him*. It may also be expressed by the preposition **y**, e.g. **tygu llyein mawr udunt wynteu** y vot yn wir *they swore great oaths that it was true* Hg. II. 131; **kymryt ofyn mawr y Vradmwnd** *Bradmwnd became sore afraid* Hg. II. 133; gwedy **udunt oresgyn** yr holl wlat *after they had conquered the whole country* RB. II. 116; gwedy **y Amic gaffel kennyat** *after Amic had got permission* Rev. Celt. IV. 218; nyt oed neb o vilwyr y vort gronn heb **idaw eu bwrw** oll yr llawr *there was no one of the warriors of the Round Table that he had not thrown down* Hg. I. 9; yr **y pawb disgynnu** *though everyone else dismounted* RB. 105, 7. Or the verbal noun may be preceded by a possessive adjective, e.g. gwedy **eu dyuot** yr weirglawd *after they came to the meadow* Hg. I. 9.

123. The verbal noun is often used in periphrasis with **gwneuthur** *to do*, e.g. **dysgynnu** ar y pren a **wnant** *they will alight upon the tree*; ac yna **ymlad** a **wnaem** ninneu am y maen *and then we would fight for the stone*; a **cherdet** recdi yr coet a

**oruc** ý uorwyn *and the maiden went on to the wood*; **rodi** penn y karw a **wnaethpwy**t y Enid *the head of the stag was given to Enid*.

**124.** The verbal noun may carry on the construction of a finite verb, e.g. drýchauel ý wýneb a oruc ynteu ac **ýdrých** arnei yn llidiawc *he raised his face and looked on her angrily* WB. 419; kennatau ý mab a orucpwy, ae **dýuot** ynteu ýr llýs *and the boy was sent for and came to the court* WB. 454; ac a dywawt na wnaethpwyt oe bleit ef drwc yn y byt y Briaf, namyn **rodi** Esonia idaw ef o achaws y dewret *and he said that on his part no evil in the world had been done to Priam, but that Hesione had been given to him for his valour* RB. II. 5; pan **bebillo** Lloegir in tir Ethlin a **guneuthur** Dýganhuý dinas degin *when the English shall encamp in the land of Ethlin, and make Deganwy a strong fort* BB. 28<sup>a</sup>; pan gyfodes y bobyl a **chael** Lawnsloet megys yn uarw *when the people rose and found Launcelot like one dead* Hg. I. 155.

**125.** Without a preceding finite verb the verbal noun may serve as an historical infinitive, e.g. tra yttoed vilwyr Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, **rwygaw** o Gei y uagwyr a **chymryt** y carcharawr ar y geuyn *while Arthur's warriors were fighting with the city, Kei broke through the wall and took the prisoner on his back* RB. 131, 28; **deuy** yrof a Duw, heb ynteu. ae **dwyn** gyt ac ef yr uort oe hanuod, ac **erchi** idi vwyta yn uynych "*between God and me thou shalt come,*" *said he. And he took her to the table against her will and asked her repeatedly to eat* RB. 289; a gwedy disgynnu Arthur yr tir **dýuot** seint Iwerdon attaw y erchi nawd idaw *and after Arthur landed, the saints of Ireland came to him to ask his protection* RB. 136; **dýuot** (= **dýuot a oruc** RB. 126) ý porthawr ac **agori** ý porth *the porter came and opened the gate* WB. 487.

**126.** The verbal noun has special uses with certain prepositions.

(a) With **yn** the verbal noun has the force of a present participle (cf. the Irish construction with *oc*), e.g. val y gwelas y gwr...Peredur **yn dýuot** *as the man saw Peredur coming*; lleidyr...a geueis **yn lletratta** arnaf *a thief whom I caught stealing from me*. It is often used with the substantive verb to express continuing action; e.g. yr hynny hyt hediw **yd wyf i yn darparu** gwled ytti *from that time*

*till to-day I have been preparing a feast for thee* RB. 182; *canys ar y medwl hwnnw* **yd wyt** *titheu yn trigyaw* *since it is on this purpose that thou art fixed* RB. 253; *ual yd oed y sarff yn dyuot* *or garrec, y tharaw a oruc Owein a chledyf as the snake was coming from the rock, Owein struck it with a sword.* When the verbal noun precedes the verb **yn** may be added, but it is more commonly omitted, e.g. **yn eisted yd oedynt** *ar garrec Hardlech they were seated on the rock of Harlech* RB. 26, **yn adolwc y mae** *y ti arglwyd (=adolwyn itti arglwyd y mae Erbin* WB. p. 205) *ellwng Gereint y uab attaw he entertains thee, Lord, to let go his son Gereint to him* RB. 264; **dywedut** *yrydunt ehun y maent they are saying among themselves* WB. p. 211; **medylyaw yd wyf** *I am considering* RB. 75, 26 (but **yd wyf yn medylyaw** RB. 76, 22).

(b) With **gwedy** *after* the verbal noun has the force of a perfect participle (cf. the use of Irish *iar n-*), e.g. *y mae gwedy mynet gyd a Gwenhwývar y hýstavell he has gone with Gwenhwyvar to her chamber* WB. 408, *a phan yttoedynt gwedy gware talym, sef y klywynt kynnwryf mawr when they had played a while, they heard a great din* RB. 157; *a ffan welas y gwr...Gereint gwedy caffel dýrnawd and when the man saw that Gereint had received a blow* WB. 398; *Enýt a oed heb gýscu y mywn ýstauell wýdrin, ar heul yn týwynnu ar y gwely, ar dillad gwedy rý lithraw y ar y dwý uron ef Enid was sleepless in a chamber of glass, with the sun shining on the bed, while the clothes had slipped from his breast* WB. 416.

(c) With **can** *with* and **tan** *under* the verbal noun is used in sentences like the following: *Pascen...a gyffroes y bobyl honno... gan adaw* *udunt anheruynedic amylder o eur ac aryant Pascen stirred up that people, promising them an unlimited abundance of gold and silver* RB. II. 169; *tywyssawc Kernyw ae hymlynawd gan eu llad the prince of Cornwall followed them slaying them* RB. II. 191; *dyuot dracheuynt at Wenhwyuar dan gwynaw y dolur she came back to Gwenhwyuar bewailing her anguish* RB. 249; (*wynt*) *a gyrchasant parth a Ruuein dan anreithaw a wrthwynepei udunt they set out towards Rome, plundering all who resisted them* RB. II. 75.

## PARADIGM OF THE REGULAR VERB.

127. Types: **caru** *to love*, and the denominative **rydhaü** *to set free*. Forms in brackets are forms that have not been noted from a verb of the type.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

|       | sing.               | plur.          | sing.           | plur.            |
|-------|---------------------|----------------|-----------------|------------------|
| 1.    | <b>car-af</b>       | <b>car-wn</b>  | <b>rydha-af</b> | <b>rydha-wn</b>  |
| 2.    | <b>cer-i, cer-y</b> | <b>cer-wch</b> | <b>rydhe-y</b>  | <b>rydhe-wch</b> |
| 3.    | <b>car</b>          | <b>car-ant</b> | <b>rydha</b>    | <b>rydha-ant</b> |
| pass. | <b>cer-ir</b>       |                | <b>rydhe-ir</b> |                  |

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

|       |               |                 |                 |                     |
|-------|---------------|-----------------|-----------------|---------------------|
| 1.    | <b>car-wn</b> | <b>car-em</b>   | <b>rydha-wn</b> | ( <b>rydha-em</b> ) |
| 2.    | <b>car-ut</b> | <b>car-ewch</b> | <b>rydha-ut</b> | <b>ryda-ewch</b>    |
| 3.    | <b>car-ei</b> | <b>cer-ynt</b>  | <b>rydha-ei</b> | <b>rydhe-ynt</b>    |
| pass. | <b>cer-it</b> |                 | <b>rydhe-it</b> |                     |

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

|       |                 |                    |                   |                     |
|-------|-----------------|--------------------|-------------------|---------------------|
| 1.    | <b>cereis</b>   | <b>carass-am</b>   | <b>rydheeis</b>   | <b>rydhaass-am</b>  |
| 2.    | <b>cereis-t</b> | <b>carass-awch</b> | <b>rydheeis-t</b> | <b>rydhaas-awch</b> |
| 3.    | <b>caras</b>    | <b>carass-ant</b>  | <b>rydha-awd</b>  | <b>rydhaass-ant</b> |
| pass. | <b>carat</b>    |                    | <b>rydha-wyt</b>  |                     |

## PLUPERFECT.

|       |                  |                        |                        |                          |
|-------|------------------|------------------------|------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1.    | <b>carass-wn</b> | ( <b>carass-em</b> )   | ( <b>rydhaass-wn</b> ) | ( <b>rydhaass-em</b> )   |
| 2.    | <b>carass-ut</b> | ( <b>carass-ewch</b> ) | ( <b>rydhaass-ut</b> ) | ( <b>rydhaass-ewch</b> ) |
| 3.    | <b>carass-ei</b> | ( <b>carass-ynt</b> )  | <b>rydhaass-ei</b>     | <b>rydhaess-ynt</b>      |
| pass. | <b>carass-it</b> |                        | ( <b>rydhaass-it</b> ) |                          |

## IMPERATIVE.

|       |                  |                |                 |                      |
|-------|------------------|----------------|-----------------|----------------------|
| 1.    |                  | <b>car-wn</b>  |                 | ( <b>rydha-wn</b> )  |
| 2.    | <b>car</b>       | <b>cer-wch</b> | <b>rydha</b>    | <b>rydhe-wch</b>     |
| 3.    | <b>car-et</b>    | <b>car-ent</b> | <b>rydha-et</b> | ( <b>rydha-ent</b> ) |
| pass. | <b>car(h)-er</b> |                | <b>rydha-er</b> |                      |

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

|       |            |             |           |             |
|-------|------------|-------------|-----------|-------------|
| 1.    | car(h)-wyf | car(h)-om   | rydha-wyf | rydha-om    |
|       | car(h)-oef |             |           |             |
| 2.    | cer(h)-ych | car(h)-och  | rydhe-ych | (rydha-och) |
| 3.    | car(h)-wy  | car(h)-wynt |           |             |
|       | car(h)-oe  | car(h)-oent |           |             |
|       | car(h)-o   | car(h)-ont  | rydha-o   | rydha-wynt  |
|       |            |             |           | rydha-ont   |
| pass. | car(h)-er  |             | rydha-er  |             |

## PAST.

|       |           |             |          |            |
|-------|-----------|-------------|----------|------------|
| 1.    | car(h)-wn | car(h)-em   | rydha-wn | (rydha-em) |
| 2.    | car(h)-ut | car(h)-ewch | rydha-ut | rydha-ewch |
| 3.    | car(h)-ei | cer(h)-ynt  | rydha-ei | rydhe-ynt  |
| pass. | cer(h)-it |             | rydhe-it |            |

## REMARKS ON THE VERBAL PARADIGM.

## Present and Future Indicative.

128. (a) sg. 3. Many verbs show vowel infection (§ 5), e.g. *eirch* : *arch-af* *I ask*, *ceidw* : *cadw-af* *I preserve*, *ceiff* : *caff-af* *I get*, *geilw* : *galw-af* *I call*, *lleinw* : *llanw-af* *I fill*, *peir* : *par-af* *I cause*, *peirch* : *parch-af* *I honour*, *seif* : *sav-af* *I stand*, *teifl* : *tafl-af* *I cast*, *etteil* : *attal-af* *I stop*, *gweheird* : *gwa-hard-af* *I forbid*, *lleveir* : *llavar-af* *I speak*, *edeu*, *edy* : *adaw-af* *I leave*, *edeu* : *adaw-af* *I promise*, *gwerendeu*, *gwerendy* : *gwarandaw-af* *I listen*, *teu* : *taw-af* *I am silent*, *tereu*, *tery* : *traw-af* *I strike*, *gwyl* : *gwel-af* *I see*, *gweryt* : *gwared-af* *I help*, *cyll* : *coll-af* *I destroy*, *dyt* : *dod-af* *I put*, *llysg* : *llosg-af* *I burn*, *hyllt* : *hollt-af* *I split*, *ryd* : *rod-af* *I give*, *tyrr* : *torr-af* *I break*, *egyr* : *agor-af* *I open*, *envyn* : *anvon-af* *I send*, *ervyll* : *arvoll-af* *I receive*, *erhys* : *arhos-af* *I await*, *deffry* : *deffro-af* *I arouse*, *ffy* : *ffo-af* *I flee*, *try* : *tro-af* *I turn*. It should be noted that, except in the 3 sg. of the present,

no vowel but **a** is subject to infection in the verb, e.g. 2 pl. **gwel-wch**, **rod-wch**, **ffo-wch** (cf. § 7 note 1).

NOTE.—Irregular are: **menyc**: **manag-af** *I shew*; **dyweit**: **dywed-af** *I say*.

(b) From the denominatives in **-hau**, **-a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **cerda**: **cerdet** *to go*, **teruyna**: **tervynu** *to end*. Further, it is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **gnotta**: **gnotta-af** *I am wont*. Form **-áa** comes by contraction in Mod.W. **-á**.

129. In the older language some other forms appear.

sg. 1. By **-af**, **-if** is sometimes found, e.g. **gwneif** *I will make* FB. 62, **cenif** *I will sing* MA. 140<sup>a</sup>, **gweinif** *I will serve* 142<sup>a</sup>, **cerif** *I will love* 147<sup>b</sup>.

sg. 2. In this person there is also an ending **-yd** (i.e. **yđ**, cf. Bret. **-ez**, Corn. **-yth**), e.g. **ceryd** *thou lovest*, **gwesceryd** *thou scatterest*, **dywedyd** *thou sayest*, **nodyd** *thou protectest*, **clwyd** *thou hearest*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1873, pp. 143 sq.

sg. 3. In O. Irish there are two forms of the ending, a longer which is found only in simple verbs, and a shorter which is used in compound verbs, and also in simple verbs when a negative or certain other particles precede, e.g. **berid** (from \***bhereti**) *he carries*, but **ní beir** (from \***bheret**) *he does not carry*, **do-beir** *he gives*. In Early Welsh there are traces of a similar distinction of ending, e.g. **pereid y rycheu**. **ny phara ae goreu** *the trenches remain, he who made them remains not* FB. 289; and in the proverb: **trengid golud, ní threing molud** *wealth perishes, fame perishes not*. Further examples of the ending are: **prinit** *buys*, **agit, egit** *goes* (= Mid.W. **eyt** FB. 304) in the O.W. glosses; **llicrid**: **llygru** *destroy*, **reuhid**: **rewi** *freeze*, **ottid**: **odi** *snow*, **gosgupid** *sweeps*, **tohid**: **toi** *cover* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>, **meccid**: **magu** *nourish* BB. 45<sup>b</sup>, **briuhid**: **briaw** *break* BB. 46<sup>a</sup>, cf. further Arch. Cambr. 1872, pp. 303 sq., 1873, pp. 145 sq. It will be seen that the **h** which appears in the old future (§ 130), and in the subjunctive has also made its way into these presents. In usage Mid.W. agrees with O.Ir. in that the longer ending is not found when the verb is preceded by a negative, it differs from O.Ir. in that the longer ending has spread to compound verbs. In early poetry there seem to be instances of a corresponding present in **-awt** (which would originally belong to **ā**-stems, cf. O.Bret. **-ot** in **fleriot** gl. **ridolet**, O.Ir. **caraid**, from \***carāti**, *loves*, Lat. **amat**); **barywhaud** *grows a beard*, **gvyrhaud** *bends* IB. 45<sup>a</sup>, **llewychawt** *shines* FB. 117, **gwisgawt** *clothes* FB. 307.

pl. 3. In the O.W. glosses by the ending **-ant** in **itercludant** gl. **subigant** there appears also **-int** in **limnint** gl. **tondent**, **nertheint** gl. **armant**, **scamnehint** gl. **levant**. This ending seems to survive in Mid.W. poetry, e.g. **diurýssint** *hasten* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>, 54<sup>b</sup> (cf. **pan vryssyant** FB. 257), **dywedint** *will say* FB. 223, **torrynt** *will break* FB. 229. It seems probable that this served as a primary ending, but the matter demands further investigation.

Passive.—In the passive there is found in poetry and occasionally in proverbs a variety of forms in **-tor**, e.g. **megittor** *will be nourished* BB. 31<sup>b</sup>, **kenhittor** *will be sung* BB. 26<sup>b</sup>, **kwynitor** *is lamented* FB. 280; **kymysgetor** *is mixed* FB. 181, **kyrbwylletor** *will be mentioned* FB. 200;

*traethattor* will be discoursed FB. 137, *canhator* is sung FB. 209 : *brithottor* is variegated BB. 17<sup>a</sup>. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1872 pp. 305 sq., Dottin, *Désinences verbales en R*, 177 sq. These forms, which are clearly based on the longer form of the 3 sg. act., are especially common in the poetry of the twelfth century. Their syntactical function is present or future.

130. In Early Welsh there are also some specially future forms :

sg. 3 (a) *-hawt* (i.e. *-hawd*), e.g. *parahaud* will continue BB. 50<sup>b</sup>, *briuhau* will break BB. 29<sup>b</sup>, *methawd* will fail WB. 457, *lletawt* will spread FB. 236, *llwyprawd* (: *llwybraw*) will travel MA 232<sup>b</sup>. Cf. CZ. III. 402.

(b) After a negative, *-haw* : *ny chaffaw* will not get BR. 4<sup>b</sup>, *nys gwnaw* will not make FB. 126 ; but also a *wnaw* who will make FB. 150.

Pl. 3. *-hawnt*, e.g. O.W. *cuinhaunt* gl. *deflebunt*, *gwnahawnt* will make FB. 124, *pebyllyawnt* will encamp FB. 212.

Pass. *-hawr*, e.g. *agorawr* will be opened WB. 456, *ffohawr* there will be flight FB. 126, *talhaur* will be paid BB. 16<sup>a</sup>, *nyn lladawr* we shall not be killed WB. 475, *edmycca* will be honoured BB. 29<sup>b</sup>. Cf. Dottin, *op. cit.*, 169 sq., CZ. III. 403.

NOTE.—There also occur forms of the type of *-ettor*, *-attor* above, e.g. *torredawd* will break FB. 236, *llettatawt* will spread FB. 129, *dýgettaur* will be led BB. 13<sup>a</sup>, *llosetawr* will be burned FB. 119, *galwetawr* will be called FB. 165.

### Imperfect Indicative and Conditional.

131. sg. 3. (a) In poetry there is also an ending *-i*, infecting a preceding *a*, e.g. *ceri* loved, *nodi* protected, *torri* broke, *clywi* heard. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1874, p. 117, Cymmrod. IX. 54, Rev. Celt. VI. 16.

(b) There is also an ending *-at* (i.e. *-ad*) ; see the irregular verbs *gwybot* (§ 143), *adnabot* (§ 144), *pieu* (§ 160), and the verb *bot* (§ 152). So in the plup. *ry dywedysyat* had said MA. 485<sup>b</sup>.

pl. 3. In this person there is an ending *-eint* :—*achubeint* WB. 466 = pass. *achubit* RB. 110, 28, *caneint* LA. 95 = *cenynt* Hg. II. 447, *deueint*, *syrthyeint* LA. 97, *traweint* Hg. II. 184, *llauuryeint* ib. 213 ; cf. the subjunctive ket *yvein* though they drank FB. 66, *wyntwy yn llad gyt as ledeint* they slaying though they slew them FB. 276 = a *chin ri llethid ve latýsseint* and before they were slain they had slain FB. 38, cf. Cymmrod. IX. 67. This *-eint* is an analogical formation to sg. 3 *-ei*.

NOTE.—More peculiar is *ný lesseint* BB. 32<sup>a</sup> which seems to mean *they were not slain* (cf. *yt lesseint* FB. 285, *lleseint* MA. 194<sup>a</sup>), apparently based on *llas* was slain ; cf. further *meithyeint* was reared? *lledeseint* were slain? *colledeint* were destroyed? FB. 264, MA. 94<sup>b</sup>.

## Preterite and Perfect Indicative Active.

**132. sg. 3.** In this person there is a variety of endings.

(a) **-as**, e.g. **bradas** *betrayed*, **caffas** *got*, **gwelas** *saw*.

(b) **-es**, e.g. **agores** *opened*, **dodes** *put*, **gweles** *saw*.

(c) **-is**, e.g. **erchis** *asked*, **edewis** *left*, **gelwis** *called*.

(d) **-wys**, becoming **-ws**, e.g. **bendigwys** and **bendigws** *blessed*, **cyscwys** and **cyscws** *slept*. In the southern dialect **-ws** became the characteristic ending in this person.

(e) **-awd** (i.e. **awđ**), e.g. **parawd** *caused*, **cerdawd** *journeyed*, **parhaawd** *continued*. This is an encroaching ending, whence comes the Mod. literary Welsh ending **-ođ**.

NOTE.—In early poetry there is an absolute ending **-sit** (corresponding to the present ending **-it** (§ 129), e.g. **kewssit** *got*, **prynessid** *bought*, **delyessid** (: **dala**) *held*. Cf. *Arch. Cambr.* 1873, pp. 151 sq. It corresponds to the O. Bret. ending in **tinsit** gl. *sparsit*, **toreusit** gl. *attriuit*.

**1 pl., 3 pl.** In these persons by **-sam**, **-sant**, there appear also **-som**, **-sont**.

**Plur.**—In the plural there are three types of formation, (a) **-sam**, etc., (b) **-assam**, etc., (c) **-yssam**, etc., e.g.—

(a) **cawsam**, **cawsawch**, **cawsant** : **caffael** *get*, **kymersam**, **kymersant** : **cymryt** *take*, **gwelsam**, **gwelsant** : **gwelet** *see*.

(b) **dywedassam** : **dywedut** *say*, **lladassant** : **llad** *slay*, **nessaassant** : **nessaü** *approach*.

(c) **dodyssam**, **dodyssant** : **dodi** *place*, **kwplayssam** : **kwplaiü** *complete*, **nessayassant** : **nessaü** *approach*.

**133.** In Mid.W., as in Mid.Ir., the **s**-preterite has become the prevalent formation, in which the other types of the preterite tend to merge. But particularly in poetry, and especially in the 3 sg., there are examples of two other types of the preterite.

(a) The **t**-preterite (corresponding to the Irish **t**-preterite, e.g. **asbert** *he said* : **asbeir** *says*).

**canu** *sing* : sg. 1 **ceint** and **ceintum**, sg. 2 **ceuntost**, sg. 3 **cant**.

**gwan** *pierce* : sg. 1 **gweint**, sg. 3 **gwant**.

**cymryt** *take* : sg. 3 **kymerth**, **kymyrth**.

**diffryt** *protect* : sg. 3 **differth**, **diffyrth**.



**mynet** *go*: **aeth** (= Ir. *acht*) *went* (§ 140); in composition **doeth** (§ 141), and sg. 1 **ymdeith** *went about*, sg. 3 **ymdaeth**.

**gwneuthur** *make*: **gwnaeth** (§ 142).

**magu** *nourish*: sg. 3 **maeth**, pl. 3 **maethant**.

**dyrreith** *returned* (√reg-).

**amwyn** *protect*: sg. 3 **amwyth**.

**dydwyn** *bring*: sg. 3 **dydwyth**.

(b) Forms with reduplication, or unreduplicated forms of the type of O.Ir. **rāith** *ran*: **rethid** *runs*.

**clybot** *hear*: sg. 1 **kigleu** (= Ir. *cūala* from \**cuklova*) and **kiglef**, sg. 3 **kigleu**.

**adnabot** *recognize*: **atwaen** (§ 144).

**dywedut** *say*: sg. 3 **dywawt**, also **dywot**, **dywat** (cf. Ir. *adcuaid* *has related* from \**ad-co-fāith*).

**godiwes** *overtake*: sg. 3 **godiwawd**.

**gwaret** *help*: sg. 3 **gwarawt** (= Ir. *fo-rāith* *helped*).

The same form of inflexion is exhibited by:—

**amwyn** *defend*: sg. 3 **amuc**.

**dwyn** *lead*: sg. 1 **dugum**, sg. 2 **dugost**, sg. 3 **duc**, pl. 1 **dugam**, pl. 3 **dugant**.

**gwneuthur** *make*: **goruc** (§ 142).

Here seems to belong also **amkawd** *said*, pl. 3 **amkeudant**, frequent in the WB. text of Kulhwch and Olwen.

### Preterite and Perfect Indicative Passive.

**134.** In origin the Welsh like the Irish preterite passive developed out of a past participle passive in **-to-**, identical in formation with Latin participles like *captus*, *amatus*, etc.

(a) In **llas** (= Ir. *-lass*): **llad** *slay* and **gwys** (= Ir. *-fess*): **gwybot** *know*, the **t** of the suffix together with the dental of the root has become **ss**, **s** (§ 11a; cf. Lat. *missus*: *mitto*, etc.).

(b) **-at**, e.g. **gwelat**: **gwelet** *see*, **caffat**: **caffael** *get*.

(c) **-et**, e.g. **dodet**: **dodi** *place*, **llosged**: **llosgi** *burn*.

(d) **-it**, e.g. **edewit**: **adaw** *promise*, **erchit**: **erchi** *ask*, **gelwit**: **galw** *call*.

(e) **-wyt**, liable to become **-wt**, e.g. **cymerwyt**: **cymryt** *take*, **hewyt**; **heü** *sow*, **lladwyt**: **llad** *slay*, **kennatawyt**: **kennataü** *send*.

(f) Forms in **-pwyt**, e.g. **dywespwyt** and **dywetpwyt**: **dywedut** *say*, **clywspwyt**, **clywspwyt**: **clybot** *hear*, **dechreuspwy**: **dechreu** *begin*, **roespwy**: **roi** *give*, **kanpwyt**: **canu** *sing*, **gwanpwyt**: **gwanu** *pierce*, **ducpwyt**: **dwyn** *lead*, **maethpwyt**: **magu** *nourish*, **gwassanaethpwyt**: **gwassanaethu** *serve*, **talpwyt**: **tal** *pay*. Cf. Cymmrod. IX. 75 sq.

### Pluperfect Indicative.

135. Corresponding to the three types in the plural of the preterite active, there are in the pluperfect three types (a) **-swn**, (b) **-asswn**, (c) **-ysswn**, e.g. :—

(a) **cawssei**: **caffael** *get*, **gwelsei**, **gwelsynt**, pass. **gwelsit**: **gwelet** *see*, **edewssit**: **adaw** *leave*.

(b) **mynasswn**: **mynessynt**, pass. **mynassit**: **mynnu** *desire*, **cysgassei**: **cysgu** *sleep*, **lladassant**, pass. **lladessit**: **llad** *slay*, **gnottaessynt**: **gnottaü** *be accustomed*.

(c) **archyssei**, pass. **erchyssit**, **archyssit**: **erchi** *ask*, **managyssei**: **menegi** *shew*, **lladyssit**: **llad** *slay*, **mynnessynt**: **mynnu** *demand*, **gnottayssei**: **gnottaü** *be accustomed*.

136. (a) In the active there is a periphrastic pluperfect with **-oed** *was* in **athoed** (§ 140), **doethoed** (§ 141), **gwnaethoed** (§ 142). Forms in **-oed** occur also from **caffael** *get*, e.g., sg. 1 **cawssoe-dwn**, sg. 2 **cawssoe-dut**, sg. 3 **cawssoe-d**, **cassoed**, **cawssoe-dyat**, pl. 3 **cassoedynt**, pass. **cassoedit**; further **mynnassoed**: **mynnu**; **planasoed**; **rodassoed**, **roessoed**; **rassoed**, pass. **rossoedit**: **rodi**. Cf. Cymmrod. IX. 76 sq.

(b) In the passive there are some periphrastic forms with **-oed**:—sg. 3 **archadoed** *had been asked*: **erchi** *ask*, **dysgadoed**: **dysgu** *teach*, **ganadoed**, **ganydoed**: **geni** *be born*, **managadoed**: **menegi** *shew*; further **cathoed**: **caffael** *get*. Cf. Cymmrod. IX. 77.

## Imperative.

**137. sg. 2.** From denominatives in **-haü a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **prydera : pryderu** *be anxious*, **paratoa : paratoï** *prepare*. Further **a** is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **cwplaa : cwplaü** *complete*, **naccaä : naccaü** *refuse*. From **-ää** comes Mod.W. **-ä**.

**sg. 3.** There appears sometimes an ending **-it**, e.g. **bernit** (v.l. **barned**) : **barnu** *judge* MA. 182<sup>b</sup>, **elhid : mynet** *go* WB. 31<sup>a</sup>, **gobwyllit : gobwyllaw** *take heed* FB. 199, **gwrthledit : gwrthlad** *repulse* LA. 26, **gwrthottit : gwrthot** *repel* FB. 125, **rwydheyt : rwydhaü** *make easy* RB. 228, **madeuit : maddeu** *forgive* Hg. II. 185, **rothit : rodi** *give* BB. 47<sup>a</sup>. It will be observed that these forms shew the subjunctive stem.

## Present Subjunctive.

**138.** In the 3 sg. and 3 pl. the **o** forms become the regular forms in Mid.W. Sometimes **o** spreads to the 1 sg., e.g. **gwysgof** WB. 97. In the pass. an **wy** form appears in **rothiwy** FB. 109.

NOTE.—For **duch** *may he lead*, **gwares** *may he help*, see § 110, note 2.

## Past Subjunctive.

**139.** In the passive by **-it** there is found sometimes **-et** : **cladhet** WB. 469 = **cledit** RB. 112 : **cladu** *bury*, **gofynnet** WB. p. 220 = **gouynnit** RB. 286 : **govynnu** *ask*, **llafassed : llavassu** *dare* BB. 27<sup>a</sup>.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

**140. mynet** *go*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

| sing.            | plur.       |
|------------------|-------------|
| 1. <b>af</b>     | <b>awn</b>  |
| 2. <b>ey</b>     | <b>ewch</b> |
| 3. <b>a</b>      | <b>ant</b>  |
| pass. <b>eir</b> |             |

NOTE 1.—sg. 3 absolute O.W. **agit**, **egit**, Mid.W. **eyt**.

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

|       | sing.      | plur.       |
|-------|------------|-------------|
| 1.    | <b>awn</b> | <b>aem</b>  |
| 2.    | <b>aut</b> |             |
| 3.    | <b>aey</b> | <b>eynt</b> |
| pass. | <b>eit</b> |             |

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

|        |                 |                         |
|--------|-----------------|-------------------------|
| (a) 1. | <b>euthum</b>   | <b>aetham</b>           |
| 2.     | <b>aethost</b>  | <b>aethawch</b>         |
| 3.     | <b>aeth</b>     | <b>aethant, aethont</b> |
| pass.  | <b>aethpwyt</b> |                         |

NOTE 2.—sg. 3 absolute **eithyd** FB. 179, 188.

|        |                                     |                      |
|--------|-------------------------------------|----------------------|
| (b) 1. | <b>athwyf, adwyf, ethwyf, ethym</b> |                      |
|        | <b>edwyf</b>                        |                      |
| 2.     | <b>athwyt, adwyt</b>                |                      |
| 3.     | <b>ethyw, edyw</b>                  | <b>ethynt, edynt</b> |

NOTE 3.—Forms (b) have a perfect sense, cf. § 141, note 4.

## PLUPERFECT.

|    |                      |                  |
|----|----------------------|------------------|
| 1. | <b>athoedwn</b>      |                  |
| 2. |                      |                  |
| 3. | <b>athoed, adoed</b> | <b>athoedynt</b> |

## IMPERATIVE.

|    |            |             |
|----|------------|-------------|
| 1. |            | <b>awn</b>  |
| 2. | <b>dos</b> | <b>ewch</b> |
| 3. | <b>aet</b> | <b>aent</b> |

NOTE 4.—sg. 3 also **elhid** (§ 137).

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

|       |                 |                            |
|-------|-----------------|----------------------------|
| 1.    | <b>el(h)wyf</b> | <b>el(h)om</b>             |
| 2.    | <b>el(h)ych</b> | <b>el(h)och</b>            |
| 3.    | <b>el</b>       | <b>el(h)wynt, el(h)ont</b> |
| pass. | <b>el(h)er</b>  |                            |

NOTE 5.—Also, in future sense, sg. 3 **aho** RB. 140, 16, pl. 3 **ahont** FB. 128.

|       | sing.     | PAST.    | plur. |
|-------|-----------|----------|-------|
| 1.    | el(h)wn   |          |       |
| 2.    | el(h)ut   |          |       |
| 3.    | el(h)ei   | el(h)ynt |       |
| pass. | (el(h)it) |          |       |

141. **dyvot** *come*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

|    |           |               |
|----|-----------|---------------|
| 1. | deuaf     | deuwn, down   |
| 2. | deuy, doy | deuwch        |
| 3. | daw       | deuant, doant |

NOTE 1.—sg. 2 **doit** (i.e. **doyd**) BB. 51<sup>b</sup>l.

NOTE 2.—In poetry there is also another set of forms in a future sense:

|    |                          |          |
|----|--------------------------|----------|
| 1  | dybydaf                  |          |
|    | { dybyd, dyvyd, dybydawt | dybydant |
| 3. | { deubyd                 |          |
|    | { dypi, dybi, dyvi       |          |
|    | { deupi, deubi           |          |

NOTE 3.—Preceded by **dy-**: sg. 3 **dydaw**, pl. 3 **dydeuant**, pass. **dydeuhawr**.

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

|       |                      |       |
|-------|----------------------|-------|
| 1.    | down                 |       |
| 2.    | dout, deuyt          |       |
| 3.    | deuei, deuhei, doey, | doynt |
|       | doi                  |       |
| pass. | deuit                |       |

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

|        |                      |                     |
|--------|----------------------|---------------------|
| (a) 1. | deuthum, doethum     | doetham             |
| 2.     | deuthost, doethost,  | doethawch, doethoch |
|        | daethost             |                     |
| 3.     | doeth, deuth, daeth  | deuthant, doethant, |
|        |                      | dothant, doethont   |
| pass.  | deuthpwyt, doethpwyt |                     |

|        | sing.                            | plur.              |
|--------|----------------------------------|--------------------|
| (b) 1. |                                  |                    |
| 2.     | dyvuost                          |                    |
| 3.     | dybu, dyvu, deubu                | dybuant, dyvuant   |
| (c) 1. | dothwyf, dodwyf                  | dodym, deuthym     |
| 2.     | dothwyt, dodwyt                  | dodywch, doethywch |
| 3.     | doethyw, dothyw,<br>dodyw, dedyw | dodynt, dethynt    |

NOTE 4.—Forms (b) are chiefly poetical, but **dyvuost**, **dyvu**, **dyvuant** occur in the prose of WB. Forms (c) are perfect in sense; in later Mid. W. they are replaced by forms (a), e.g. **deuth** RB. 126, 9=**dodýw** WB. 486, **deuthum** RB. 105, 21=**dothwýf** WB. 459, **doeth** RB. 115, 25, **deuth** RB. 126, 9,=**dodýw** WB. 473, 486.

## PLUPERFECT.

|    |                                         |                         |
|----|-----------------------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. | dathoedywn                              |                         |
| 2. |                                         |                         |
| 3. | doethoed, daethoed,<br>dathoed, dothoed | doethoedynt, dothoedynt |

## IMPERATIVE.

|    |              |               |
|----|--------------|---------------|
| 1. |              | down          |
| 2. | dyret, dabre | dowch         |
| 3. | deuet, doet  | deuent, doent |

NOTE 5.—There is also a 3 sg. **deuit** Hg. II. 51, and **delit** Hg. I. 4, 307.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

|       |           |                       |
|-------|-----------|-----------------------|
| 1.    | del(h)wyf | del(h)om              |
| 2.    | del(h)ych | del(h)och             |
| 3.    | del       | del(h)wynt, del(h)ont |
| pass. | del(h)er  |                       |

NOTE 6.—There are also forms sg. 1 **dybwyf**, sg. 3 **dyppo**, **dyffo**, **dyvo**, **deupo**, **dideuho**, pl. 3 **dyffont**, pass. **dyffer**.

## PAST.

|    |          |            |
|----|----------|------------|
| 1. | del(h)wn |            |
| 2. | del(h)ut | del(h)ewch |
| 3. | del(h)ei | del(h)ynt  |

NOTE 7.—There is also 3 sg. **dybei** and **dyffei**.

142. *gwneuthur* to make.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

|       | sing.         | plur.          |
|-------|---------------|----------------|
| 1.    | <b>gwnaf</b>  | <b>gwnawn</b>  |
| 2.    | <b>gwney</b>  | <b>gwnewch</b> |
| 3.    | <b>gwna</b>   | <b>gwnant</b>  |
| pass. | <b>gwneir</b> |                |

NOTE 1.—Fut. sg. 3 *gunahaud* BB. 27<sup>b</sup>, *gwnawt* FB. 224, *gwnaw* FB. 126, 150, pl. 3 *gwnahawnt* FB. 124.

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

|       |               |                 |
|-------|---------------|-----------------|
| 1.    | <b>gwnawn</b> | <b>gwnaem</b>   |
| 2.    | <b>gwnaut</b> | <b>gwnaewch</b> |
| 3.    | <b>gwnaei</b> | <b>gwnaent</b>  |
| pass. | <b>gwneit</b> | .               |

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

|        |                         |                               |
|--------|-------------------------|-------------------------------|
| (a) 1. | <b>gorugum</b>          | <b>gorugam</b>                |
| 2.     | <b>gorugost</b>         |                               |
| 3.     | <b>goruc</b>            | <b>gorugant</b>               |
| pass.  | <b>gorucpwyf</b>        |                               |
| (b) 1. | <b>gwneuthum</b>        | <b>gwnaetham, gwnaethom</b>   |
| 2.     | <b>gwnaethost</b>       | <b>gwnaethawch</b>            |
| 3.     | <b>gwnaeth, gwneuth</b> | <b>gwnaethant, gwnaethont</b> |
| pass.  | <b>gwnaethpwyf</b>      |                               |

NOTE 2.—In poetry there is also sg. 3 *goreu*, cf. Mid.Bret. *guereu*.

NOTE 3.—The *gwnaeth* forms encroach at the expense of the *goruc* forms, e.g. *gorucpwyf* WB. 452, 477, 487 = *gwnaethpwyf* RB. 100, 118, 127.

## PLUPERFECT.

|       |                            |                     |
|-------|----------------------------|---------------------|
| 1.    | <b>gwnathodwn</b>          |                     |
| 2.    | <b>gwnaethodut</b>         |                     |
| 3.    | <b>gwnaethoed, gwnath-</b> | <b>gwnathoedynt</b> |
|       | <b>oed, gwnadoed</b>       |                     |
| pass. | <b>gwnathoedit</b>         |                     |

|       |            | IMPERATIVE. |
|-------|------------|-------------|
|       | sing.      | plur.       |
| 1.    |            | gwnawn      |
| 2.    | gwna       | gwnewch     |
| 3.    | gwnaet     | gwnaent     |
| pass. | gwnel(h)er |             |

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

|       |             |                                |
|-------|-------------|--------------------------------|
| 1.    | gwnel(h)wyf |                                |
| 2.    | gwnel(h)ych | gwnel(h)och                    |
| 3.    | gwnel       | gwnel(h)wynt, gwnel(h)-<br>ont |
| pass. | gwnel(h)er  |                                |

NOTE 4.—sg. 3 also *gunelwŷ* BB. 24<sup>a</sup>, *gunaho* BB. 35<sup>b</sup>, *gwnaho* FB. 119, 235, pl. 3 *gvnahont* BB. 31<sup>a</sup>, *gwnahon* FB. 155. With fut. ending *gwnelawr* FB. 213.

## PAST.

|       |            |             |
|-------|------------|-------------|
| 1.    | gwnel(h)wn |             |
| 2.    | gwnel(h)ut |             |
| 4.    | gwnel(h)ei | gwnel(h)ynt |
| pass. | gwnel(h)it |             |

143. *gwybot* *know*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

|       |                 |                              |
|-------|-----------------|------------------------------|
| 1.    | gwnn            | gwdam, gwdom                 |
| 2.    | gwydost, gwdost | gwydawch, gwdawch,<br>gwdoch |
| 3.    | gwyr            | gwydant, gwdant              |
| pass. | gwys            |                              |

## IMPERFECT.

|       |                 |                 |
|-------|-----------------|-----------------|
| 1.    | gwydwn, gwydywn | gwydem, gwydyem |
| 2.    | gwydut, gwydyut |                 |
| 3.    | gwydat, gwydyat | gwydynt         |
| pass. | gwydit          |                 |



## ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

|       | sing.    | plur.     |
|-------|----------|-----------|
| 1.    | gwybydaf |           |
| 2.    | gwybydy  | gwybydwch |
| 3.    | gwybyd   | gwybydant |
| pass. | gwybydir |           |

NOTE 1.—In poetry there is also 3 sg. **gwybi**.

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

|       |          |           |
|-------|----------|-----------|
| 1.    |          | gwybydem  |
| 2.    | gwybydut | gwybydwch |
| 3.    | gwybydei |           |
| pass. | gwybydit |           |

NOTE 2.—This comes to be used for the past subjunctive, e.g. *Bei ath wybydem if we had known thee* FB. 122.

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

|       |          |          |
|-------|----------|----------|
| 1.    | gwybuum  |          |
| 2.    | gwybuost |          |
| 3.    | gwybu    | gwybuant |
| pass. | gwybuwyt |          |

## PLUPERFECT.

|       |            |
|-------|------------|
| 3.    | gwybuyssyt |
| pass. | gwybuassit |

## IMPERATIVE.

|       |                  |           |
|-------|------------------|-----------|
| 1.    |                  | gwybydwn  |
| 2.    | gwybyd           | gwybydwch |
| 3.    | gwybydet, gwypet | gwybydent |
| pass. | gwybyder         |           |

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

|       |               |                   |
|-------|---------------|-------------------|
| 1.    | gwypwyf       | gwypom            |
| 2.    | gwypych       | gwypoch           |
| 3.    | gwypwy, gwypo | gwypwynt, gwypont |
| pass. | gwyper        |                   |

|    | sing.  | PAST.   | plur. |
|----|--------|---------|-------|
| 1. | gwypwn |         |       |
| 2. | gwyput |         |       |
| 3. | gwypei | gwypynt |       |

144. *adnabot* *recognize.*

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

|    |                      |                                   |
|----|----------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. | adwaen, adwen, atwen | atwaenwn                          |
| 2. | atwaenost            | etweynwch, atweynwch,<br>etwenwch |
| 9. | edwyn, atwen         | atwaenant                         |

## IMPERFECT.

|       |                     |           |
|-------|---------------------|-----------|
| 1.    | atwaenwn            | adwaenam  |
| 2.    | atwaenut            |           |
| 3.    | atwaenat, atwaeniat | atwaenynt |
| pass. | etweinit            |           |

## ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

|       |                      |            |
|-------|----------------------|------------|
| 1.    | adnabydaf, etnebydaf | adnabydwn  |
| 2.    | adnabydy             |            |
| 3.    | adnebyd, ednebyd     | adnabydant |
| pass. | adnabydir            |            |

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

|    |           |
|----|-----------|
| 1. | adnabydem |
| 2. |           |
| 3. | adnebydei |

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

|    |          |           |
|----|----------|-----------|
| 1. | adnabuum | adnabuam  |
| 2. |          |           |
| 3. | adnabu   | adnabuant |

|    | IMPERATIVE.             |                   |
|----|-------------------------|-------------------|
|    | sing.                   | plur.             |
| 1. |                         |                   |
| 2. | <b>adnebyd, adnebyd</b> | <b>adnebydwch</b> |
| 3. |                         |                   |

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

|       |                             |
|-------|-----------------------------|
| 1.    | <b>adnapom</b>              |
| 2.    | <b>adnepych</b>             |
| 3.    | <b>adnapo</b>               |
| pass. | <b>adnapoent, adnappont</b> |
|       | <b>adnaper</b>              |

## PAST.

|       |                |
|-------|----------------|
| 1.    |                |
| 2.    |                |
| 3.    | <b>adnapei</b> |
| pass. | <b>adnepit</b> |

145. **caffael, caffel, cahel, cael** *get.*

## INDICATIVE.

Pres. and Fut. :—**caffaf, ceffy, ceiff**, etc.; also **caf, cehy, cey**, etc.

Imperf. and Cond. :—**caffwn**, etc., also **cawn**, etc.

Pret. and Perf. :—**ceveis, ceis, ceveist, cavas, cawssam, cawssawch, cawssant, cawssont**; pass. **caffat, cavat, cahat, cat**.

Pluperf. :—(a) **cawsswn**, etc., (b) **cawssloedwn**, etc. (§ 136<sup>a</sup>).

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres. :—**caffwyf**, etc.

Past :—**caffwn**, etc., also **cahwn, cawn**, etc.

NOTE.—For an enumeration of forms see Cymmrod. IX. 111 sq.

**146. rodi, roi** *give*.

The peculiarity of this verb is that it has forms with and without **đ**, e.g. ind. pres. sg. 2 **rody** and **roy**, imper. sg. 2 **ro**, subj. pres. sg. 3 **rotho**, **rodo** and **ro**. In the ind. pret. by **rodeis**, **rodeist**, **rodes** occur **roesum**, **roesost**, **roes**, and in the pass. by **rodet**, also **roespwyt**. In the plup. by the regular forms occur sg. 2 **roessut**, sg. 3 **roessei**, **royssei**, **roessoed**, **rasoed**, pl. 3 **rossoedynt**.

**147. tawr, dawr**.

This verb is used impersonally, e.g. **ny-m-tawr** *it does not concern me* RB. 284, 28, **pathawr** (= **pa-th-đawr**) *what does it concern thee?* RB. 279, 19, **nŷ-m-torei** WB. 172 = **ny-m-torei** RB. I. 238, *it would not concern me*, **ni-m-dorbi** BB. 30<sup>b</sup>. In the same sense is found the compound **didawr**; verb. noun **didarbot** Hg. I. 320.

**148. moes** *give*.

Only as imperative :—sg. 2 **moes**, pl. 2 **moeswch**.

**149. hwde** *take*. Used only as imperative.**150. med** *says*.

Inflected in the present and imperfect; it is used in quotation, e.g. **a wdost di pw yw?** heb hi. **gwnn**, heb ynteu. **Edyrn uab Nud yw, med** ef "*dost thou know who he is?*" *says she*. "*Yes,*" *said he*. "*He is Edyrn son of Nudd, he says,*" RB. 259; **y gouynnei beth yssyd yman**. **Broch, medynt** wynteu *he asked what was there*. "*A badger,*" *said they* RB. 15.

**151. heb** *says*.

This word, of adverbial origin and uninflected, is used like **Ir. ol** to give the very words of the speaker, **heb ef** *says he*, **heb wynt** *they say*, etc.

Before a proper name **heb** is followed by **y, yr**, e.g. **heb y Goewin**, **heb y Gwenhwyfar**, **heb yr Arthur**. The same is not infrequently found before a pronoun, e.g. **heb y mi** RB. 32, 7, **heb yr ynteu** RB. 245, 181 = **heb ynteu** WB. 386, p. 217, **heb yr ef** WB. 386 = **heb ef** RB. 245, **heb yr wynt** WB. 185 = **eb wynt** WB. p. 93<sup>a</sup>; cf. Mod. W. **ebr**. No satisfactory explanation of this has yet been given.

THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB *bot to be*.

## Paradigm.

## INDICATIVE.

## 152. PRESENT.

|    | sing.                                                       | plur.           |
|----|-------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------|
| 1. | <b>wyf</b>                                                  | <b>ym</b>       |
| 2. | <b>wyt</b>                                                  | <b>ywch</b>     |
| 3. | <b>iw, yw</b>                                               | <b>ynt</b>      |
|    | <b>mae</b>                                                  | <b>maent</b>    |
|    | <b>oes</b>                                                  |                 |
|    | <b>ys</b>                                                   |                 |
|    | <b>neut</b>                                                 |                 |
|    | <b>nyt</b> <i>is not</i>                                    |                 |
|    | <b>nat</b> <i>is not</i> (dependent)                        |                 |
|    | <b>os</b> <i>if it is</i>                                   |                 |
|    | <b>yssit</b> <i>there is</i>                                | <b>yssydynt</b> |
|    | <b>ossit</b> <i>if there is</i>                             |                 |
|    | <b>yssyd, syd, yssy, sy,</b> rel. <i>who, which is, are</i> |                 |
|    | Impersonal <b>ys, ydys</b>                                  |                 |

## PAST.

|    |                           |                |
|----|---------------------------|----------------|
| 1. | <b>oedwn</b>              | <b>oedem</b>   |
| 2. | <b>oedut, oedyt</b>       | <b>oedewch</b> |
| 3. | <b>oed, oedat, oedyat</b> | <b>oedynt</b>  |
|    | Impersonal <b>oedet</b>   |                |

NOTE 1.—There are also forms preceded by **ytt, yd**: **yttwyf, yttiwi, ydiw, yttoedwn**, etc.

## ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

|    |              |               |
|----|--------------|---------------|
| 1. | <b>bydaf</b> | <b>bydwn</b>  |
| 2. | <b>bydy</b>  | <b>bydwch</b> |
| 3. | <b>byd</b>   | <b>bydant</b> |

NOTE 2.—Specially future forms: sg. 3 **bythawt, bydhawt, bydawt, biawt, bi**; pl. 3 **bydawnt**.

NOTE 3.—In poetry there seems to be a consuetudinal sg. 3 **bit**, cf. FB. 245, 247, where the imperative sense does not suit.

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

|         | sing.        | plur.          |
|---------|--------------|----------------|
| 1.      | <b>bydwn</b> | <b>bydem</b>   |
| 2.      | <b>bydut</b> | <b>bydewch</b> |
| 3.      | <b>bydei</b> | <b>bydynt</b>  |
| impers. | <b>bydit</b> |                |

NOTE 4.—Poetical forms: sg. 3 **buei**, **bwyat**, pl. 3 **buyint** (i.e. **bwyynt**).

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

|         |                  |                     |
|---------|------------------|---------------------|
| 1.      | <b>buum, bum</b> | <b>buam</b>         |
| 2.      | <b>buost</b>     | <b>buawch</b>       |
| 3.      | <b>bu</b>        | <b>buant, buont</b> |
| impers. | <b>buwyt</b>     |                     |

## PLUPERFECT.

|    |                |                                         |
|----|----------------|-----------------------------------------|
| 1. | <b>buasswn</b> |                                         |
| 2. | <b>buassut</b> |                                         |
| 3. | <b>buassei</b> | <b>buassynt, buessynt,<br/>buyssynt</b> |

## IMPERATIVE.

|    |                 |        |
|----|-----------------|--------|
| 1. |                 | bydwn  |
| 2. | byd             | bydwch |
| 3. | bit, boet, poet | bint   |

NOTE 5.—**bynt** is clearly imperative BCh. 17, cf. **bint** LA. 81. RB. 105 has **bint** where WB. 457 has the future **bythawd**.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

|    |                  |                           |
|----|------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. | <b>bwyf, bof</b> | <b>bom, bwym</b>          |
| 2. | <b>bych</b>      | <b>boch</b>               |
| 3. | <b>bo</b>        | <b>bwynt, boent, bont</b> |

NOTE 6.—There are, particularly in poetry, analogical subjunctive forms from the indicative stem: sg. 1 **bydwyf**, sg. 2 **bydych**, sg. 3 **bytho**, pl. 3 **bydont**.

## PAST.

|    |             |              |
|----|-------------|--------------|
| 1. | <b>bewn</b> | <b>beym</b>  |
| 2. | <b>beut</b> |              |
| 3. | <b>bei</b>  | <b>beynt</b> |

NOTE 7.—Both in poetry and in prose the past indicative is often used for the subjunctive, e.g. **kyny bydwn** WB. 172=**kyn ny bewn** RB. 238. The impersonal **pan uythit** WB. 104=**pan vydit** RB. 76 is a subjunctive form based on the indicative.

REMARKS ON *bot.*

## Present and Imperfect.

**153.** The precise syntactical functions of the various forms of these tenses still require a detailed investigation, particularly their uses in early poetry. From the material to hand the following points of prose usage may be noted, (A) where the forms have the function of a substantive verb predicating existence, (B) where the forms are merely copular.

**154. A.** Substantive verb.

(a) In the 3 sg. pres. *he is*, etc., is expressed by **mae**, pl. **maent**, unless the verb is preceded by the negative or by other preverbal particles and conjunctions which are not followed by the particle **yd** (§ 93 g sq.), e.g. yma **y mae** brenhin Iwerdon *here is the king of Ireland*; o ellwng Riannon or poen **y mae** yndaw *from releasing Riannon from the punishment in which she is*; nat gan y vod **y mae** yn dyuot *that it is not with his will that he is coming*; **y mae** y enw yn barawt *his name is ready*; **y maent** yn symudaw enweu *they are changing names*. **Mae** is also used in the sense of *where are?* e.g. **mae** Ynwl iarll . . . ae wreic ae uerch. **maent** (= **y maent** RB. 256) yn y loft racco *where are Ynwl and his wife and his daughter?* *They are in the chamber yonder* WB. 400. In the sense of *there is, there are* **yssit**, **yssydynt** are found, e.g. **yssit** nas keffych *there is something that you will not get* RB. 121 sq.; chwedleu porth y gennynt. **ysydynt** gennyf *hast thou tidings of the gate?* *I have* RB. 126. If the verb is preceded by a negative, etc., then (a) if the subject is definite **yttiu**, **ydyw**, pl. **yttynt**, **ydynt** are used, (β) if the subject is indefinite **oes** is used, e.g.—

(a) **nyt yttiu y** clawr y lle kyntaf y kefeist *the board is not where thou didst get it first* RB. 241; **nat ydiw y** uorwyn honno yn y byt *that that maiden is not in the world* RB. 113; **nyt yttynt** namyn pedwar *they are only four* CM. 46; **neut ydynt** yn gynyon boneu vy esgyll *the stumps of my wings are like wedges* RB. 130; **a yttiaw** Kei yn llŷs Arthur. **yttiaw** is *Kei in Arthur's court?* *He is* WB. 143.

(β) **nyt oes** yndi neb nyth adnapo *there is no one in it who will not recognize thee* RB. 3; **a oes** borthawr. **oes** *is there a porter?* *There is* RB. 103. With **o** *if*, the definite form is **ot ydiw**, e.g. **ot ydiw** yg karchar *if he is in prison* RB. 179, the indefinite **ossit**, e.g. **osit** rann y mi oth uab di *if I have any part in thy son* RB. 109; **osid** ay hammehuo *if there is any one who doubts it* BCh. 53. The relative form is **yssyd**, e.g. y gwr hir **yssyd** yno *the tall man who is there*; pa ryw chwedleu **yssyd** gennynt. **nyt oes** namyn da *what kind of news hast thou?* *Only good news.*

NOTE 1.—In poetry **yssit** is found also with a definite subject, e.g. **yssit** imi teir kadeir *I have three seats* FB. 154; **yssit** ym argluyd *I have a lord* MA. 176<sup>a</sup>. It seems to be a disappearing form, cf. **y mae** yni beth a wnelom *we have something to do* Hg. l. 10, **y mae** ym .a wnelwyf 69. **Ossit** also seems to be a disappearing form; for **ossit** a uynho *if there is anyone who desires* WB. 122, RB. 197 has: **or byd** neb kyehofnet.

(b) In the first and second persons the subject is always definite, and here after negatives etc., **yttwyf**, **ydwyf** are usual both in the present and in the imperfect, e.g. **nyt yttwyf** (= **nyt ydwyf** i WB. 437) yn ansawd *I am not in a condition* WB. p. 219; **nyt yttoedwn** i yn holi dim ytti *I was not claiming anything from thee* RB. 5. In the third persons of the imperfect there is in the Mabinogion a very general distinction after negatives etc., between (a) **yttoed**, **ydoed** when the subject is definite, (b) **oed** when the subject is indefinite, e.g. (a) **ydrých yn ý chýlch** a oruc **a yttoed** ef **yn deffroi** *she looked about her to see if he was stirring* WB. 424; **pann yttoed** (= **pan ydoed** WB. 99) y dyd yn dyuot *when the day was coming* RB. 72; **tra yttoed** ef yn hynny *while he was in that* RB. 133; **ýný ýttoýd** ý chwýs ar gwaet yn dwyn lleuuer ý llygeit udunt *until the sweat and the blood were taking the light of their eyes from them* WB. 398; (b) **nyt oed** dim yno *there was nothing there* RB.; Gereint a ofynnnawd y wr y ty **a oed** getymdeithon idaw . . . oes, heb ynteu *Gereint asked the master of the house if he had friends.* “*I have,*” said he.

NOTE 2.—But there are a good many instances of (b for (a): **nat oes** (= **nat ydiw** RB. 113) hi yn y byt *that she is not in the world* WB. 470; **kwt ynt plant y gwr** *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453; **pan oed** y dyd yn goleuhau *when the day was becoming light* RB. 72; **yny oed** yn y eidaw ef *Ardu dwy till Ardu dwy was in his possession* RB. 77; **yny oed** y



gwaet yn lliaw y llenn *till the blood was colouring the mantle* WB. 391 = RB. 249; **yny oed** (= **hyny yttöed** WB. p. 218) *eu llygeit yn colli eu lleuer till their eyes were losing their light* WB. 435 = RB. 283.

NOTE 3.—In a number of cases the **ytt-**, **yd-** forms are found not preceded by a negative, etc.: **berth yd ytwyt** (= **yd wyt** RB. 115) *finely thou art* WB. 473; **yth ewyllys yd ydym** *we are at thy will* RB. 66; **hyt yd ydiw** *dayar as long as the earth is* WB. 459 = RB. 105; **ar hynny yd yttöed yn deffroi** *thereupon he was stirring* WB. p. 212; **yma yd yttöedwn** (= **yd oedwn** WB. 441, RB. 287) *yn kerdet there I was journeying* WB. p. 221; **ual yd yttöed yn kerdet** WB. 170 = RB. 236; **ymlodeu dy dewred yd yttwyt** (= **yt vyt** WB. 413 = **yd wyt** RB. 266) *thou art in the flower of thy might* WB. p. 207; **for: o hynny yd yttöed** RB. 218, WB. 149 has **ac hyny yttöed**, and for **ae yd yttöed yn troi** RB. 215 WB. 145 has **y doeth yd ydoed yn troi**. So in the present impersonal forms occur: **vyg karcharu yd ydys** (**yd ydys** om. WB. 235) *I am imprisoned* RB. 187; **yn y gyveistydaw yd ydys** (= **yd yttys** WB. 167) *it is being besieged* RB. 233, **by yd ys yn kadw or enw hwnnw** *that name is preserved* RB. 60; **yd ys yn lluydaw yn an hol** *there is a hosting after us* RB. 63, 1.

NOTE 4.—In Hg. I. **ytti**w, etc., are not unfrequently copula forms, e.g. **gwell ytti**w *vy marw it is better that I should die* 145, **pa un ytwyt** *who art thou* 95; cf. **hyny yttöedynt** (= **yny oedynt** WB. 446, RB. 291) *kystal ac y buont oreu eiroet till they were as good as they had ever been* WB. p. 223.

## 155. B. Copula.

(a) In the third person of the present there is a variety of forms:—

(a) **ys**, used (like Ir. *is*) at the beginning of a clause before its predicate, e.g. **is gwell** *it is better*; **is gohelyon** *hwnn he is a remnant*; **ys mi** *ae heirsch it is I who ask her*. It is often preceded by the conjunction **can**, e.g. **kanys gwell yw genyt ti** *since thou preferrest*; **kanys arnam ni y berneist** *since it is on us that thou hast passed judgment*.

NOTE 1.—In poetry **ys** is used with an infixed personal pronoun, e.g. **yssim** *eduar I repent* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>, cf. O.Ir. *issum écen it is necessary for me*.

(β) **yw**, used when the predicate precedes, e.g. **negessawl yw** *wrthyt he has business with thee*; **pw yw hi** *who is she?* **miui yw** *Llwyd I am Llwyd*; **y deu lygat yw y dwy lynn** *the two lakes are his two eyes*; **nyt gwr yw hwnnw** *that is not a man*; **kanys mawr yw** *since it is great*. It is also used after the conjunction **pan**, e.g. **y dyuedassant wynteu pan yw** *merchet ieirll oedynt they said that they were daughters of earls* (cf. § 226, 5).

(γ) **ynt** is the plural form, e.g. **bychein ynt wynteu** *they are small*; **nyt ynt iach** *they are not whole*.

(δ) **nyt** is a negative form, e.g. **nyt oet** ymi gwreicka *it is not time for me to wed*; **nyt egŷlyon** ŷ rei racko *those yonder are not angels*; **nyt wyntwy** bioed yr antur *it is not to them that the adventure belonged*.

(ε) **nat** is the dependent negative, e.g. menegwch . . . **nat hawd** gennyf ynheu nae lad ef nae diuetha *declare that it is not easy for me to slay him or to destroy him*.

(ζ) **os** is the form with **o** if, e.g. **os da** gennyt ti *if it seems good to thee*; **os wynteu** ae med hi *if it is they that have it in their power*.

(η) **ae** is the interrogative = *is it?* e.g. **ae gwell** *is it better?* **ae kyscu** yd wyt ti *art thou asleep?*

(θ) **ponyt** is the interrogative = *is it not?* e.g. **ponyt** dros y neb yssyd yna *is it not for one who is there?*

(ι) **neut** is the copula form with the particle **neu** (§ 220), e.g. **neut araf** *he is gentle*.

(κ) The relative form is positively **yssyd**, negatively **nyt**, e.g. kanyys mi **yssyd athro** itt *for it is I who am thy teacher*; gwaew **nyt gwaeth** *a spear that is not worse*.

(λ) **mae** seems to be used where according to § 159 the predicate follows, e.g. am hŷnnŷ **ŷ may reit** ŷ titheu uot *therefore it is necessary for thee to be* WB. 396, o achaws hynny **y mae dygassawc** yr adar yr tylluan *because of that the birds are enemies to the owl* RB. 80; yn **ŷ mae goreu** y gwyr *where the men are best* WB. 119. **Mae** is used also in indirect speech, e.g. menegi ŷ Arthur **mae** mi ath vŷrŷawd *to declare to Arthur that it is I who have thrown thee* WB.; ereyll a deueyt **e may** hyn eu y naud *others say that this is his protection* BCh. 9.

(μ) Otherwise the forms **wyf**, etc., are used for the copula, e.g. **pwyt wyt** *who art thou*, **yd ym** drist ni *we are sad*, **nyt oed ef nes** idi *he was no nearer to her*.

### bydaf and bydwn.

156. **bydaf** is used :—

(a) As an iterative or consuetudinal present, e.g. mi a **uydaf** borthawr y Arthur bop duw kalan Ionawr *I am Arthur's gate-*

*keeper every New Year's Day* RB. 103, 7; *lle ny bo dysc ny byd dawn where there is no learning there is no gift* FB. 244.

(b) As an historical present, e.g. *ual y bydant yn eisted wynt a welynt gwreic as they were sitting they saw a woman* RB. 8; *a chyuaros Gereint a oruc yny uyd yn agos idi and she waited for Gereint till he was near her* RB. 271, 1.

(c) As a future, the most common use, e.g. *y gyt a mi y bydy yn dyscu marchogaeth thou shalt be with me learning horsemanship*; *mi a vydaf athro it I shall be thy teacher.*

### 157. **bydwn** is used :—

(a) As an iterative or consuetudinal past, e.g. *a pheî vwyhaf uei y vrys ef pellaf vydei hitheu y wrthaw ef the greater his haste the further she was from him* RB. 9, 5.

(b) Describing a single action in past tense: *ual y bydynt yn eisted wynt a welynt y wreic as they were sitting they saw the woman* RB. 9, 29.

(c) As a secondary future or conditional, e.g. *wynt a welsant or kaffeî vedic da y bydei vyw they saw that if he got a good leech he would live* RB. 212, 12.

### Past Subjunctive.

158. The following forms are to be noted: **pei yt uewn i** (= **beî etu(ñi** WB. 71) *yn dechreu vy ieuentit if I had been in the beginning of my youth* RB. 51, 24; **beyt uei** *ar y ffuryf iawn if she had been in her proper form* RB. 175, 18; *ar mul ae kanlynawd megys pei at uei milgi and the mule followed him as if it had been a hound* Hg. I., 336; *hi a vynnei pet vei hi a Lawnsloŧ yn y fforest she would that she and Launcelot were in the forest* Hg. I., 368; **a phettut** *un wreic di or byt, ny mynnwn i ddim ohonat ti and if thou wert the only woman in the world, I would desire nothing of thee* Hg. II., 315. Like the modern **pettwn** these forms seem to express unreality.

## POSITION OF THE COPULA.

**159.** In Middle Welsh prose in positive affirmative sentences (with the exception of **ys** which always precedes the predicate) the normal position of the predicate is before the copula, e.g. **Lunet wyf i** *I am Lunet*, **cennadeu ym ni** *we are messengers*, **llawen vu** *he was glad*, **reit vyd** *it will be necessary*, **trwy gynghor Branwen uu** *hynny oll all that was through the advice of Branwen*. But the predicate follows the copula in the imperative, in negative and interrogative sentences, in subordinate clauses, and very generally when an adverb or an adverbial phrase precedes, e.g. **a vo penn bit bont** *let him who is head be bridge*, **nyt da dy gyghor** *thy advice is not good*, **a wyt uorwyn art** *thou a maiden?* **o byd reit** *if it is necessary*, **tra vu da** *as long as it was good*, **ual y bydynt gadarnach** *so that they would be stronger*, **paham ydwyf trist i** *why am I sad?* **yna y bu marw** *there he died*, **undyd ym penn y vlwydyn y bu barawt** *on the same day at the end of the year it was ready*. But after adverbs and adverbial phrases there are instances where the predicate precedes, e.g. **yna ryued uu gan Arthur hynny** *then Arthur wondered at that* Hg. I., 339; **am hynny reit vyd** *therefore it will be necessary* Hg. I., 311 (by **am hynny y byd reit** 307); **ar eil vlwydyn mab mawr oed** *and the second year he was a big boy* RB. 69. 4.

NOTE 1.—This order seems to have developed from sentences in which a copula form **ys**, etc., preceded, such as, e.g. **canyys gwr uuassei** lit. *since it is a man that he had been*, **os byw vyd** lit. *if it is alive that he shall be*. Thus the development would be parallel to that of sentences like **Peredur a oruc** *Peredur did* (§ 85).

NOTE 2.—In the early poetry the copula freely precedes the predicate, as in Irish. And in the more archaic prose there are instances of the same order, e.g. **oed dyhed** (= **ys oed gryssyn** RB. 116) *kelu y ryw was hwnn it were a grievous thing to hide such a lad as that* WB. 475; **oed melynach**, **oed gwynnach** WB. 476 = **melynach oed**, **gwynnach oed** RB. 117; **oed reit** WB. 487 = **asoed reit** RB. 126, 27; **oed glyssyn** WB. 151 = **ys oed gryssyn** RB. 220; **oed dyhed mawr**, **oed iawn** RB. 173; **oed well** RB. 176. As to **as oed**, **ys oed** the **as**, **ys** is in origin the infixing particle **a** (§ 94) with an infixed pronoun which has become meaningless, cf. **as bwyf** *may I be!* MA. 142<sup>b</sup>; this usage has developed from cases like **ys caffo drugared may he find mercy!** MA. 224<sup>b</sup>, where formally **s** may be an anticipation of the object.

COMPOUNDS OF *bot.*

**160. ar-gan-vot** *perceive*, **can-vot** *perceive*, **cyv-ar-vot** *encounter*, **dar-vot** *to be ended*, **gor-vot** *overcome*, **han-vot** *to be sprung*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

|    | sing.                                       | plur.                       |
|----|---------------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. | <b>canhwyf; handwyf,<br/>hanwyf, henwyf</b> | <b>handym, hanym, henym</b> |
| 2. | <b>handwyt, hanwyt,<br/>henwyt</b>          |                             |
| 3. | <b>cenyw; deryw, derw;<br/>henyw</b>        | <b>derynt; henynt</b>       |

NOTE 1.—sg. 3 **handit** RB. 71, 178, and frequently in poetry; cf. *Cymmrod.* IX. 116, CZ. III. 389. **hanvit** Hg. I. 200.

## IMPERFECT.

|    | sing.                                      | plur.             |
|----|--------------------------------------------|-------------------|
| 2. | <b>handoedut</b>                           |                   |
| 3. | <b>canoed; daroed;<br/>handoed, hanoed</b> | <b>hannoedynt</b> |

## FUTURE.

|       |                                             |                    |
|-------|---------------------------------------------|--------------------|
| 1.    | <b>gorvydaf</b>                             | <b>gorvydwn</b>    |
| 2.    | <b>gorvydy; henbydy</b>                     | <b>cyvarvydwch</b> |
| 3.    | <b>cyvervyd; dervyd;<br/>hanbyd, henbyd</b> |                    |
| pass. | <b>gorvydit</b>                             |                    |

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

|       |                                           |                  |
|-------|-------------------------------------------|------------------|
| 3.    | <b>cyvarvydei; gorvydei;<br/>hanbydei</b> | <b>gorvydynt</b> |
| pass. | <b>gorvydit</b>                           |                  |

NOTE 2.—sg. 3 **handei** RB. 85.

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1. arganvum; cyvarvum; darvuam; gorvuam  
gorvum
  2. cyvarvuost; gorvuost gorvuawch, gorvuoch
  3. arganvu; darvu; gorvu, arganvuant; gorvuant
- pass. arganvuwyd; cyvarvu-  
wyd; gorvuwyd

## PLUPERFECT.

3. cyvarvuassei; darvuassei;  
gorvuassei
- pass. gorvuessyt

## IMPERATIVE.

3. hanvit

NOTE 3.—sg. 3 derffit RB. 155.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1. cyvarffom; gorffom
  2. henpych
  3. arganffo; cyvarffo; cyvarvoent  
darffo; gorpo,  
gorffo; hanffo
- pass. gorffer

## PAST.

3. cyvarffei; darffei; cyverffynt  
hanffei

## Pieu.

**161.** The primary use of **pieu** is in interrogation, direct or indirect, in the sense of *whose is?* e.g. **pieu** y gaer, heb wynt. nyt oes yn y byt ny wypo **pieu** y gaer honn "*whose is the city?*" said they. "*There is no one in the world who does not know to whom this city belongs*" RB. 126; Peredur a ovynnawd **pioedynt** gwyr wy *Peredur asked whose men they were* Hg. I. 314. But it is

frequently used with lenation **bieu**, etc., but not preceded by relative **a**, in a non-interrogative sense *to whom belongs*, e.g. *Effrawc iarll bioed iarllaeth y gogled to Effrawc the earl belonged the earldom of the north* RB. 193, 1; *Duw bioedynt they belonged to God* Hg I. 426. The inflexion follows that of **bot**, e.g.

## INDICATIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 2. **piwyt**; 3. **pieu**; pl. 3. **piewynt**.

Imperf.:—Sg. 3. **pieuoed**, **pioed**, **piewed**, **pieuat**; pl. 3. **pioedynt**.

Fut.:—Sg. 3. **pieivyd**; pl. 1. **pieivydwn**.

Condit.:—Sg. 3. **pieivydei**.

Pret.:—Sg. 3. **pieivu**, **pieuu**.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 3. **pieuvo**.

Past.:—Sg. 3. **pieiffei**, **pieuvei**.

NOTE.—cf. Bezz Beitr. XVII. 292 sq. In: *ni ae pieifydwn we shall possess them* CM. **pieu** has developed into a transitive verb *to possess*, as it did in Cornish, cf. Cymmrod. IX. 100.

## THE PREPOSITION.

162. **ac**, **a** *with*; with the article **ar**; with possessive pronouns **am**, **ath**, **ae** etc., e.g. *minneu a chwaryaf a thitheu I shall play with thee*; *wrth ryuelu a Gwrtheyrn to fight with Vortigern*; *yny oedynt gynefin ac ef till they were familiar with him*; *taraw a oruc Owein a chledyf he struck Owein with a sword*; *llanw crochan a dwfyr to fill a vessel with water*; *taw ath ucheneidaw have done with thy sighing*; *peidaw a bwyta a oruc he stopped eating*; in *amvin* *ev terwin a guir Dulin defending their land from the men of Dublin*. It is often used after verbs compounded with **ym**, e.g. *ymadaw a oruc Arthur ar llyn Arthur left the lake*; *ymgolli ae gedymdeithon to lose his comrades*; *a doyy ymwelet ac Arthur wilt thou come to see Arthur?*

163. **ach**. In the phrase **ach y law** *beside him*.

**164. am** (Ir. *imm*) *about, on account of*, e.g. *corn canu am y vynwgl a horn about his neck*; *gwisce ymdanat dress thyself*; *am y uagwyr ar karcharawr on the other side of the wall from the prisoner*; *iawn y medreis i am benn y carw rightly did I determine about the head of the stag*; *hyt na dywedit am vn vorwyn vwy noc amdanei so that there was not more talk about any maiden than about her*; *am hanner bwytta amofyn a oruc y gwr about the middle of the meal the man asked*; *haelaf oed am rodyon he was most liberal with respect to gifts*; *y oual am y wreic his anxiety about his wife*; or *sarhaet a wnathoed am adaw y llys for the outrage which he had committed in leaving the court*; *dothyw am Oweyn Owein has perished* MA. 252<sup>a</sup>; *a derŷv am Keduŷv has K. perished?* BB. 1<sup>a</sup>; *trist oed am angeu y uab he was grieved because of the death of his son*. In the phrase *am benn*, e.g. *yn y del y iarll . . . am penn y lle hwnn until the earl comes to attack this place*; *pan yttoedynt pawb yn mynu mynet am penn y Saeson when they were all eager to attack the Saxons*.

*ymdan*, e.g. *ymdan y varch about his horse*.

**y am** (O.W. *diam*) *from off*, e.g. *y dynnu y wisc hela y amdanaw to pull off his hunting dress*; *dogyn o arueu y am hynny plenty of arms besides* WB. p. 225; *o lu uii nyn e am e mam ay tat æ y brodir a chuarit by the oath of seven people including her mother and her father and her brothers and her sisters* BCh. 36.

**165. ar** *on*, etc., **ar uarch** *on a horse*; *Lawnsloet a eistedawd y vwyta ar y bwrð Launcelot sat down at the table to eat*; **edrych** *a wnaeth Manawydan ar y dref Manawyddan looked upon his town*; **y dodet ar yr avon** *Hafren the river was called the Severn*; *ae geuyn ar yr heul and his back towards the sun*; *cymryt cleuyt arnaw a oruc he pretended to be ill*; *rac meint karyat y brenhin arnei because of the greatness of the king's love for her*; *rac caffael y gaer arnaw lest the city should be taken on him*; **y wassanaethu arnaw** *to wait upon him*; **taerwn arnei** *ehun diuetha y mab let us insist that she herself killed her son*; *nyt gwerth arnaw ef dim it is not worth anything*; *hitheu . . . a gytsynnywys ar anvon y mab y Pwyll she agreed to send the boy to Pwyll*; *dyuot a oruc ef ar*



(=att RB. 287) **Enyd** *he came to* **Enid** WB. p. 221; a roti **y** uanec **ar** (=att RB. 116) **y kýmhar** *and he gave the glove to his wife* WB. 473.

In phrases, e.g. **ar y drydyd** *with two others*; **ar y ganuet** *with a hundred men*; sef y key yn nef **ar y ganuet** *thou shalt receive in heaven a hundredfold*; **ar vrys** *in haste*; am eu carcharu **ar gam** *because they were wrongfully imprisoned*; **ar gel** *secretly*; **ar gyhoed** *publicly*; y marchawc y gwnaethpwynt **ar y odeu** *the knight for whom it has been made*; y marchogyon goreu a oed **ar y helw** *the best horsemen that were in his possession*; **ar hynny** *after that*; **ar hyt** y glynn *along the valley*; **ar hyt** y dyd *throughout the day*; **ar eu hol** *after them*; **ar uedwl** mynet *with the intention of going*; **ar uessur** llad y benn *with the purpose of cutting off his head*; **ar tal** y pebyll *before the tent*; **ar tal** y lin *on his knee*; **ar draws** yr avon *across the river*; y tharaw **ar draws** y hwyneb *he struck her across her face*.

NOTE 1.—For the phrase **ar y ganvet** see Rev. Celt. 28, p. 206.

**y ar** (O.W. **diar**), **odyar** *from*, e.g. y dygwydawd yn varw **y ar** **y uarch** *he fell dead from his horse*; byrywch awch blinder **y arnawch** *cast your weariness from you*.

NOTE 2.—But **y ar** is used also in the sense of **on**, e.g. y gwelynt wreic **y ar uarch** *they saw a woman on a horse* RB. 248.

NOTE 3.—In O.W. **guar** (=Ir. **for**), e.g. **guar** ir dreb gl. *edito*, **guar** ir henn rit *above the old ford* Lib. Land. 73. In Lib. Land. is also found **ar**, cf. Ir. **ar**. In Mid. W. the two prepositions are confused. (cf. *J.A. a 100*)

**166. att** *to*, e.g. dyuot a oruc **att y uorwyn** *he came to the maiden*; y chwedyl a doeth **att Uatholwch** *the tidings came to Matholwch*; dyret y gyt a mi **hyt att Arthur** *come with me to Arthur*.

**167. can, gan** (corresponding in sense to Ir. **la**) *with, by*, e.g. mynet a oruc Mabon **ganthaw** *Mabon went with him*; ef a edewis **genthi** dwy iarllaeth *he left with her two earldoms*; a **chan gennyat** y ewythyr cychwyn ymeith *and with his uncle's leave he set out*; nawd a geffy . . **gan uynet** dracheuyn y fford y deuthost *thou shalt have mercy on condition that thou returnest by the way by*

*which thou hast come*; hyny yttoed eu llygeit yn colli eu lleuuer **gan y chwys ar gwaet** *till their eyes were losing their light with the sweat and the blood*; atdeb nys kauas ef **genthi hi** *he got no answer from her*; ny phrynit dim **ganhunt** *nothing was bought from them*; ny chollet oen eiryoet **ganhaw** *not a lamb had ever been lost by him*; **gan lan** y weilgi *by the shore of the sea*; os da **gan y uorwyn** da yw **gennyf ynneu** *if it pleases the maiden, it pleases me*; drwc vyd **gantunt** *it will be displeasing to them*.

**y gan** *from*, e.g. cymer gedernit **y ganhaw** *take security from him*; annerch **y genhyf i** ef *greet him from me*.

**168. cer, ger** *near by*, e.g. **ker tir** Tyssilyaw *by the land of Tyssilyaw* MA. 237<sup>b</sup>; **ger glan** yr avon *by the bank of the river*; ae kymeth **ger y avwyneu** *he took him by his reins* CM. 56; yn ymauael ar ebawl **geir y vwng** *seizing the foal by its mane*. In some phrases:—**ger bronn**, e.g. ae vwrw **ger bronn** Owein *and threw it before Owein*; ar abat . . . a doeth ac ef hyt **geyr bronn** yr allawr *and the abbot took him before the altar*; **ger llaw**, e.g. ae doddi **ger llaw** y gerwyn *and placed it beside the cauldron*.

**169. cyvrwng** *between*, e.g. **kýfrwg deu ýskýuarn** Twrch Trwýth *between the ears of Twrch Trwyth*; **cyfrwng mor a glan** *between sea and shore*.

**170. cyn** *before*, e.g. **kynn y nos** *before night*; **cyn myned** mab Cynan y dan dywawd *before Cynan's son went under the sod* MA. 140<sup>a</sup>.

**171. cyt** *union* serves as a preposition in the phrases **cyt ac, y gyt ac** *together with*, e.g. mynet a orugant **gyt ar mackwy** *they went along with the youth*; yn gorymdeith **y gyt ar amherawdyr** *walking together with the Emperor*.

**172. eithyr** (= Ir. *echtar*) *outside of, except, beyond*, e.g. neb rýw dim ný welýnt **eithyr guydldwyn** *they saw nothing except wild beasts*; a phan welas Chyarlys hynny ryuedu a oruc **eithyr mod** *and when Charlemagne saw that he was astonished beyond measure*.

**dieithyr**, e.g. ef a edewis y holl longeu . . . **dyeithyr un llong** *he left all his ships except one ship*.

**odieithyr**, e.g. gwede mýnet Arthur **odieithyr y llýs** *after Arthur*

*went out of the palace*; ef . . . ae cassaawd **odieithyr messur** *he hated him beyond measure.*

**173. erbyn** (prep. **er** + dat. of **penn** *head* = Ir. ar chiunn cf. § 25) *against, before, by*, e.g. mi ae paraf . . . yn gyniachet **erbyn penn y mis** ac y gallo marchogaeth *I will make him so well by the end of the month that he will be able to ride*; ar abat yna **erbyn y law** ae kymmerth *and the abbot then took him by his hand.*

**174. gwedy, wedy** (O.W. guetig) *after*, e.g. **gwedy y gawat** goleuhau a oruc yr awyr *after the shower the sky cleared*; uot y crydyon **wedy duunaw** ar y lad *that the cobblers had conspired to slay him*; **hyd guedy** gosper *till after evening.*

**175. heb** (= Ir. sech) *past, without, besides*, e.g. nyt kynt yd yskynn ef ar y uarch noc yd a hitheu **hebdaw ef** *no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him*; **heb dant** yn y phenn *without a tooth in her head*; abreid vu eu hattal **heb torri** eu hamot *they could hardly be kept from breaking their covenant*; y kahat o ynys Prydein ehun trugein mil o varchogyon aruawc **heb deg mil** a adawssei urenhin Llydaw *there was got from the island of Britain itself sixty thousand armed horsemen besides ten thousand that the King of Brittany had promised.* In the phrase **heb law**, e.g. pan yttoed honno yn kerdet **heb law** Breint *when she was going past Breint* RB. II., 246.

**176. herwyd** *according to, by*, e.g. **herwyd anyan** *according to nature*; **herwyd vyg gallu i** *according to my power*; a chymryt y mab **herwyd y draet** *and he seized the boy by his feet.*

**177. hyt** (a prepositional use of **hyt** *length*) *as far as, up to*, e.g. o vor Ut **hyd vor** Iwerton *from the English Channel to the Irish Sea* MA. 202<sup>a</sup>; **hyt dyd brawt** *until Doomsday*; **educher** (= **hyt ucher**) *until evening.*

NOTE.—In O.W. there are also prepositional phrases **behet**, e.g. **behet hirmain** *as far as the long stone* Lib. Land., **bet rit ir main** *as far as the ford of the stone* ib., and **cihit**, e.g. **cihit i nant** *to the valley*, **cihitan**, e.g. **cihitan clouuric** Lib. Land., and **cihitun**, e.g. **cihitun ceng** *ir esceir* Ox. gl.

**178. is** (= Ir. is) *below*, e.g. **is nef** *below heaven.* In the phrase **islaw** *below*, e.g. kawc a oed **islaw** y drws *a bowl that was below*

*the door*; y dodit **islaw** y teulu *he was placed beneath the household*; **odis**, e.g. neur disgynnassei Arthur . . . **odis Kaer Vadon Arthur** *had descended beneath Caer Vaddon* RB. 151, 22; **adhis Guaissav** Lib. Land. 241.

**179. ithr** (only O.W. = Ir. *etir*) *between*, e.g. **ithr ir dwy ail** *between the two eyelashes* Mart. Cap.

**180. mynn** (a nominal preposition = Ir. *mind* *a holy relic, an oath*) *by* (in oaths), e.g. **myn dy law di . . . mi a af y gyt a thi** *by thy hand I will go with thee*; **myn vyg cret** nyth gredaf *by my faith I do not believe thee*.

**181. mywn** (nominal preposition) *in*, e.g. wynteu a dywedassant bot adanc **mywn gogof** *they said that there was a monster in a cave*; ryuedu . . . a orugant bot **mywn un dyn . . . hanner hynny o** nerth *they marvelled that half as much strength should be in one man*; neuad a welsant **y mywn** (= **o vewn** WB. p. 93a) **y gaer** *they saw a palace within the city* RB. 87, 17.

**182. nes** (cf. **nes** *nearer*) *until, unless*, e.g. ny cheffir Mabon vyth . . . **nes caffel** Eidoel *Mabon will never be got till Eidoel is got*; **nes dyuot** Guilenhin urenhin Ffreinc nŷ helir Twrch Trwyth vŷth hebaw *unless Gwilenhin King of France comes, Twrch Trwyth will never be hunted without him* RB. 124, 28.

**183. o, a** *of, from, by*; with the article **or**; with possessive pronouns **om, oth, oe** etc.; before pronouns beginning with a vowel there is also a form **oc**: **oc awch** *of your*, **oc eu** *of their*, **oc a** *of what*, e.g., mil **o bunneu** aryant *a thousand pounds of silver*; y rann vwyhaf **or vlwydyn** *the greatest part of the year*; mawr **a beth** yw gwelet dwyawl dial ar y bobyl *a great thing it is to see divine vengeance on the people*; pebyll **o bali** *a tent of satin*; **yn llawn or dwfyr** *full of the water*; kany cheffynt **o ennyt** wiskaw eu harueu *for they got no time to put on their arms*; pei karei Duw wynt **o dim** *if God loved them at all*; aduet **o oet** ripe in years; wytt ditawl **o bob chwant** *thou art free from every desire*; o mynwn nineu **arueru o rydit** *if we wish to enjoy freedom*; na naccaa ui **ohonunt** *do not refuse them to me*; ef a gychynnwys **o Arberth** *he set forth from Arberth*; yn dyuot **or coet allan**

*coming out of the wood*; am lad **ohonat titheu** y gwr priawt *because her husband has been slain by thee*; na ellir kynnal dy gyuoeth di namyn **o vilwryaeth ac arueu** *that thy dominion can be maintained only by valour and arms*. In phrases, e.g. **o achaws** *because of*; **oe vod** *with his will*; **oe hanvod** *against his will*; **or diwed** *at last*; **o hynny allan** *from that time forth*; **o barth** y vam *on his mother's side*; **oc eu plith** *from among them*.

**184. parth** *part*, in **parth ac**, **parth ac att** *towards*, e.g. bryssyaw a orugant **parth ar mwc** *they hastened towards the smoke*, yn dyuot ar hyt y dyffryn **parth ac attaf** *coming along the valley towards me*.

**185. py** (= Ir. co) *to*; with possessive pronoun **pwyl, py**, e.g. or mor **pwyl gilyd** *from one sea to the other*; ar ffo o le **py gilyd** *in flight from place to place*; ac yna y kymertth Seint Alban Amphibalus yd oedit **awr py awr** yn y dwyn oe verthyru ac y kudywys yn y dy ehun = *quorum Albanus confessorum suum Amphibalum a persecutoribus insectatum et iam iamque comprehendendum primum in domo sua occuluit* RB. II. 107.

**186. rac** *before, against, on account of*, e.g. mal heu **rac moch** meryerid *like scattering pearls before swine*; kymer di y pedwar meirch a gyrr **rac dy vronn** *take the four horses and drive them before thee*; kerdet a orugant **racdunt** hyt att vwyalch Gilgwri *they went on till they came to the blackbird of Kilgwri*; am notwy **rac auar** *may he protect me against grief*; nys kelaf **ragot** *I will not hide it from thee*; ffo ditheu ymeith **rac dyuot** *ohonaw flee forth lest he should come*; yn keissaw diffryt y deu wr **rac eu bodi** *in seeking to save the two men from drowning*; llidiaw a oruc Arthur **rac hwyret** y gwelei y vudugolyaeth yn dyuot idaw *Arthur was angry because he saw the victory coming to him so slowly*; y kenir efferenneu **rac y eneit** *masses are sung for his soul*; yn aballu **rac newyn** *dying of hunger*.

**y rac** *from*, e.g. ninheu a dygwn **y racdunt** yr eidunt *we will take their property from them* RB. II. 207.

**187. rwng, y rwng** *between*, e.g. **rwng nef a dayar** *between heaven and earth*; **y rwng deuglust** Twrch Trwyth *between the*

*ears of Twrch Trwyth*; pany bei ammot **yrof am gwlat** amdanunt *if there were not a covenant between me and my land about them*; **rwng dicter a llit** taraw ym plith y llygot a wnaeth *between rage and anger he struck among the mice*; dywedut **y ryingthunt** ehunein y maent *they are saying among themselves*; **rwg deu** onadunt *between two of them* RB. II. 141; y kerdwys **y ryingtaw** **a Ruuein** *he set out to Rome* RB. 85, cf. ib. 12, 24.

**odyrwng** *from between*, e.g. a ducpwynt yn teirnossic **odyrwng y vam** ar paret *who when three nights old was taken from between his mother and the wall* RB. 129, 10.

**188. tan, dan, ydan, adan** (cf. O.W. **guotan**) *under*, e.g. ffynnawn a welwn **dan y prenn** *I saw a fountain under the tree*; y clywei dygyuor : . . **y dan** (= **dan** WB. 92 = **adan** RB. 66) **baret** yr ystauell *he heard a commotion under a wall of the chamber* RB. 67, 15; gobennyd **dan penn y elin** *a cushion under his elbow*; **dan wynt a glaw** *under wind and rain*; y ellwng y gwn **dan y coet** *to let loose his dogs in the wood* RB. 1, 10; awn **adanunt** (= **ydanunt** RB. 48) **a lladwn** *let us attack and slay them* WB. 67; yny uyd y llygot yn gwan **adan y groft** *until the mice were falling upon the field* RB. 53, 27, cf. RB. 28, 29; dyuot a wnaeth Corineus at Locrinus **dan dreiglaw** bwyell *Corineus came to Locrinus brandishing an axe*.

**189. trag, tra** *beyond, across*, e.g. ton **tra thon** toid tu tir *wave beyond wave covers the side of the land* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>; ac eigyl racdaw draw **dra thonneu** *and angels before him yonder across the waves* MA. 196<sup>a</sup>; maith dy dreisiau **drag Euas** *great are thy deeds of violence across Evas* MA. 145<sup>a</sup>; oes **trag oes** *age beyond age* FB. 230; **tra messur** *beyond measure* FB. 155; rybud **drae gilyd** = *quotidianos rumores* RB. II. 131.

NOTE.—Often in the phrase **drachefyn** *back*, by which there are also forms with possessive adjectives, e.g. **tra-m-kefyn** WB. 232 = **drachefen** RB. 169, 16, **tra-th-gefyn** WB. 124 = **drachefyn** RB. 198, 25, **dra-e-gefyn** CM. 73, **dra-e-chefyn** RB. 177, 12, **dra-e-kefyn** CM. 45, also forms like **drach eu kevyn** Hg. I. 301.

**190. trus, tros, dros** *across*, e.g. **trus ir minid** *across the*

*mountain* Lib. Land; ual yd oed . . . yn kerdet **dros vynydd** as he was journeying across a mountain; yny ehedawd y glot **dros wyneb y deyrnas** until his fame flew over his dominion; y ymlad **dros y wlat** to fight for his country; y rodes Hengyst ateb idaw **dros y gedymdeithyon** Hengist answered him on behalf of his companions; pan allasant wy gyntaf talu drwc **dros da** as soon as they were able to return evil for good.

191. **trwy, drwy** (Ir. tre) *through*, e.g. **trwy y koet** through the wood; **trwy gynghor Branwen** through the advice of Branwen; ar tes oed vawr, ar arueu **trwy y chwys ar gwaet** yn glynu wrth y gnawt and the heat was great, and the armour by reason of the sweat and blood was sticking to his flesh; ar dyd hwnnw ar nos honno a treulasant **trwy gerdeu a didanwch** and that day and that night they spent in songs and entertainment WB. p. 204; Arthur **drwy amlaf rodyon** æ henrydedei Arthur honoured him with many gifts.

192. **tu** side in **tu ac, tu ac att** towards, e.g. pan daw **tu ar drws** when he goes towards the door; yn dyuot . . . **tu ac attat** coming towards thee.

193. **uch** (Ir. ūas) *above*, e.g. **uch nef** above heaven; yn eisted **uch penn** y weilgi sitting above the sea; **uch law** y bont . . . y gwelynt kastelltref above the bridge they saw a fortified town.

**diuch : diuch i lan** Lib. Land. 73.

**oduch**, e.g. **oduch y dwvyr** above the water WB. p. 90<sup>b</sup>; eithyd **oduch gwynt** he went above the wind FB. 179; pei delhei y bŷt **oduchti** if the world should come above it WB. 481.

194. **wrth** (O.W. gurth, Ir. fri) *against, towards, etc.*, e.g. ny ellir dim **wrth a uynho Duw** nothing can be done contrary to what God wills; pan yuei o wual yuei **urth peduar** when he drank from the horn, he would drink against four BB. 48<sup>b</sup>; **wrth y drws** llyma vab bychan lo! at the door was a little boy; yn eu pobi **wrth y tan** being cooked at the fire; yn dyuot **wrth y diaspat** coming at the cry; pob kyfryw anieileit a ducpwynt yno **wrth eu haberthu** every kind of animals was led there to be sacrificed; reit oed ym **wrth gynghor** I had need of counsel; y

dynu a orugant **wrth raffeu** y mywn *they pulled him in with ropes*; **wrth ych kynghor** y bydaf *I will follow your advice*; llew **wrth aer** a llwfr **wrth eirchyeid** *a lion for battle and a weakling towards suppliants*; cyt bei lityawc ef **wrthi hi** *though he was angry with her*; **wrthyt ti** y mae vy neges *my business is with thee*; yn glynu **wrth y gnawt** *sticking to his flesh*; y dywawt y dat **wrthaw** *his father said to him*; sef a wnaeth gwyr Rufein drychafel Geta yn vrenhin . . . **wrth hanuot** y vam o Rufein *the men of Rome raised Geta to be king because his mother was sprung from Rome*; **wrth hynny** *therefore*; **y wrth** *from*, e.g. yr pan athoed **y wrthunt hwy** *since he had gone from them*; ny ry giglef i eirmoet dim **y wrth y uorwyn** *I have never heard anything of the maiden*.

195. **y** (O.W. **di**, Ir. **do**) *to*. With the article **yr**; with possessive adjectives **ym**, **yth**, **yw**, etc. (§ 58*b*), e.g. dyuot **yw** (= **y** R.B. 284) *lety came to his lodging* WB. p. 219; gwyr Troea ae hymlityassant **y eu llogeu** *the men of Troy pursued them to their ships*; y deuynt drannoeth **oc eu hamdiffyn** *they would come on the following day to defend them*; deu uab oed **im** *I had two sons*; keuynderw **dŷ** (= **y** R.B. 100, 13) Arthur oed *he was a cousin of Arthur* WB. 452; or tu draw **yr bont** *on the further side of the bridge*; heb wybot **yr kawr** *without the knowledge of the giant*; mi ae talaf **ywch** *I will pay it to you*; ni ae dywedwn **itti** *we will tell it to thee*; gouyn a oruc Gwrhryr **idi** *Gwrhryr asked her*; na hawl ef **ynni** *do not demand him of us*; pan daruu **udunt** *darllein when they had finished reading*.

NOTE.—In Irish **do**=*to* (cf. Bret. **da**), **di**=*from*. Already in Old Welsh **di** has the sense of Ir. **do**, e.g. **map di Iob**=Ir. **macc do Iob** *a son of Jupiter*, **anu di Iuno**=Ir. **ainm do Iuno** *a name of Juno*, **di erchim** *to ask*. The sense of *from* is kept before other prepositions, e.g. **di am** *later y am from off*, **y wrth** *from*, and in some phrases, e.g. **blwydyn y hediw** *a year from to-day*, **y dreis** *by violence*, **y werth** WB. p. 214=**ar werth** R.B. 277, 21 *for a price*.

196. **yn** (Ir. **i n-**) *into, in*. With possessive pronouns **ym**, **yth**, e.g. kylllell a edŷw **y mwyt** a llŷnn **y mual** *(the) knife has gone into (the) food and (the) drink into the horn*; dyuot a orugant **hyt yn lle** yd oed karw Redynure *they came to where the stag of*



*Redynvure was* ; nŷ chlyweist **yth wlat** dŷ hun eirŷoet kerd kŷstal ac a ganant hwŷ *thou hast never heard in thy own country such song as they will sing* ; ny byd vy eneit **ym korff** *my life will not be in my body* ; pa rŷw weith ŷd wŷti **yndaw** *in what manner of work art thou engaged?* **ym penn** y seith mlyned *at the end of the seven years* ; gormod vyd agheu gwas kystal ac Edern **yn sarhaet** *morwyn the death of so excellent a youth as Edern will be too much for an insult to a maiden.* In many phrases :—dwy (ŷstondard) yssyd **yn y vlaen** a dwy **yn y ol** *two standards are before it and two after it* ; **yn ol** y twryf y daw kawat *after the noise will come a shower* ; **ym bron** *close by* ; **yg kylch** y tan *round about the fire* ; edrych a orugant **yn eu kylch** *they looked around them* ; **yg gwyd** Arthur *in the presence of Arthur* ; nat elych **ym herbyn** *that thou shalt not go against me* ; **yn herwyd** gweledigaeth *according to appearance* ; **y mywn** cadeir *in a chair* ; ef a chwawl or a gollassei **hyt yn oet** y tlws lleihaf a gafas *he got all that he had lost even to the smallest treasure* ; ef a welei bebyll **ym plith** y pebylleu ereill *he saw a tent among the other tents* ; y vrenhines a eistedawd **yn ymyl** Galaath *the queen sat beside Galahad.*

**197. yr, er** *for, on account of, since*, e.g. oes obeith gennyt ti ar gaffel dy ellwng ae **yr aur** ae **yr aryant** *hast thou any hope of obtaining thy liberation either for gold or for silver?* py glot a geffy ti **yr llad** gwr marw *what fame wilt thou get for slaying a dead man?* nyt **yr drwc** itti y deuthum *I have not come to thee for evil* ; pei tebygwn y wneuthur ohonat ti **yrof i** beth *if I thought that thou wouldst do something for me* ; **yr y byt** na wnewch hynny *for the world do not do that* ; **yr Duw** a wdost ti dim y wrth Uabon *for God's sake, dost thou know anything of Mabon?* **yr mwyn** y gwr mwyhaf a gery arho vi *for the sake of the man whom thou most lovest, wait for me* ; pa hustyng bynnac **yr y vychanet** a uo y rwng dynyon *whatever whisper, however low, there is between men* ; **yr a** uyrit yndi ny bydei lawnach no chynt *however much was thrown into it, it was not fuller than before* ; oed llesach yr march pei ass archut **yr meittyn** *it would have been better for the horse if thou hadst asked it a while ago* ; y gwr y buost **yr ys talym** o amser yn

y geissaw *the man whom thou hast been seeking for a long time* (lit. *since it is a while of time*).

NOTE.—This preposition is frequent with **oet** *time*, together with a possessive adjective, e.g. ny ry giglef i **eirmoet** *I have never heard*; na welsei **eiryoet** *that he had never seen*. The form **eiryoet** becomes petrified into a phrase used of all persons, e.g. ny chiglef i **eiryoet** *I have never heard*; ny chlyweist **eiryoet** *thou hast never seen*.

## THE CONJUNCTION.

**198. a** *and*; **ac** before vowels and the negative particles **ny**, **na**, and sometimes before other consonants; with the article, **ar**; with possessive adjectives: **am**, **ath**, **ae** etc., e.g. vyg kewilyd **am** llit *my disgrace and my anger*; **a** phryderu a oruc yn uawr *and she was very anxious*. **a**—**a** *both and*, e.g. y gwassanaeth goreu a allwyf i mi ae gwnaf **ac** idaw **ac** y uarch *the best service that I can I will render both to him and to his horse*; **a** hediw **a** pheunydyd *both to-day and every day*. After the comparative of equality (§ 39), e.g. vn **kyndecket a** hi *one so fair as she*; similarly, a honno a aei trwy gallonneu y dynyon ae hofnockaei **yn gymeint ac** y collei y gwyr eu lliw ac eu nerth *and that went through the hearts of the people and terrified them so that the men lost their hue and their strength*. Introducing an accompanying or qualifying circumstance, e.g. gwilem . . . mynyd mawr geir llaw y coet **a hwnnw ar gerdet** *we saw a great mountain beside the wood, and it walking* RB. 35, 26; goueileint a delis yndaw o gamhet idaw attal y mab gantaw **ac ef yn gwybot y vot yn vab y wr arall** *he was seized with great sadness because of the wrong that he did in keeping the boy with him though he knew that he was the son of another man* RB. 22, 20; nyt **a mi yn uyw** yd aho ef y Gernyw *he shall not while I live go to Cornwall* RB. 140, 16. Adversatively, e.g. mi a rodaf y carcharawr itti **ac** ny darparyswn y rodi y neb *I will give thee the prisoner, although I had not intended to give him to anyone* RB. 128, 26.

**199. achaws** (nominal conjunction) *because*, e.g. galw Gwrhyr Gwalltawt (leg. Gwalstawt) Ieithoed, **achaws** (om. WB. 471) yr holl ieithoed a wydyat *he summoned Gwrhyr, the interpreter of*

*tongues, because he knew all languages* RB. 114, 14; **o achaws na chaffant** gennynt *because they do not get from thee* RB. 85, 26.

**200. am na** *because not*, e.g. tristuart uytaf **am na daw** *I shall be a sorrowful bard because he will not come* MA. 183<sup>b</sup>; **am na weles** ef yno na gwr na gwreic ryued vu ganthaw *he was astonished because he saw there neither man nor woman* Hg. I., 154.

**201. yr awr** (nominal conjunction) *when*, e.g. **yr awr y kených** ef a a y nýwl ýmdeith *when thou soundest it the cloud will vanish* WB. 451: **yr awr y rodeis** un llef arnaw ýd aeth y nýwl ýmdeith *when he blew a single blast on it the cloud vanished*, ib.

**202. can** *for, since*; neg. **can ny**; with the present of the copula, **canys**, e.g. yr hýnný hýt hediw ýd wýf i yn darparu gwled ýtti, **can gwýdýwn** i ý dout ti ým keissyaw i *from that time till to-day I have been preparing a feast for thee, for I knew that thou wouldst come to seek me* WB. 249; **kanýs gollýngy** yr hýnný mi a rodaf it pedeir punt ar ugeint o arýant *since thou wilt not let it go for that, I will give thee twenty-four pounds of silver* WB. 78; **chanys vy** lles i yd oedut ti yn y uenegi im, manac pa fford vei hynny *and since thou wert shewing me my advantage, shew how that might be* RB. 177, 15.

NOTE.—The copula form **canys** comes to be used simply in the sense of **can**, e.g. a **chanys nys gwnn** (=a **chanys gwnn** WB. 76) *since I do not know it* RB. 54, 30.

**203. cwt, cw** *where*, e.g. **kwt ynt** plant y gwr *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453; mýnet a oruc y brénhin ýg kýghor **kwt gaffei** wreic *the king took counsel where he could get a wife* ib.; a wdosti **cwd uyd** nos yn arhos dyd *knowest thou where is night waiting for day?* FB. 146; a thrýdit rýuet ýv merwerit mor, **cv threia, cud echwit, cvd a, cvd ymda, cv treigil, cv threwna** *and the third wonder is the tumult of the sea where it ebbs, where it swells, where it goes, where it moves about, where it rolls, where it settles* BB. 44<sup>b</sup>.

**204. cyn** *before*, (a) with indicative, e.g. gwr a rodei gad **kyn dybu** i dyt *a man who used to give battle before his day came* MA. 141<sup>a</sup>; (b) with subjunctive, e.g. gweinif i hagen ym Reen ri

**cyn bwyf** deierin *I yet will serve my Lord King before I am of the earth* MA. 142<sup>a</sup>, a **chin ri llethid** ve llatysseint *and before they were slain they had slain* BB. 36<sup>b</sup>.

205. **cyt**, **cyn**, *though*; negative **cyn ny**, **cyny**, **cany**.

(a) With indicative, e.g. **kid y lleinv** keudaud nis beirv calon *though it fills the body, it does not stir the heart* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>; **cyd doeth** ef nid aeth yn warthegawc *though he came, he did not go with spoil of cattle* MA. 140<sup>b</sup>.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. **kyn nŷ buŷf** arglwŷdes, heb i, mi a wnn beth ŷw hŷnnŷ *"though I am not a lady," said she, "I know what that is"* WB. 51; **ked archwyf** ym llyw y lloergant yn rot, ef am ryt yn geugant *though I ask of my sovereign the moon's orb as a gift, he will assuredly give it me* MA. 212<sup>a</sup>; a thydi am gwely i **kany welwyf** i dydi *and thou wilt see me, though I see thee not* RB. 173; a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi, ef a gymyrth y rybud *and though he was angry with her, he took the warning* WB. p. 215; nyt oed ef nes idi yna no **chyn bei** ar y gam *he was no nearer to her there than though he had been at a walking pace*; neur daruydei yr dayar y lynku heb wybot dim y wrthaw mwy no **chyn ny ry fei** eiryoet vch y dayar *the earth had swallowed it so that nothing more was known of it than though it had never been above the earth* RB. II., 141; annoc y Brytanyeit **megys kyt** bei un onadunt *he incited the Britons as though he had been one of them* RB. II., 94.

NOTE.—In the verb "to be" after **cyt** the 3 sg. imper. regularly takes the place of the 3 sg. præs. subj., e.g. ar mab a geiff enw **kyt boet** drwc gennyti *and the boy shall get a name though it displease thee* RB. 69, 23.

206. **cyt** *union* in the phrase **y gyt ac**, e.g. **y gyt ac y doethant** rac bron Kynan y hannerchassant o bleit amherawdyr Rufein *as they came before Cynan they greeted him on behalf of the Emperor of Rome* RB. II. 113; **y gyt ac nat** oes *since there is not* BCh. 81.

207. **delw** (nominal conjunction) *as*, e.g. **delw yt wytt** pen rieu pen reith yt wyf pen prifueirt om prifyeith *as thou art head of princes, head of law, I am head of chief bards from my most excellent speech* MA. 157a.

**208. eissoes** *however, nevertheless*, e.g. a dic vu wreic y melinyd wrth Peredur, ac **eissoes** y melinyd a rodes aryant yn echwyn idaw *and the miller's wife was wroth with Peredur; nevertheless the miller gave him a loan of money* RB. 229.

**209. eithyr na** *except that not*, e.g. ac erbyn auory y vot yn gystal ac y bu oreu, **eithyr na byd** llyueryd gantaw *and by the morrow he will be as good as he ever was, except that he will not have the power of speech* RB. 31.

**210. gwedy** *after*; negative **gwedy na**:—(a) with indicative, e.g. keugant kywraghaun (MS. -um) **wide kywisscarun** (MS. -an) *verily we shall meet after we part* BB. 12<sup>b</sup>; a **gwedy na allwys** Kaswallawn kael y gwr . . . gogyuadaw Auarwy a oruc *and after Kaswallawn could not get the man, he threatened Avarwy.*

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. a **gwedy byryer** llawer yndi, ef a ovyn itt *and after a quantity has been thrown into it, he will ask thee* RB. 14; mwy boen yw koffau kyuoeth **gwedy coller** *it is a greater torment to remember power after it is lost* RB. II. 67; kanys ymdiret a wnaei ef caffel clot . . . **gwedy y gorffei** ar y alon *for he trusted that he would get fame after he had conquered his enemies* RB. II. 7; kanys **gwedy darffei** idaw ef llad Galogryuant diogel oed ganthaw y lledit ynteu gwedy hynny *for after he had slain Galogryvant he was sure that he would be slain after that* Hg. I. 114; a **gwedy na chaffei** dagneued o neb ryw ford y gantaw, sef a wnaeth anuon y geissaw nerth a chanorthwy y gan Ulkesar *and after he could not get peace from him in any way, he sent to seek support and help from Julius Caesar* RB. II. 89.

**211. hagen** *yet, however*, e.g. a phan deuthant yno tybygu rylad Kei. wynt a welsant **hagen**, or kaffei vedic da y bydei vyw *and when they came there, they thought that Kei had been killed. They saw, however, that if he got a good leech he would live* RB. 212, 11.

**212. herwyd, yn herwyd** (nominal conjunction) *according as*, e.g. a **herwyd y dyweit** y kyuarwydyt ef a uu arglwyd wedy hynny ar Wyned *and as the story says, he was lord over Gwynedd after that* WB. 111; a gwedy eu hannoc uelly **yn herwyd y gallei**, erchi a wnaeth dineu delw efydeit drwy danawl geluydyt *and after he had*

*thus exhorted them to the best of his power, he asked that a bronze effigy should be cast through the art of fire* RB. II. 138.

**213. hevyt** *further, also, likewise*, e.g. *ý Duv ý harchaw arch hewid of God I will ask a request still* BB. 36<sup>a</sup>, *ac enryuedodeu ereill heuyt a weleist yno and other wonders likewise thou sawest there* RB. 233, 2.

**214. hyt** (nominal conjunction).

1. *as long as, as far as*.

(a) With the indicative, e.g. *ti a geffy y kyfarws a notto dy benn ath dauawt, hyt y sych gwynt, hyt y gwlych glaw, hyt y treigyl heul thou shalt have the gift that thy mouth and thy tongue indicate, as long as wind dries, as long as rain wets, as long as the sun revolves* RB. 105, 25; *hyt y gwelir ymi gwlat ffrwythlawn yw hon as far as appears to me, this is a fruitful land* RB. II. 116; *nyt aeth neb is nef hyt yd aeth ef no one under heaven went as far as he* FB. 197.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. *taw hyt y mynnych be silent as long as thou wilt* RB. 13, 8.

2. **hyt na** *so that not*.

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. *drycyruerth a wnaeth hyt nat oed well genti y byw noe marw she made lamentation so that she did not deem her life better than her death* RB. 51, 18.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. *carchara wynt hyt nat elont dracheuyn imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14.

**215. lle** (nominal conjunction) *where*; negative **lle ny**, e.g. *lle y gwelych eglwys kan dy pader wrthi wherever thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* RB. 195; *am uenegi ohonaf i ytti dy les lle nys metrut dy hun because I shewed thee thy advantage where thou didst not think of it thyself* RB. 177.

**216. mal, val** (O.W. **amal** = Ir. **amail**).

1. **as**, *when*.

(a) With indicative, e.g. *sef mal yd eistedassant that is how they sat* WB. p. 224; *pei gwypwn vot yn da gennyti ti mal y mae da gennyf i if I knew that it pleased thee as it pleases me* RB. 213; **ual y daw** *y mywn arganuot yr adanc a wnaeth as he came in, he perceived the monster* RB. 226, 5; *ýd adnabu ýr amherawdyr ý wlat*

**mal y gwelas** *the emperor recognised the country when he saw it* WB. 186.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. **mi wnaif ual y dywettych di** *I shall act as thou mayest direct* RB. 276; **hwýnt ae torrynt ual y dyckid attunt** *they broke them as they were brought to them.*

2. *as if* (with past subjunctive), e.g. **mal pei** *teu uei as if it were thine* RB. 127; **dyuot yma auory ym kymryt i mal na wyppwn i dim y wrth hynny to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it** WB. p. 215.

3. *so that.*

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. **kyscu a wneuthum i ual na wybuum** *pan aeth ef I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 27.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. **par weithon wahard y llongeu . . . ual nat el neb y Gymry** *issue now a prohibition to the ships so that no one may go to Wales* RB. 34, 12; **ereill a gyghorei itt rodi dy uerch y un o dyledogyon y deyrnas hon ual y bei vrenhin gwedy ti** *others advised thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom so that he might be king after thee* RB. II. 114.

### 217. **megys ; megys na.**

1. *as*, e.g. **y gwledychwys Peredur gyt ar amherodres pedeir blyned ar dec, megys y dyweit yr ystoria Peredur** *ruled with the empress for fourteen years, as the story tells* RB. 232; **megys y gallwys gyntaf ef a aeth parth a Chaerwynt** *as soon as he could he went towards Caerwynt* RB. II. 173; **megys y del y coelbrenn udunt y deholir** *as the lot falls to them they are banished* RB. II. 131.

2. *as if*, e.g. **ymgaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt drwy lawer o yspeit kyn no hynny** *they embraced one another, as if they had not seen one another for a long time before that* RB. II. 186.

3. *so that*, e.g. **pa achaws na ladwn ni y mynach hwnn megys y kaffo Gwrtheyrn gwedy hynny y deyrnas** *why do we not slay this monk, that Vortigern may thereafter get the kingdom?* RB. II. 129.

218. **myn** *where*, e.g. **dyuot a orugant myn yd oed yr heussawr** *they came to where the herdsman was* RB. 115, 13; **myn yd vo truin yd uit trev** *wherever there is a nose, there will be a sneeze* BB. 42a.

**219. namyn, namwyn** *except, but.*

e.g. nýt edewis uýnet **namyn** hýt yd elhut titheu *I did not promise to go except so far as thou shouldst go* WB. 472; paham y kymerwn ninneu hynny y gan y taeogeu lladron . . . **namyn** eu llad hwy oll *why do we take this from these thievish churls and not rather slay them all?* RB. 49; y prenn a dyfawd yn dec . . . **namyn na** thyfawd neb ryw ffrwyth arnaw *the tree grew fairly, except that no manner of fruit grew upon it* Hg. I. 130.

**220. 1. neu** = (Ir. nō) *or*, e.g. nýt oed un llestýr . . . namýn eur **neu** aryant **neu** uelýn *there was not a single vessel...except gold or silver or horn* WB. 227.

**221. 2. neu**, before vowels **neut**; with the present of the copula **neut**; with **ry, neur** (§ 95 note), with infixed pronoun: **neu-m**, etc. The original meaning may have been *now*, but the precise force of the particle is not altogether clear.

e.g. pan douthume attad oeth bichan vi anuad. **neu rimartuad** oth laur kieuithad *when I came to thee, my ill was small; now I have been blackened through thy...co-operation* BB. 11<sup>b</sup>; och, heb y Riannon, paham y rody di atdeb uelly; **neus rodes** uelly arglwydes yg gwyd gwyrda, heb y mackwy "*Alas!*" said Riannon, "*why dost thou answer so?*" "*I have so answered, lady, before nobles,*" said the youth RB. 13; **neus gwarchae** mynwent y mynwes daear, **neud** gwar gwawr trydar *now the graveyard imprisons him in the bosom of the earth, now the light of battle is gentle* MA. 160<sup>a</sup>; **neu** chwitheu pan doethawch. **neur doetham** y erchi Olwen *whence have ye come? We have come to ask for Olwen* RB. 118. Many examples will be found in MA. 275<sup>b</sup>.

**222. no, noc** *than*; with the article, **nor**; with possessive adjectives **nom, noth, noe** etc., e.g. oed melýnach ý fenn **no** blodeu ý banadýl *her head was yellower than the blossom of the broom* WB. 476; **noc** amws naw gayaf oed mwy *he was bigger than a stallion of nine years* WB. 472; nachaf ý twrýf ýn dýfot yn vwy . . . **noc** y dywedassei ý gwr du *behold the din became greater than the black man had said* WB. 231; a llawenach uuwyth wrthyf y nos



hono **nor** nos gynt *I had greater welcome that night than the night before* WB. 233.

With the particle **et**, **nocet**, **nocyt**, **nogyt**, e.g. dial Duw arnaf onyt dewissaf (*leg.* dewissach) genhyf uy agheu oe law ef **nocet** o law arall *God's vengeance on me if I would not rather die by his hand than by the hand of another* WB. p. 210; pa beth yssyd iawnach weithon **nocyt** na chretter idaw *what is more proper now than that he should not be believed?* CM. 76.

NOTE.—For **et** see Rev. Celt. VI. 57.

**223. nu**, *now*, e.g. **nu** nŷm car i Guendit *now Gwendydd loves me not* BB. 25<sup>b</sup>; yth law di **nu** y rodaf i *into thy hand now I will give it* RB. 266; beth bynnac **nu** a dylyych, kymer yr un march ar dec *whatever then thou art entitled to, take the eleven horses* RB. 279.

NOTE.—In the usual Mid.W. orthography the word should be written **nw** (=Ir. **nu**); it had gone out of use, and so the scribes retained the spelling of an earlier period. Cf. Loth Mab. II. 195.

**224. o**, before vowels **ot** *if*; also **or**, **os**; negative **ony**, before vowels **onyt**; with the present of the copula **os**, negative **onyt**.

(a) With present indicative, e.g. **ot ey** yr hon (sc. fford) issot ny deuy trachefyn vyth *if thou goest by the lower one, thou wilt never return* WB. p. 223; **os** bŷw uŷdaf i . . . ti a glŷwŷ chwetleu **o dianghaf** *if I live, thou shalt hear tidings, if I escape* WB. 392; **or dianghaf** i . . . uŷg kŷwirdeb am cariat a uyd ar ŷ uorwŷn . . . **ony dianghaf** uinheu kŷndiweiret uŷd ŷ uorwŷn a chŷnt *if I escape, the maiden shall have my loyalty and my love; if I do not escape, she will be as pure as before* WB. 396; mi ath amdiffŷnaf **os gallaf** *I will defend thee if I can*; nŷ mwynha ŷ gwaet **onyt** ŷn dwŷm ŷ keffir *the blood is of no use unless it is got warm*.

NOTE 1.—A negative clause continuing a clause introduced by **o** has **ae na** with the subjunctive (§ 236, note 1).

NOTE 2.—**onyt** sinks to the sense of *except, but* (Mod.W. **ond**), e.g. ny mynnaf i dim **onyt** mynet yr gware *I desire nothing but to go to the play* WB. p. 224; ny mynnaf i neb **onyt** Duw *I desire no one but God* Hg. I. 178.

(b) With the preterite and pluperfect, e.g. **or bu** (= **os** RB. 104) ar dy gam ŷ dŷuuost ŷ mŷwn, dos ar dŷ redec allan *if thou camest in at a walk, go out at a run* WB. 458; **o ry dywedyssei** hitheu

dim a uei wrthwyneb ganthaw ef, hi a wnaei iawn idaw *if she had said anything to displease him, she would give him satisfaction.* Hg. II. 130.

(c) With the past subjunctive, e.g. **o bei** orderch itt goreu gorderch oedut *if thou hadst a mistress, thou wouldst be a matchless lover* WB. 237; **or bei** eisseu dim arnaw nŷ adei ef hun uyth ar legat dŷn *if he lacked anything, he would never allow sleep on any man's eye* WB. 465; dywedut na bydei vy eneit ym corff **ony delei** = **deuhei** WB. 256) ef ym amdiffyn i *they said that my life would not be in my body, unless she came to defend me* RB. 187.

NOTE 4.—It will be observed that in the last example corresponding to what in direct speech would be **o daw** the older text has the imperfect indicative, the later the past subjunctive.

NOTE 5.—**os** contains the infixed pronoun of the third person singular, **os gallaf** *if I am able (to do) it*; from such cases **os** develops into a special form of the conjunction. **or** comes from **o + ry** as **neur** from **neu + ry** (§ 95 note), so that originally it would have been used before those tenses with which **ry** was used. But it tended to spread beyond its proper bounds, cf. **or clywy**, or **gwely** RB. 195 = **o chlywy**, **o gwely** WB. 119, 120.

225. 1. **pan** *whence?* e.g. **pan iv** dŷ echen *whence is thy lineage?* BB. 49<sup>b</sup>; guaur llv pŷ dv **pan doit**. **Ban deuaw** o kad “*hero of a host, whence comest thou?*” “*I come from battle*” BB. ib.; pa le **pan deuy di . . . pan deuaf** o lys Arthur “*whence comest thou?*” “*I come from Arthur's court*” RB. 200, 1. Note the repetition of **pan** in the answer.

226. 2. **pan** *when*.

(a) With present (or future) indicative, e.g. kŷntaw geir a dŷwedaw ŷ bore **ban kyuodaw** *the first word that I will say in the morning when I arise* BB. 41<sup>b</sup>; **ban wanha** ŷ gnaud *when his flesh becomes feeble* BB. 10<sup>a</sup>; **pan agorawr** (= **agerer** RB. 103, 24) ŷ porth . . . bŷdhawt ragot ti gŷntaf ŷd agorawr ŷ porth *when the gate is opened, it will be opened for thee first* WB. 456.

NOTE.—This construction gives place to **pan** with the subjunctive.

(b) With a past tense of the indicative, e.g. a **phan yt oed** yn mynet yr llog ac **na welei** neb y gyt ac ef namyn ar y drydyd . . . y dywawt *and when he was going to the ship and saw no one with him save his two companions, he said* RB. II. 67; a **ffan deuthum**

yno hoffach oed genhyf *and when I came there it pleased me more* WB. 229; **pan glywssynt** hwy y uarwolyaeth ef yd ym-gynullyssynt *when they had heard of his death, they had assembled* RB. II. 173.

(c) With the subjunctive, e.g. **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely *when thou thyself comest to thy land thou wilt see* RB. 6, 10; **pan agorer** y creu beunydyd a allan *when the pen is opened every day, it goes forth* RB. 78; **pan elhei** y teulu y yvet y gwin . . . nyt aey ef y gyt a neb onadunt wy *whenever his household went to drink the wine he would not go with any of them* RB. 85.

3. In some phrases.

(a) **hyt pan** *until*, e.g. ar pump meib hynny a uagassant **hyt pan uuant** weisson mawr *and those four boys they reared till they were big lads* RB. 43; Duw a wyr nat ymchoelwn **hyt pann welhom** y uorwyn *God knows that we will not return till we see the maiden* RB. 117.

(b) **or pan** *from the time that*, e.g. **or pan gauas** y tir ny allwys na chi na dyn na march y ganhymdeith *from the time that it reached the land neither dog nor man nor horse could keep up with it* RB. 141; **or pann agoroch** y drws hwnnw ny ellwch uot yno *after ye open that door ye will not be able to be there* RB. 40.

(c) **yr pan** *since the time that*, e.g. kyvriuwch awch treul **yr pan doethawch** yma *reckon up your expenditure since ye came hither* RB. 228; gwedy dwyn ar gof onadunt eu collet **yr pan gollyssynt** arglwydiaeth ynys Brydein *after they called to mind their losses since they had lost the lordship of Britain* RB. II. 108.

4. *since*, e.g. gwae ni **pann** yn trewit o delli woe to us *that we have been struck by blindness* LA. 84; pa gyfryw wr yw awch tat chwi **pan allo** lleassu pawb uelly *what kind of a man is your father that he can kill everyone in this way?* RB. 221; pa drwc a digoneis i ytti **pan wnelut** titheu ymi . . . a wnaethost hediw *what evil have I done to thee that thou shouldst do to me what thou hast done to-day?* WB. 232.

5. *that*, e.g. ny wydyem **pan** oed ti a grogem *we knew not that it was thou whom we were crucifying* FB. 122. In prose it is

common in the phrase **pan yw** *that it is*, e.g. *y dywawt y gwr . . . pan yw* Peredur ae goruassei *the man said that Peredur had overcome him* RB.

**227. pei** *if*, negative **pei na** ; followed by the past subjunctive or by the pluperfect indicative which takes its place (§ 109c), e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130 ; nyt oed gyfyg gennyf ymlad a thidi **bei na bei** yr anifeil gyt a thi *I should not think it difficult to fight with thee if the beast were not with thee* RB. 189 ; a **phei na ry bylei** y cledyf ar vodrwyau y benffestin ef a vuassei agheuawl or dyrnawt honnw *et nisi collisioe cassidis mucronem hebetasset, mortiferum vulnus forsitan intulisset* RB. II. 198 ; buassei well itti **pei rodassut** nawd yr mackwy *it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the youth* RB. 216.

NOTE.—**pei, bei** is in origin sg. 3 past subjunctive of **bot**. By itself it has the sense of *if it were*, e.g. **pei** oet idaw ef a ladyssit *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* RB. 193.

**228. pryt na** (nominal conjunction) *since not*.

(a) with the indicative, e.g. *py* holy di y mi **pryt nam gedy** yn y tarren honn *what dost thou seek of me that thou dost not leave me in peace on this stony height?* RB. 128 ; a **phryt na thygyawd** idaw geissyaw mynet y mywn trist vu ganthaw *and since he did not succeed in getting in he was sad* Hg. I. 39.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. *pa* uedwl yw dy teu di unben **pryt na bwyttehych** *what is in thy mind, sir, that thou dost not eat? (that keeps thee from eating)* RB. 292 ; *py* wyneb yssyd arnat ti **pryt na delut** y edrych y gofut a uu arnaf i *what face hast thou that thou didst not come to see the grief that was upon me?* RB. 176.

**229. pyr** (**py + yr** for *what?*).

1. *Why?* e.g. **pyr** (= **py rac** RB. 126) **y kyuerchy dy** *why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

2. *Since, that*, e.g. *gvae* vi **pir imteith** genhide in kyueith *woe to me that I walked in associateship with thee* BB. 11<sup>b</sup>.

**230. tra** *while* ; often preceded by **hyt**.

(a) With the past indicative, e.g. *ny* omedwyt neb **tra barhaawd** *no one met with refusal while it lasted* RB. 17 ; *y*

tyuawd heint yndaw a nychtawt **hyt tra uu** uyw *there developed in him a sickness and a wasting as long as he lived* RB. 108.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. **tra vych** ti yn kyscu mi a af y ymwelet ar iarll *while thou art sleeping, I will go to see the earl* WB. p. 214; **hyt tra ym gatter** yn vyw hanbyd gwaeth drem vy llygeit *while I am left alive my eyesight will be worse* RB. 119; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood he would walk on the tops of the trees* RB. 108; pei nam goganewch . . . mi a gysgwn **tra uewn** yn aros vy mwyt *if you would not laugh at me, I would sleep while I wait for my food* RB. 162; **hyt tra uei** yn gorffywys yd archei eu blygaw yn vyw rac y vron *while he was resting he asked that they should be flayed alive before him* RB. II. 79.

**231. wrth** *because*; negative **wrth na**, e.g. adolwyn yw genhyf itt y gadw yn da, **wrth nas rodwn** i ef iti yr y seith dinas goreu yth gyuoeth, ac **wrth** hefyd **y lledir** dy benn etwa ac ef *I entreat thee to guard it well, because I would not give it thee for the seven best towns in thy kingdom, and because too I will yet cut off thy head with it* CM. 31; **guerth na buost** vffil *because thou hast not been submissive* BB. 11<sup>b</sup>.

**232. yn** 1. *where*, e.g. dos ragot y lys Arthur **yn y** (= **yn lle** RB. 195) **mae** goreu y gwyr *go to Arthur's court where the men are best* WB. 119; **yn** (= **lle** RB. 195) **y gwelych** eglwys can dy pater wrthi *where thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* WB. 119.

2. *when*, e.g. **yn y** bo canmoledig Gruffudd . . . cerddwn weithon ar ddarogan Merddin *when Gruffudd has been praised, let us now pass to the prophecy of Merlin* MA. 723<sup>a</sup>; **yn y** bei orchyuygedic anghau a gyuodes y trydyd dyd *who, when death had been overcome, arose on the third day* Hg. II. 76.

NOTE.—See Rev. Celt. 28, p. 198.

**233. yny** *until*.

(a) With a past indicative (or historic present), e.g. wynt a drigyassant **yny daruu** idaw ef hynny *they stayed until he had finished that* RB. 267; dyuot a orugant yr holl niferoed **hyny**

**vydant** yn emyl y kae *the whole multitude came till they were beside the enclosure* WB. p 224.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. arhowch y gyt a mi **yny darffo** ym gymryt gwrogaeth vyg goreugwyr *wait with me till I have received the homage of my nobles* RB. 267; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were cast into the cauldron till it should be full* RB. 39.

**234. yr na** *since not, though not.*

(a) With indicative, e.g. am ernyw **yr na daw** *it afflicted me since he will not come* MA. 183<sup>b</sup>.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. darogan yw idaw kaffel etiued ohonat ti **yr nas kaffo** o arall *it is his fate that he shall have offspring of thee though he has had none of another* RB. 101; ny chyffroes un aelawt ar Gopart yr y uedru mwy noc **yr na metrit** *not one limb of Copart was affected, though it was hit more than though it had not been hit* Hg. II. 149.

## NEGATIVE PARTICLES.

**235. ny**, before a vowel **nyt**; infixed pronouns **ny-m-**, **ny-th-**, **ny-s-**, etc.

(a) Except before the imperative, **ny** is the regular negative in main clauses, e.g. **ny chelaf** *I will not conceal*; **ny lyuassei** neb *no one dared*; **nyt oed** da gennyf ynneu hynny *that did not please me*; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine*.

(b) **ny** introduces relative clauses (where Bret. and Corn. like Ir. have **na**), e.g. yn y wlad **ny ry welei** eiroet *in a country that he had never seen*.

NOTE.—In such clauses **na** is exceptional in Welsh, e.g. **yssit nas keffych** (by **yssyd ny cheffych** 120) *there is something that thou wilt not get* RB. 121—123.

**236. na**, before a vowel **nat**; with infixed pronouns **na-m-** etc. This is the regular negative in dependent clauses, e.g. ryued yw gennyf i **nam atwaenost** *I wonder that thou dost not know me*; ef a gadarnhaei y gwennwynei y dwfyr hwnnw genedyl y Corannyeit

ac **na ladei** ac **nat eidigauei** neb oe genedyl ehun *he gave assurance that that water would poison the race of the Corannyeit, and would not kill and would not harm anyone of his own race* RB. 96; breid vu **na syrthyawd** yr llawr *she almost fell to the ground* Hg. I. 308; mi a wnaft itt **na bo** reit itt uot yn trist *I will bring it about for thee that there will be no need for thee to be sad*; golychaf y wledic pendefic mawr **na bwyf** trist *I will entreat the king, the great Prince, that I may not be sad* FB. 182. Further examples will be found under the conjunctions (but **can ny, cyn ny, ony**).

NOTE 1.—**na** is found in the second member of a conditional sentence introduced by **o** (of which the negative is **ony**), e.g. **o gwely vwyf a diawt, or byd reit itt wrthaw ac na bo o wybot a dayoni y rodi itt, kymer dy hun ef** *if thou seest food and drink, if thou hast need of it, and no one has the courtesy and kindness to give it thee, take it thyself* RB. 195.

NOTE 2.—The use of **na** may be noted in sentences like the following: **kans estrawn genedyl a phaganyeit ywch ac nat atwen inheu etwa nach moes nach deuodeu** *for ye are foreigners and pagans, and I do not yet know your character or your customs* RB. II. 134; **a gwedy menegi y bawp o tywyssogyon Freine ar neilltu ac na chauas na phorth na nerth** *after he had set forth the case to each of the chiefs of France separately and got neither help nor support* RB. II. 74.

237. **na**, before vowel **nac** (cf. Ir. *nāch*-); with infixed pronouns **na-m-** etc. **na(c)** is used:—

(a) As the negative with the imperative, e.g. **na dos** *do not go*; **nac amouyn** *amdanaw do not ask about it*. **na** is also sometimes found with the subjunctive used in an imperative sense, e.g. **na discynnych** *do not dismount* WB. 399.

(b) In negative answers to questions (§ 241).

(c) Not preceded by a question, in vivid negation, e.g. **dyret y uwytta, heb ef. nac af** *y prof a Duw, heb hi "come to eat," said he. "I will not go, between God and me," said she* RB. 289; **eres yw gennyf na uedrut gymedroli ar wneuthur esgidyeu wrth uessur. na uedreis**, *heb ynteu. mi ae metraf weithon "I am surprised that thou couldst not succeed in making shoes by measurement."* *"I could not," said he; "I shall be able to do it now"* RB. 70; **erchi a oruc y iarll y Enit ymdiarhenu a chymryt gwisg arall ymdanei. na uynnaf** *y prof a Duw, heb hi the earl asked Enid to unrobe*

*herself and put on another dress. "I will not, between God and me," said she.*

NOTE.—For a similar usage in the other British languages and in Irish see the "Transactions of the London Philological Society" 1898-9, page 54, note.

**238. na**, disjunctive particle; before vowels **nac**; with the article **nar**; with infixed possessive adjectives **nam**, **nath**, **nae** etc., e.g. tegach oed noc y gallei neb y gredu **nae** dywedut *he was fairer than anyone could believe or tell* CM. 1; heb wybot dim or vrat **nae** thybyaw *without knowing or suspecting anything of the treachery* RB. II. 218; **na—na**, e.g. ny byd reit itt torri **na** gwaew **na** chledyf *there will be no need for thee to break either spear or sword*; y Duw y dygaf vyg kyffes **nae** werthu **nae** ellwng nas gwnaf i *I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56; beth bynnac a uo y marchawc racco **na** byw **na** marw *whatever becomes of yonder knight, whether he lives or dies* RB. 289; py beth bynhac a gaffer drwy **na** thwyll **na** chedernit *whatever is got through treachery or force* RB. II. 206; pan dycko beich **na** mawr **na** bychan uo *when he brings a load whether it be great or small* RB. 109.

## INTERROGATIVE AND RESPONSIVE PARTICLES.

### INTERROGATIVE PARTICLES.

**239. a**; with the present of the copula **ae** (§ 155η).

(a) In direct questions, e.g. **a** weleist di varchawc *hast thou seen a horseman?* **ae** amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu *is it time for us to go to table?*

(b) In indirect questions, e.g. govyn a oruc y gwr y Peredur **a** wydyat llad a chledyf *the man asked Peredur whether he knew to smite with a sword*; edrych a oruc **a** yttoed ef yn deffroi *she looked to see if he was stirring.*

(c) **ae—ae** *whether—or*, e.g. yn amheu beth a dywedei **ae** gwir **ae** geu *doubting whether what he said was true or false* RB. II. 47; e kefreyth a deueyt bod en yaun provy **ae** moruyn **ae** nyt



moruyn *the law says it is right to try whether she is a maiden or whether she is not a maiden* BCh. p. 40; ny wydyat hitheu beth a wnaei . . . **ae** dywedut hynny **ae** tewi *she did not know what she should do, whether she should tell that or keep silent* R.B. 270; *either—or*, e.g. a uynny di **ae** diawt **ae** dim *dost thou desire drink or anything?* RB. 276; a thebic yw genhyf i na doeth y wrthunt heb lad **ae** rei onadunt **ae** cwbyl *and I think that he did not leave them without slaying either some or all of them* WB. p. 221.

**240. pony** (= Ir. cani), before vowels **ponyt**; with the present of the copula **ponyt** = *nonne?* e.g. **pony** chlywy di *dost thou not hear?* RB. 272; **ponyt** oed iawn y titheu *would it not be right for thee?* RB. 246.

#### RESPONSIVE PARTICLES.

**241.** In answers to questions the verb or the predicate noun is often repeated, e.g. a gaffaf i letty gennyti ti, heb y Peredur. **keffy**, heb ynteu, yn llawen “*shall I get a lodging with thee?*” said Peredur. “*Yes,*” said he, “*gladly*”; a yttiwi Kei yn llys Arthur. Yttiwi “*is Kei in Arthur’s court?*” “*Yes*”; **ae** amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu. **amser** “*is it time for us to go to table?*” “*Yes.*” In negative answers **na(c)** is used, e.g. a atwaenost di y marchawc racco mawr. **nac atwen** “*knowest thou yonder great horseman?*” “*No*”; dywet, heb ef, a vu ef gennyti a gwneuthur anuod arnat. **na vu**, myn vylg cret, heb hi, na cham nys goruc ym “*tell me,*” said he, “*was he with thee and did he do violence to thee?*” “*No,*” said she, “*and he did me no wrong*”; **ae** byw. **na vylw** “*is he alive?*” “*No.*” In answer to **ae**, **nac ef** (= Mod.W. **nage**) is found, e.g. dywet unbenn, heb ef, **ae** o anwybot **ae** o ryfyc y keissut ti colli ohonof i vyl mreint . . . **nac ef**, heb y Gereint, ny wydywn i kaethu fford y neb “*tell me, sir, is it through ignorance or arrogance that thou didst seek to make me lose my privilege?*” “*No,*” said Gereint, “*I did not know that the road was debarred to any one*” WB. p. 217.

NOTE.—**nac ef** is also found without a preceding question, e.g. arhowch vi yma, heb y Peredur, mi a af y ymwelet ar pryl. **nac ef**, arglwyd, heb wynt, awn y gyt y ymlad ar pryl “*wait for me here,*” said Peredur, “*I will go to visit the worm.*” “*Nay, lord,*” said they, “*let us go together to fight with the worm.*”

242. Certain particles are used in answer.

**ie, ieu**, affirmatively, e.g. *ae gwr y Arthur wyt ti. Ie myn vyg kret, heb y Peredur "art thou one of Arthur's men?" "Yes, by my faith," said Peredur; gouyn a wnaeth ef yr gwr . . . ae offeiryat oed ef. Ieu arglwyd, heb ynteu he asked the man if he was a priest. "Yes, Lord," said he.*

**do** (cf. Ir. *tō*) affirmative, **nado** (Ir. *nā thō*) negatively, in answer to a preterite (or pluperfect of indirect question), e.g. *a unben, heb ef, a leweist ti dy ginnyaw. do, heb ef "Sir," said he, "hast thou eaten thy dinner?" "Yes," said he; deffroi a oruc Arthur a gofyn a gysgassei hayach. do arglwyd, heb yr Owein, dalym Arthur awoke and asked if he had slept for some time. "Yes," said Owein, "for a while." a vwyteeist di dim hediw. nado, heb ynteu "hast thou eaten anything to-day?" "No," said he.*

NOTE.—Both **ie, ieu** and **nado** are found without a preceding question, e.g. *ar hýnny llýma hitheu ýr iarllles ýn datlewygu. ie, heb hi, ae kychwyn a uýnný ti. ie, heb ef thereupon to the countess recovered from her swoon. "Really," said she "dost thou desire to set forth?" "Yes," said he WB. 119; ie (=ieu RB. 210), heb y Peredur, ýma y býdwn heno "truly," said Peredur, we will remain here to-night" WB. 139; mi a debygaf...na cheueist na bwyd na diawt. nado yrof a Duw, heb ynteu "I think that thou hast got neither food nor drink." "No, between God and me," said he RB. 275.*

## THE INTERJECTION.

243. Interjections proper are :—

**a, ha** (= Ir. *ā*), in address, e.g. *a vorwýn, heb y Peredur, a doý ti ý dangos imi ýr anieuil hwinnw "maiden," said Peredur, "wilt thou come to shew me that beast?" ha (=a WB. 169) unbenn, heb y uorwyn, pei gwnelut vyg kyghor . . . ti a gaeut y drws "Lord," said the maiden, "if thou wouldst follow my advice, thou wouldst shut the door" RB. 235.*

**oi a**, e.g. *oi a uorwyn dec a bery di bot vym march i am arueu yn vn lletty a mi heno hark! my fair maid, wilt thou see that my horse and my arms are in the same lodging with me to-night? RB. 217; dyhed a beth bot gwr kystal a thi heb gedymdeith;*

**oi a wrda** y mae y mi gedymdeith "*it is a strange thing that a man like thee should have no companion.*" "*But, my lord, I have a companion*" RB. 127.

**oian a**, e.g. **oian a parchellan** a parchell dedwit *ho! little pig, happy pig* BB. 26<sup>b</sup>.

**och**, e.g. **och Iessu** na dýffv wý nihenit kým dýffod ar wi llave lleith mab Guendit *O Jesus that my end had come before the death of Gwendydd's son came upon my hand* BB. 25<sup>b</sup>; **och**, heb y Riannon, paham y rody di atteb uelly "*alas!*" said Riannon, "*why dost thou answer thus?*" RB. 13; erchi y vedyth a wnaeth; **och a truan**, heb ef, ny dylyy gaffel bendyth *he asked him for his blessing.* "*Unhappy wretch,*" said he, "*thou dost not deserve a blessing*" RB. 236.

**ub**, e.g. neu chwithew pwý ýwch. kenhadeu Arthur ýssýd ýma yn erchi Olwenn; **vb wyr** nawd dýw ragoch, ýr ý být na wnewch hýnný "*and who are you?*" "*Messengers of Arthur that are here seeking Olwen.*" "*Alack! men, God preserve you. For the world do not do that*" WB. 473.

**244.** Of an interjectional character are the following ;—**llyma** *lo here!* (like Fr. **voici**), e.g. **llyma** weithon ual ýd hellawd Arthur ý carw *Lo now! this is how Arthur hunted the stag* WB. 402; **llyma** ý uorwýn ý kefeist ti dy warthrud oe achaws *See here is the maiden on whose account thou didst get thy shame* WB. 407. Also **llyman** RB. 87, WB. 185, p. 92<sup>b</sup>; **llyna** *lo there!* (like Fr. **voilà**), e.g. **llyna** ýssýd iawnaſ am hýnný *Lo! that is the fairest course with reference to that* WB. 406; ie vorwýn, heb y Kei, **llyna** vedru ýn drwc "*Indeed, woman,*" said Kei, "*that is ill behaviour*" WB. 123; **nachaf** *lo! behold!* e.g. **nachaf** uarchawc yn dyuot yr porth *behold a horseman coming to the gate* RB. 233; **wely dy** (lit. *dost thou see?*) *lo! behold!* e.g. **wely dý** racco (= **weluch chwi** racw WB. p. 94<sup>a</sup>) ý gaer *Lo! yonder is the city* WB. 185.

# A Middle-Welsh Reader



## I. LEAR AND HIS DAUGHTERS.<sup>a</sup>

### FROM THE RED BOOK OF HERGEST.

1. Ac yna gŵedy marŵ Bleiddut y drychafwyt<sup>1</sup> Lyr y vab ynteu yn vrenhin. A thrugein<sup>2</sup> mlyned y bu yn llywyaŵ y vrenhinyaeth<sup>3</sup> yn wraŵl, ac a adeilŵys dinas ar auon Soram, ac ae gelŵis Kaer Lyr; ac yn Saesnec y gelŵir Leissestyr. Ac ny bu idaŵ un mab namyn teir merchet. Sef oed 5 enŵeu y verchet:<sup>4</sup> Goronilla, Ragaŵ,<sup>5</sup> Cordeilla. A diruaŵr y karei eu tat ŵynt, a mŵyaf eissoes y karei y verch jeuaŵ idaŵ Cordeilla.

2. A phan yttoed yn llithraŵ parth ae henein,<sup>1</sup> medylŵaŵ a wnaeth pa ŵed y gadawei<sup>2</sup> y gyuoeth gŵedy ef y<sup>3</sup> verchet. 10 Sef a ŵnaeth profi pŵy vŵyaf oe verchet ae karei, ŵrth rodi idi y ran oreu or kyuoeth gan wr. A galŵ a ŵn[a]eth<sup>4</sup> attaŵ y verch hynaf idaŵ Goronilla, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi efo.<sup>5</sup> A thygu a ŵnaeth hitheu y<sup>6</sup> nef a<sup>7</sup> daear<sup>8</sup> bot yn vŵy y karei hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chredu a 15 ŵnaeth ynteu idi<sup>9</sup> hynny, a dyŵedut,<sup>10</sup> kan oed kymeint<sup>11</sup> y karei hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean<sup>12</sup> y gyuoeth genti hi y ŵr<sup>13</sup> a deŵissei yn ynys Prydein.

3. Ac yn ol honno galŵ attaŵ Ragua<sup>1</sup> y verch eil hynaf idaŵ, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi euo. A thygu a 20 ŵnaeth hitheu y gyuoethu y nef ar daear<sup>2</sup> na allei hi<sup>3</sup> dyŵedut ar y thauaŵtleueryd pa veint y karei hi euo.<sup>4</sup> A chredu a ŵnaeth ynteu hynny, ac adaŵ idi hitheu y rodi<sup>5</sup> yr gŵr a deŵissei, a thraean<sup>6</sup> y gyuoeth<sup>7</sup> genti.

<sup>a</sup> Letters enclosed in square brackets [ ] are wanting in the MS.

#### VARIANTS FROM BRITISH MUSEUM, ADDITIONAL 19,707.

Ch. 1.—1 drycheuit 2 thrugeint 3 yn y llywaŵ hi 4 eu henweu 5 ragau

Ch. 2.—1 a heneint 2 yd adaŵei 3 yŵ 4 wnaeth 5 ef 6 yr 7 ar 8 dayaer 9 idi hi 10 dywedut ŵrthi 11 gymeint 12 drayan 13 yr gŵr

Ch. 3.—1 ragau 2 dayar 3 om. 4 y karhei 5 y rodei hi (hi *over line*) 6 thrayan 7 kyfoeth

4. Ac yna y gelŵis<sup>1</sup> y verch jeuaf idaŵ attaŵ, a gouyn idi pa veint y karei hi euo.<sup>2</sup> A dyŵedut a ŵnaeth hitheu y rygaru<sup>3</sup> ef eiryoet<sup>4</sup> megys y dyliei uerch garu y that, ac nat ytoed etŵa<sup>5</sup> yn peidaŵ ar karyant hŵnnŵ<sup>a</sup> ac erchi  
5 idaŵ gŵarandaŵ yn graff pa veint oed hynny. A sef<sup>6</sup> oed hynny, y<sup>7</sup> veint y bei y gyuoeth ae jechyt ae deŵred. A blyghau a lldiaŵ<sup>8</sup> a oruc ynteu, a dyŵedut ŵrthi, kan oed kymeint y tremygassei euo<sup>9</sup> a hynny, val na charei<sup>10</sup> hi euo megys y karei y chwioryd ereill,<sup>11</sup> y diuarnei ynteu hi hyt  
10 na<sup>b</sup> chaffei neb ryŵ ran or ynys y gyt ac ŵynteu. Ny dyŵat<sup>12</sup> ynteu nas rodei hi<sup>13</sup> y wr ny hanffeic<sup>c</sup> or ynys, o damŵeinei yr kyfryŵ ŵr hŵnnŵ y herchi heb argyfreu genti. Hyn heuyt a gadarnhaei hyt na lauuryei y geissaŵ gŵr idi megys yr rei ereill.<sup>14</sup> Kanys mŵy y  
15 karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet,<sup>15</sup> a hitheu yn y dremygu ynteu<sup>16</sup> yn vŵy nor rei ereill.<sup>17</sup>

5. A heb ohir o gytgyghor y wyrda y rodes y dŵy verchet hynaf idaŵ y dywyssogyon<sup>1</sup> yr Alban a Chernyŵ, a hanner y gyuoeth<sup>2</sup> gantunt hyt tra [vei]<sup>3</sup> vyŵ ef, a  
20 gŵedy bei varŵ, y kyoueth gantunt<sup>4</sup> yn deu haner. Ac yna gŵedy clybot o Aganipus vrenhin Freinc clot a phryt a thegŵch Cordeilla, anuon kenadeu a ŵnaeth oe herchi yn wreic idaŵ, a dyŵedut ŵrth y that y genadŵri.<sup>a</sup> Ac ynteu a dyŵaŵt<sup>5</sup> y rodei y verch idaŵ ef heb argyfreu  
25 genti,<sup>6</sup> kan daroed idaŵ rodi y gyuoeth ae eur ae aryant y<sup>7</sup> dŵy verchet ereill.<sup>8</sup> A phan gogleu Aganipus tecket y vorŵyn,<sup>9</sup> kyflaŵn vu oe charyat. A dy[ŵ]edut<sup>10</sup> a wnaeth bot idaŵ ef digaŵn o eur ac aryant, ac nat oed reit idaŵ ef ŵrth dim namyn gŵreic delediŵ<sup>11</sup> dylyedaŵc y kaffei blant

Ch. 4.—1 y gelwis ynteu 2 y karei ef 3 ac y dywawt hitheu y karei 4 eiroet 5 *om.* <sup>a</sup>karyat hŵnnŵ 6 ac ysef 7 yny 8 a lldiaŵ *om.* 9 hi euo 10 ual y karei 11 megys y chŵioryd y lleill <sup>b</sup>dyuarnei ynteu hi na 12 dywaŵt 13 na rodei ef hi <sup>c</sup>hanfei 14 megys y lleill 15 hihi nor lleill 16 tremygu ef 17 nor lleill

Ch. 5.—1 tywyssogyon 2 y kyfoeth idaŵ 3 tra uei 4 yn gŵbyl udunt ŵynteu <sup>a</sup>genadŵri 5 ac y dywaŵt ynteu 6 *om.* 7 gan y 8 y lleill 9 ae thelediwet *add.* 10 dywedut 11 telediŵ

ohane<sup>12</sup> yn etiued ar y kyuoeth. Ac yn diannot<sup>13</sup> y kadarnhaŷt y briodas y rygtunt.<sup>14</sup>

6. Ac ym pen yspeit yg kylch diŷed oes Lyr y goresgynnŷys y dofyon y ran or kyuoeth<sup>1</sup> a ganhalassei<sup>2</sup> ef yn ŷraŷl drŷy hir o<sup>3</sup> amser; ac y rannassant y rygtunt 5 yn deu hanner. Ac o gymodloned y kymmerth Maglaŷn tyŷyssaŷc yr Alban Lyr attaŷ a deugein marchaŷc y gyt ac ef, rac bot yn geŷilid gantaŷ bot heb varchogyon yn<sup>4</sup> y osgord. A gŷedy bot Lyr yn y wed honno gyt a Maglaŷn, blyghau a oruc Cordeilla<sup>5</sup> rac meint oed<sup>6</sup> o 10 varchogyon gyt ae that,<sup>7</sup> ac rac eu gŷasanaethŷyr ŷynteu yn teruysgu y llys. A dyŷedut a ŷnaeth ŷrth y gŷr bot yn<sup>8</sup> digaŷn deg marchaŷc ar hugeint gyt ae that, a gellŷg y rei ereill ymdeith. A gŷedy dyŷedut hynny ŷrth Lyr, lldiaŷ a oruc, ac ymadaŷ a Maglaŷn, a mynet 15 hyt at arll Kernyŷ y daŷ y llall; ae erbynyeit o hŷnnŷ yn anrydedus.

7. Ac ny bu benn y vlŷydyn yny daruu teruysc y rwg eu gŷasanaethwyr. Ac ŷrth hynny y sorres Ragua y verch ŷrthaŷ, ac erchi idaŷ ellŷg y varchogyon y ŷrthaŷ 20 eithyr pump marchaŷc ae gŷasanaethei. A thristaŷ a ŷnaeth Lyr yna yn vaŷr, a chychŷyn ody na elchŷyl hyt at y verch yr hynaf idaŷ, o dybygu trugarhau ohonaei ŷrthaŷ oe gynnal ae varchogyon y gyt ac ef. Sef a ŷnaeth hitheu drŷy y llit tygu y gyuoetheu nef a dayar 25 na chaffei ohir, ony ellygei y holl varchogyon y ŷrthaŷ eithyr vn y gyt ac ef ae gŷasanaethei; a dy[ŷ]edut nat oed reit y wr kyuoet ac euo vn lluosogrŷyd y gyt ac ef, na theulu namyn vn gŷr ae goassanaethei. A gŷedy na chaffei dim or a geissei gan y verchet, ellŷg y varchogyon 30 a ŷnaeth eithir vn y gyt ac ef.

Ch. 5.—12 ohonei 12 dianot 13 y rydunt

Ch. 6.—1 ŷ dofyon arnaŷ y gyfoeth 2 gynhalassei 3 *om.* 4 ŷrth 5 Goronilla *recte* 6 a oed 7 gyt ac ef 8 *from here to* ody no (ch. 10, 1. 7) *om.*



8. A gŵedy bot velly rynaŵd, dŵyn ar gof a oruc y gyuoeth ae deilygdaŵt ae anrydet ae vedyant, a thristau yn vaŵr, a medylŵaŵ gofŵy y verch a athoed y Freinc idaŵ. Ac ovynhau hynny heuyt a ŵnaeth rac mor digaryat y  
 5 gellygassei ef hi y ŵrthaŵ; ac eissoes ny allŵys diodef y dianrydedu mal y daroed. A chychŵyn tu a Ffreinc a ŵnaeth.

9. A phan ytoed yn mynet yr llog ac na ŵelei neb y gyt ac ef namyn ar y drydyd, gan ŵylaŵ y dyŵaŵt yr  
 10 ymadraŵd hŵnn: "Ae chŵichŵi tyghetuennu! pa le y kerdŵch chŵi dros aŵch gnotaedic hynt? Pa achaŵs y kyffroassaŵch chŵi vivi eiryoet y ar vyg gŵastat detwydŷt? Kanys mŵy boen yŵ koffau kyuoeth gŵedy coller, na chyt diodef achenoctit heb ordyfneit kyuoeth kyn no  
 15 hynny. Mŵy boen yŵ genyf i yr aŵr hon goffav uyg kyuoeth am anryded yn yr amser hŵnnŵ, yn yr hŵn yd oed y saŵl gan mil o varchogyon ym damgylchynu yn kerdet y gyt a mi, pan vydŵn yn ymlad ar kestyl ac ar dinassoed ac yn anreithaŵ kyuoeth vyg gelynyon, no  
 20 diodef y poen ar achenoctit a ŵnaeth y gŵyr hynn y mi, y rei a udynt yna dan vyn traen.<sup>a</sup> Och vi, a dŵyweu nef a dayar! pa bryt y daŵ yr amser y gallŵyf y talu elchŵyl yn y gŵrthŵyneb yr gŵyr hynn? Och Cordeilla vyg karedic verch! mor wir yŵ dy ymadraŵd teu di,  
 25 pan dyŵedeist panyŵ val y bei vyg gallu am medyant am kyuoeth am jeuegtit, panyŵ velly y karut ti vyui! Ac ŵrth hynny, tra vu vyg kyuoeth i yn gallu rodi rodyon, paŵb am karei; ac nyt mi a gerynt namyn vy rodyon am deuodeu am donyeu. Ac ŵrth hynny, pan gilyŵys y  
 30 rodyon, y foes y karyat. Ac ŵrth hynny pa ffuruf y gallaf rac keŵilyd adolŵyn nerth na chanhorthŵy y genyt ti, ŵrth rysorri yg kam ohonaf i ŵrthyt ti am dy doethineb

<sup>a</sup> *leg. traet.*

di, ath rodi yn dremygedic gan debygu bot yn waeth dy diŵed noth whioryd ereill, a thitheu yn well ac yn doethach noc ŷyntŷy? Kanys gŵedy a rodeis i o da a chyuoeth udunt hŷy, y gŵnaethant hŷy vyui yn alltut ac yn echenaŵc om gŵlat am kyuoeth.”

5

10. Ac y dan gŵynaŵ y aghyfnerth ofut yn y wed honno ef a doeth hyt ym Paris, y dinas yd oed y verch yndaŵ. Ac anuon amylder o annercheu at y verch a ŵnaeth y dyŵedut y ryŵ agkyfreith a gyuaruu ac ef. A gŵedy dyŵedut or gennat nat oed namy[n] ef ae [y]swein, sef a 10 wnaeth hit[h]eu anuon amylder o eur ac aryant, ac erchi mynet ae that odyo hyt y myŵn<sup>1</sup> dinas arall, a chymryt arnaŵ y vot yn glaf, a gŵneuthur enneint idaw, ac ardymheru y gorff a symudaŵ<sup>2</sup> dillat, a chymryt attaŵ deugein marchaŵc ac eu kŵeiraŵ<sup>3</sup> yn hard ac yn syberŵ<sup>4</sup> o veirch<sup>5</sup> a 15 dillat ac arueu; a gŵedy darffei hynny, anuon oe ulaen at<sup>6</sup> Aganipus vrenhin ac at<sup>6</sup> y uerch y dyŵedut y vot yn dyuot. A gŵedy daruot gŵneuthur kymeint ac a archyssei,<sup>7</sup> anuon a ŵnaeth llythyreu<sup>8</sup> at y brenhin<sup>a</sup> ac at y verch ynteu y dyŵedut<sup>9</sup> y uot<sup>10</sup> yn dyuot<sup>11</sup> ar y deugeinuot o varchogyon<sup>12</sup> 20 gŵedy y<sup>13</sup> rydehol oe dofyon o ynys Prydein, yn dyuot y geissaŵ porth gantunt ŷynteu<sup>13</sup> y oresgyn y gyfoeth dracheuen.<sup>14</sup> A phan gogleu y brenhin hynny, kychŷyn a ŵnaeth ef ae wreic ae deulu<sup>15</sup> yn y erbyn<sup>16</sup> yn anrydedus, mal yd oed deilŵg<sup>17</sup> erbyneit<sup>18</sup> gŵr a uei yn gyhyt ac euo<sup>19</sup> 25 yn vrenhin ar ynys Prydein. A hyt tra uu yn Freinc, y rodes y brenhin lywodraeth<sup>20</sup> y gyuoeth<sup>21</sup> idaŵ, mal<sup>22</sup> y bei haŵs idaŵ caffel porth a nerth y oresgyn y gyuoeth drachefyn.<sup>23</sup>

11. Ac yna yd anuonet gŵys dros ŷyneb teyrnas Freinc

Ch. 10.—1 hyt yn 2 y *add.* 3 kyweiraŵ 4 yn hard syberŵ 5 veiryeh 6 ar 7 kymeint a hynny 8 llyr <sup>a</sup>brenhin 9 ynteu y dywedut *om.* 10 ef *add.* 11 yn dyuot *om.* 12 deugeinuot marchaŵc 13 *om.* 14 kyuoeth drachefyn 15 teulu 16 yn erbyn llyr 17 teilŵg 18 erbyneit 19 ef 20 llywodraeth 21 kyuoeth 22 val 23 idaŵ ef *add.*

y gynulla<sup>1</sup> hoſſ deored y uynet<sup>2</sup> gyt a Lyr y oresgyn y  
gyuoeth<sup>3</sup> drachefyn ida<sup>4</sup>. A gŵedy bot pob peth yn  
bara<sup>5</sup>t, kychŷyn a oruc Lyr a Chordeilla y verch ar llu  
hŷnn<sup>6</sup> gantunt, a cherdet yny doethant y ynys Prydein,  
5 ac yn diannot ymlad ae dofyon a chael<sup>4</sup> y fudugolyaeth.  
A gŵedy gŵedu pob peth or ynys ida<sup>6</sup> ef<sup>5</sup> i<sup>6</sup> bu var<sup>6</sup> Lyr  
yn y dryded vlŷdyn; ac y bu [var<sup>6</sup>]<sup>7</sup> Aganipus vrenhin  
Freinc. Ac yna y kymerth Cordeilla llybodaeth y  
deyrnas<sup>8</sup> yn y lla<sup>6</sup> ehun. Ac y cladŷyt Lyr y my<sup>6</sup>n  
10 dayardy<sup>a</sup> a ŷnaeth ehun y dan auon Sorram. Ar demyl<sup>b</sup>  
honno ry ŷnathoed<sup>9</sup> yn anryded yr du<sup>6</sup> a elŷit yna<sup>10</sup>  
Bifrontisiani. A phan delei wylua y demyl<sup>11</sup> honno, y  
deuei hoſſ grefydŷyr y dinas ar wlat oe anrydedu. Ac y  
dechreuit<sup>c</sup> pob gŵeith or a dechreuit hyt ym pen y  
15 vlŷdyn. A gŵedy gŵledychu pump<sup>12</sup> mlyned o Gordeilla  
yn dagnouedus,<sup>13</sup> y kyuodes y deu nyeint yn y herbyn,  
Morgan<sup>14</sup> vab Magla<sup>6</sup>n tyŷyssa<sup>6</sup>c yr Alban, a Chuned<sup>15</sup>  
vab Henwyn tyŷyssa<sup>6</sup>c Kernyw, a llu arua<sup>6</sup>c gantunt.  
A daly Cordeilla a ŷnaethant ae charcharu.<sup>16</sup> Ac yn y  
20 carchar hŷnn<sup>6</sup><sup>17</sup> o dolur kolli y kyuoeth<sup>18</sup> y gŷnaeth ehun  
y lleith.

Ch. 11.—1 y *add.* 2 ŷrth eu hellŷg y 3 kyfoeth 4 chaffel 5 *om.* 6 y  
7 var<sup>6</sup> 8 teyrnas <sup>a</sup>dayarty <sup>b</sup>temyl 9 a ŷnathoed ehun 10 ena  
11 demhyl <sup>c</sup>dechrewit 12 pvm (*but a stroke has been added below as if*  
*to change v to y*) 13 dagneuedus 14 Margan 15 Chueda 16 A—  
charcharu: ae daly ae charcharu 17 hvnv 18 chyfoeth

## II. THE STORY OF ARTHUR.

## FROM THE RED BOOK OF HERGEST.

1. A gŵedy marŵ Uthur Pendragon yd ymgynnullasant holl wyrda ynys Prydein, jeirll a barŵneit<sup>1</sup> a marchogyon vrdaŵl a<sup>2</sup> escyb ac abadeu ac athraŵon hyt yg Kaer Vudei. Ac o gytsynyedigaeth paŵb yd archyssant y Dyfric archescob Kaer Lion ar Wysc vrdaŵ Arthur y vab 5 ynteu<sup>2</sup> yn vrenhin. Ac eu hagen ae kymhellei y hynny. Kanys pan gogleu y Saeson marŵolyaeth<sup>3</sup> Vthur Pendragon,<sup>4</sup> yd ellygyssynt ŵynteu genadeu hyt yn Germania y geissaŵ porth. Ac neur dathoed<sup>5</sup> llyghes vaŵr attunt, a Cholgrim yn tyŵyssaŵc<sup>6</sup> arnadunt. Ac neur daroed 10 udunt goreskyn<sup>7</sup> o Humyr hyt y mor a Chatyneis<sup>8</sup> yn y gogled. Sef oed hynny y dryded rann y ynys Prydein. A gŵedy gŵelet o Dyfric archescob drueni y bobyl ae hymdiuedi, ef a gymerth escyb y gyt ac ef, ac a dodes coron y teyrnas am ben Arthur. A phymthegmlŵyd oed 15 Arthur yna, ac ny chlyŵsit ar neb arall eiryoet<sup>9</sup> y deuodeu o deŵred a haelder a oed arnaŵ ef. Idaŵ ef hefyt yd enillyssei y dayoni anyanaŵl a oed arnaŵ y veint rat honno, hyt pan oed garedic ef gan baŵb or a glyŵei<sup>10</sup> dyŵetut amdanaŵ.<sup>11</sup> Ac ŵrth hynny gŵedy y arderchockau 20 ef or vrenhinaŵl enryded hŵnnŵ, gan gadŵ ohonaŵ y gnotaedic<sup>12</sup> defaŵt a<sup>13</sup> ymrodes y haelder. Ac odyna kymeint o amylder marchogyon a lithrei attaŵ, a megys y dyffyggei idaŵ da y rodi<sup>14</sup> udunt yn vynyach. Aceissoes

## VARIANTS FROM BRITISH MUSEUM, ADDITIONAL 19,707.

(Ch. 1). 1 barvnyeit, 2 arthur ap vthyr, 3 marwolaeth, 4 bendragon, 5 dothoed, 6 dywyasave, 7 gverescyn, 8 mor kateneis, 9 eiroet, 10 glyŵhei, 11 ymdanav anwaethach or ae gŵelei, 12 nottaedic, 13 ef a, 14 rodei,

py dió bynhac y bo haelder anyanaól y gyt a phrofedic<sup>15</sup> volyant, kyt bo eisseu arnaó ar dalym,<sup>16</sup> yr hynny ny at Duó wastat aghenocitit y argyóedu idaó.

2. Ac órth hynny Arthur, kanys molyant a getym-  
 5 deithockaei<sup>1</sup> haelder a dayoni, llunyaethu ryfel a oruc ar y Saeson; hyt pan vei oc eu golut hóy<sup>2</sup> y kyfoethogei ynteu y teulu ae varchogyon. Kanys iaónder a dyskei hynny idaó; kanys ef a dyliei o dreftataól dyllet hoł lywodraeth ynys Prydein. A chynnullaó a oruc ef yr hoł ieuencitit  
 10 a oed darystygedic idaó ef, a chyrchu parth a Chaer Effraó.<sup>3</sup> A góedy góybot o Golgrim hynny, kynullaó a oruc ynteu y Saeson ar Yscotteit ar Ffichteit, ac y gyt ac<sup>4</sup> aneiryf luossogróyd nifer gantaó dyuot yn erbyn Arthur hyt yg glan Dulas. A góedy ymgyfaruot yna  
 15 o bop<sup>5</sup> parth y dygóydassant llaóer or deu lu. Ac or diwed Arthur a gafas y vudugolyaeth. A ffo a oruc Colgrim<sup>6</sup> y dinas Kaer Efraó. Arthur ae lu a gychwynóys<sup>7</sup> ac a werchetwis<sup>8</sup> arnaó.

3. A góedy clybot o Baldó<sup>1</sup> y vraót ynteu<sup>2</sup> hynny,<sup>3</sup> ef  
 20 a gyrchaó tu ar lle yd oed y vraót yg góarchae,<sup>4</sup> a chló mil o wyr gantaó y geissaó y rydhau odyo. Kanys yr amser yd ymladyssai<sup>5</sup> Arthur ae vraót ef, yd oed Baldó<sup>6</sup> yna ar lan y mor yn aros<sup>7</sup> dyuot Chledric<sup>8</sup> o Germania, a oed yn dyuot a phorth gantaó udunt. Ac órth hynny  
 25 góedy y dyuot ar<sup>9</sup> dec milltir y órth y gaer, darparu a oruc dóyn kyrch nos am ben Arthur ae lu. Ac eissoes nyt ymgelaó<sup>10</sup> hynny rac Arthur. Yna<sup>11</sup> yd erchis ynteu y Gadó<sup>12</sup> tyóyssaó<sup>13</sup> Kernyó kymryt whe chant marchaó a their mil o bedyt<sup>14</sup> y gyt ac ef a mynet yn

(Ch.) 1. 15 phrouygedic, 16 talym

(Ch. 2). 1 gytymdeithoccae, 2 óy, 3 efraó, 4 om., 5 pop, 6 golgrim, 7 gylchynóys y dinas, 8 ae góarchetwis

(Ch. 3). 1 baldvlf, 2 om., 3 y warchae, 4 yg gvarchae om., 5 ymladyssai, 6 valdvlf, 7 arhos, 8 cheldric, 9 hyt ar, 10 ymgelvys, 11 om., 12 kadvr, 13 iarll, 14 pedyd

eu herbyn, ac eu ragot y nos honno y fford y doynt. A gŵedy kaffel o Gadŵr gŵybot y fford y doynt y gelynyon, eu kyrchu a oruc Kadŵr yn deissyfyt. A gŵedy briŵaŵ eu bydinoed ac eu hyssigaŵ a llad llaber onadunt, kymell y Saeson a oruc ar ffo.

5

4. Ac ŵrth hynny diruaŵr dristyt a gofal a gymerth Baldŵf<sup>1</sup> yndaŵ,<sup>2</sup> ŵrth na allŵys ellŵg<sup>3</sup> y vraŵt or gŵarchae yd oed yndaŵ. A medyliaŵ a oruc py wed y gallei gaffel<sup>4</sup> kyffur<sup>5</sup> y<sup>6</sup> ymdidan ae vraŵt; kanys ef a dybygei y kaffei bop<sup>7</sup> un onadunt<sup>8</sup> ell deu rydit a gŵaret yn hollaŵl, pei<sup>9</sup> 10 keffynt ymdidan y gyt. A gŵedy na chaffei fford arall yn y byt, eillaŵ y wallt<sup>10</sup> ae varyf a oruc, a chymryt telyn yn y laŵ, ac yn rith erestyn a gŵaryyd dyuot ym plith y llw ar lluesteu. Ar clymeu<sup>11</sup> a ganei ef a dangossynt y vot yn telynyaŵr.<sup>12</sup> Ac or diwed gŵedy na thybygei neb 15 y uot ef yn tywyssaŵc falst mal yd oed, nessau a oruc parth a muroed y gaer dan ganu y telyn. A gŵedy y adnabot or gŵyr o vyŵn, y dynu<sup>13</sup> a orugant ŵrth raffeu y myŵn. A gŵedy gŵelet ohonaŵ y vraŵt, ymgaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt<sup>14</sup> drŵy laŵer o yspeit kyn 20 no hynny. Ac val yd oedynt uelly yn medyliaŵ ac yn keissaŵ ystryŵ py wed y gellynt ymrydhau odyo, ac yn annobeithaŵ oe rydit, nachaf eu kenadeu yn dyuot o Germania, a whe chan llog yn llaŵn o varchogyon aruaŵc gantunt, a Cheldric yn dywyssaŵc arnadunt, ac yn 25 disgynu yn yr Alban.

5. A gŵedy clybot hynny o Arthur, ymadaŵ a oruc ynteu ar dinas rac petruster ymlad ar veint nifer honno,<sup>1</sup> a mynet odyo hyt yn Lundein. Ac yno galŵ attaŵ a oruc holl wyrda y deyrnas yscolheigon a lleygyon, ac 30

(Ch. 4). 1 baldwlf, 2 ac ynda, 3 gellŵg, 4 kaffel, 5 kyfrŵch 6 om., 7 kanys ef a tybygei pop, 8 ohonunt, 9 bei, 10 ben? 11 ar crychyadeu add., 12 telynaŵr 13 tynnu, 14 nar ymwelynt

(Ch. 5). 1 hynny

ymgyghor ac  ynt beth a wnelynt<sup>2</sup> am hynny. Sef a ga ssant o gyghor y k nsli h nn ; anuon kenadeu a orugant hyt ar Ho el<sup>3</sup> vab Emyr Lyda , brenhin Brytaen Vechan, y uenegi ida  yr ormes a dathoed gan y Paganyeit 5 ar<sup>4</sup> ynys Prydein. Kanys nei uab y<sup>5</sup> ch aer oed Howel<sup>3</sup> y Arthur. A g edy clybot o Howel<sup>3</sup> y ryfel ar aflonyd ch a oed ar y ewythyr, erchi parattoi llyges a oruc,<sup>6</sup> a chynulla  pymtheg mil o uarchogyon arua c. Ac ar y g ynt kyntaf a gafas yn y ol, y deuth y borth Ham nt 10 yr tir y<sup>7</sup> ynys Prydein. Ac Arthur ae haruolles ynteu or enryded y g edei aruol  g r kyfurd a h nn ; ac yn vyny h ymgaru<sup>8</sup> bop eilwers.

6. Ac odyna g edy l ithra  ychydic o dieuoed,<sup>1</sup>  ynt a gyrchassant parth a Chaer L ytcoet, yr hon [a elwir]<sup>2</sup> 15 Lincol yr a r honn, ac yssyd ossodedic yn y wlat a elwir Lindyseu ar benn mynyd r g d y auon. Ac  rth y gaer honno yd oed y Paganyeit yn eisted. A g edy eu dyuot yno y gyt ac eu h ll niferoed, ymlad a orugant ar Saeson. Ac aglywedic aerua a  naethant o honunt.<sup>3</sup> 20 Kanys chwe mil onadunt a dyg ydassant yn yr un dyd h nn . Rei oc eu l ad, ereill oc eu bodi<sup>4</sup> a g lassant eu heneideu. Ac  rth hynny rei<sup>5</sup> ereill yn gyfla n o ofyn ada  y dinas a orugant, a chymryt eu ffo<sup>6</sup> yn lle di gel ch udunt. Ac ny orffo ys ys Arthur oc eu hymlit hyt<sup>7</sup> yn 25 l  yn Kelydon. Ac yno ymgynull o bop lle a orugant oc eu fo,<sup>8</sup> a medyl a <sup>9</sup> g rth ynebu y Arthur. Ac odyna g edy dechreu ymlad, aerua a  naethant or Brytanyeit gan eu hamdiffyn ehunein yn wra l; kanys o wasca t y g yd yn eu kanhorth y yd oedynt yn aruer o daflu 30 ergytyeu,<sup>10</sup> ac y gochelynt  ynteu<sup>11</sup> ergytyeu y Brytanyeit.

(Ch. 5). 2 wnelhynt, 3 hvel, 4 y, 5 om., 6 a oruc om., 7 om., 8 yd amblygu y ymgaru

(Ch. 6). 1 dydyeu, 2 a elwir, 3 ohonu, 4 yn yr afonoed add., 5 y rei, 6 fo yn y lle, 7 hyt pan deuthant hyt, 8 oc eu fo a orugant, 9 odyno add., 10 kanys o wasgavt y gv d yn eu kanhorthlvy yd aruerynt, 11 om.

A phan welas Arthur hynny, yd erchis ynteu trychu y coet or parth hōnnó yr llōyn, a chymryt y kyffyon hynny ar traŵsprenneu<sup>12</sup> ac eu gossot yn eu kylch, ac eu gŵarchae yno megys na cheffynt vynet odyo, yny ymrodynt idaó, neu yny vydynt veiró o newyn. A 5  
 gŵedy daruot gŵneuthur y kae, y dodes Arthur y varchogyon yn vydinoed yg kylch y llōyn. Ac yno y buant uelly tri dieu a their nos. A phan welas y Saeson nat oed dim bōyt gantunt, rac eu maró oll o newyn ŵynt a odologyssant<sup>13</sup> y Arthur y<sup>14</sup> gellóg yn ryd 10  
 y eu llogeu y uynet y eu gŵlat; ac adaó idaó ynteu eu heur ac eu haryant ac eu hoŵl sóllt, a theyrnet idaó bop<sup>15</sup> blōydyn o Germania; a chadarnhau hynny gan rodi gŵystlon. Ac Arthur a gauas yn y gyghor kymryt hynny y gantunt, ac eu gellóg<sup>16</sup> y eu llogeu. 15

7. Ac ual<sup>1</sup> yd oedynt<sup>2</sup> yn rōygaó moroed yn mynet tu ae gŵlat, y bu ediuar gantunt gŵneuthur<sup>3</sup> yr amot hōnnó ac Arthur; a throssi eu hōyleu drachefyn parth ac ynys Prydein, a dyuot y draeth Totneis<sup>4</sup> yr tir, a dechreu anreithaó y gŵladoed hyt yn Hafren, a llad y tir- 20  
 diwollodron a orugant. Ac odyo y kymerassant eu hynt hyt yg Kaer Vadon, ac eisted ŵrth y gaer, ac ymlad a hi. A gŵedy menegi hynny<sup>5</sup> y Arthur, ryfedu a oruc meint eu tōyll ac eu hyskymundaót,<sup>6</sup> ac yn diannot crogi eu gŵystlon. Ac ymadaó a oruc ar Yscoteit ac ar 25  
 Ffichteit yd oed yn y<sup>7</sup> kywarsagu. A bryssyaó a oruc y distryó y Saeson. Goualus oed am adaó Howel ap<sup>8</sup> Emyr llydaó yn glaf yg Kaer Alclut o ŵrthróm heint. Ac or díed gŵedy dyuot hyt y lle y gŵelei y Saeson, y dywaót ef ual hyn: “Kany<sup>9</sup> bo teilóg gan yr 30  
 ysgymunedigyon Saeson<sup>10</sup> cadó ffyd ŵrthyf i,<sup>11</sup> miui

(Ch. 6). 12 traws, 13 adologyssant, 14 eu, 15 heuýt pop, 16 gollvg

(Ch. 7). 1 mal, 2 oedyn, 3 wneuthur, 4 traeth tutneis, 5 hyn, 6 hyseum-yndaót, 7 yny eu, 8 hvel mab, 9 kynny, 10 tvyllwyr anudonavl *add.*, 11 vrthym ni?



a gadóaf ffyd órth Duó; ac y gyt a hynny oe nerth<sup>12</sup> ynteu a dialaf hedió waet vyg kiótaótwyr arnadunt.<sup>13</sup> Góisgóch aóch arueu, wyr, góisgóch, ac yn óraól kyrchón y bratwyr hynn. Heb petruster<sup>14</sup> gan ganhorthóy Crist 5 ni a orfydón.'

8. A góedy dywedut o Arthur hynny, Dyfric archescob Kaer Lion ar Wysc a safaód ar ben bryn goruchel, a dywedut ual hynn a oruc: "Ha wyrda," heb ef, "y rei yssyd arderchaóc o gristonogaól ffyd ohonaóc, 10 kyuodóch; koffeóc waet aóch kiótawtóyr, yr hónn yssyd ellygedic dróy urat y Paganyeit racco; kanys tragýydaól waratwyd yó yóch, onyt ymrodóch y amdiffyn aóch gólat ach rydit. Ac órth hynny ymledóch dros aóch gólat, ac or byd reit ywch, diodefóch ageu drosti. 15 Kanys yr agheu honno a vyd budugolyaeth a buched yr eneit. Póy bynhac hedió a el y agheu, ef ehunan a ymryd yn wiraberth y Duó, y gór a vu teilóg gantaó rodi y eneit dros y vrodyr. Ac órth hynny póy bynhac ohanaóc a láder yn yr ymlad hónn, bit yr agheu honno 20 yn benyt idaó ac yn vadeueint oe bechodeu, y dan amot nas gochelo, or damóeina y dyuot."

9. A góedy kymryt bendyth y gór hónnó, bryssyaó a oruc paób y wisgaó eu harueu ymdanunt, ac ufudhau y gymenediweu yr archescob. Ac yna Arthur a wiscaód 25 ymdanaó lluruc a oed teilóg y vrenhin. Penffestin eureit yskythredic ac aróyd dreic a adassóyt oe benn. Taryan a gymerth ar y ysgýyd, yr honn a elóit Góenn, yn yr hon yd oed deló yr arglóydes Veir yn yskythredic; kanys ym pop yg a reit y galóei ef arnei ac y coffei. Ac a róymóyt 30 a Chaletuólch y gledyf goreu, yr hónn a wnathoedit yn ynys Avaállach. Gleif a deck[a]aód y deheu ef, yr hónn a elóit Ron; vchel oed hónnó a llydan ac adas y aerua.

(Ch. 7). 12 ae y gyt ac nerth, 13 arnadunt vy, 14 a heb petrus

Ac odynd gŵedy llunyaethu y bydinoed o bop parth, y Saeson yn herŵyd eu deuaŵt kyrchu yn leŵ a ŵnaethant, ac ar hyt y dyd yn ŵraŵl gŵrthŵynebu yr Brytanyeit. Ac or diwed gŵedy trossi yr heul ar y dygŵydedigaeth, achub mynyd maŵr, a oed yn agos udunt, 5 a ŵnaeth y Saeson, a chynal hŵnnŵ yn lle castell udunt; a chan ymdiret yn amylder eu nifer tybygu bot yn digaŵn vdunt o gedernit y mynyd. A gŵedy dŵyn or heul y dyd arall rac ŵyneb, Arthur ae lu a eskynnaŵd pen y mynyd. Ac eissoes llawer o wyr a golles ef; kanys haŵs 10 oed yr Saeson o penn y mynyd argyweddu yr Brytanyeit [noc'yr Brytanyeit] yg gŵrthŵyneb y mynyd argyweddu yr Saeson. Ac or diwed gan vŵyhau grym a llafur, gŵedy caffel or Brytanyeit penn y mynyd, yn y lle ŵynt a dangossassant eu deheuoed yr Saeson. Ac yn erbyn 15 hynny y Saeson yn ŵraŵl a ossodassant eu bronnoed yn eu gŵrthŵyneb ŵynteu, ac oc eu holl angerd ymgynhal yn eu herbyn. A gŵedy treulaŵ llawer or dyd uelly, llidiaŵ a oruc Arthur rac hŵyret y gŵelei y vudugolyaeth yn dyuot idaŵ. Ac ar hynny noethi Caletuŵlch a oruc, 20 a galŵ enŵ yr arglŵydes Ueir; ac o vuan ruthur kyrchu y lle teŵaf y gŵelei vydinoed y Saeson. A phŵy bynhac a gyfarffei ac ef, gan alŵ enŵ Duŵa o vn dyrnaŵt y lladei. Ac ny orffŵyssaŵd ar vn ruthur honno, hyt pan ladaŵd a Chaletfŵlch ehun trugein wyr a phetŵar can ŵr. 25 gŵedy gŵelet or Brytanyeit hynny, teŵhau eu toruoed a wnaethant ŵynteu ae ymlit ynteu, ac o bop parth udunt gŵneuthur aerua. Ac yn y lle y dygŵydassant Golgrim a Baldŵlf y vraŵt a llawer o vilyoed y gyt ac ŵynt. A phan welas Cheldric perigyl y gedymdeithon, yn y lle 30 heb annot ymchoelut a oruc y gyt ar rei ereill ar ffo.

10. A gŵedy caffel o Arthur y uudugolyaeth honno,

<sup>a</sup> enŵ duŵ : MS. duŵ duŵ.

ef a erchis y Gadŵr iarll Kernyŵ erlit y Saeson, hyt tra  
 vryssyei ynteu yr Alban. Kanys menegi ar daroed  
 idaŵ ry dyuot yr Yscotteit ar Ffichteit y ymlad a Chaer  
 Alclut, y lle yd adaŵssei ef Howel y nei yn glaf. Ac  
 5 ŵrth hynny y bryssyei ynteu yno rac caffel y gaer arnaŵ.  
 Ac odynd Kadŵr tyŵyssaŵc Kernyŵ a deg mil y gyt ac  
 ef a ymlynaŵd y Saeson. Ac nyt yn eu hol yd aeth,  
 namyn achubeit eu llogeu yn gyntaf a oruc, rac caffel  
 onadunt diogelŵch nac amdiffyn or llogeu. A gŵedy  
 10 caffel eu llogeu ohonaŵ, doddi a oruc y marchogyon  
 aruaŵc goreu a oed ar y helŵ yndunt, rac caffel or Saeson  
 ford udunt, os yno y kyrchynt. A gŵedy daruot  
 cadarnhau y llogeu arnunt uelly, ar vrys ymchoelut a  
 oruc ar y elynyon ac eu llad heb drugared, gan eilenŵi  
 15 gorchymynneu Arthur amdanunt. Rei o deudyblic  
 boen a gyŵarsegit, a rei onadunt o oergrynedic callonneu  
 a ffoynt yr coedyd ac yr llŵyneu, ereill yr mynyded ar  
 gogofeu y geissaŵ yspeit y achŵanegu eu hoedel. Ac  
 ordiwed gŵedy nat oed udunt neb ryŵ diogelŵch, yr hyn  
 20 a dihegis onadunt yn vriŵedic, ŵynt a ymgynullassant<sup>a</sup>  
 hyt yn ynys Danet. A hyt yno tyŵyssaŵc Kernyŵ ae  
 hymlynaŵd gan eu llad. Ac ny orffŵyssaŵd hyt pan  
 las Cheldric; ac eu kymell ŵynteu oll y laŵ gan rodi  
 gŵystlon.

25 11. Ac yna gŵedy kadarnhau tagnefed ar Saeson, yn  
 y lle mynet a oruc yn ol Arthur hyt yg Kaer Alclut, yr  
 hon ry daroed y Arthur y rydhau y gan yr Yscotteit ar  
 Fichteit. Ac odynd y kyrchaŵd Arthur ae lu hyt y Mureif,  
 y wlat a elŵir o enŵ araŵl Reget. Ac yno y gŵarchaeaŵd  
 30 ef yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit, y rei kyn no hynny a  
 ymladyssynt yn erbyn Arthur. A gŵedy eu dyuot ar  
 ffo hyt y wlat honno, ŵynt a aethant hyt yn Lyn

<sup>a</sup> MS. ymgymullassant.

Lumonŷy, a chymryt yr ynysed a oedynt yn y llyn yn gedernit udunt. Kanys tri ugein ynys a oedynt yn y llyn, a thri ugein karrec, a nyth eryr ym pop karrec. A rei hynny pop Kalan Mei a doynt y gyt. Ac ar y lleis a genynt yna dynyon y wlat honno a adnebydei y damŷeineu 5 a delei yn y vlŷydyn rac ŷyneb. Ac y gyt a hynny tri ugein auon a redei yr llyn. Ac ny redei or llyn namyn vn avon yr mor. Ac yr ynysedd hynny y foyssynt y gelynyon y geissaŷ amdifffyn o gedernit y llyn. Ac ny dygrynoes udunt namyn ychydic. Kanys kynullaŷ 10 llogeu a wnaeth Arthur, a chylchynu yr avonoed ar llyn, hyt na chaffei neb vynet odynd. A phymtheg ni[w]arnaŷt y bu yn eu gŷarchae uelly, hyt pan vuant veirŷ hyt ar vilyoed.

12. Ac mal yd oed Arthur yn eu gŷarchae uelly, 15 nachaf vrenhin Iŷerdon yn dyuot a llyghes gantaŷ ac amylder o bobloed achyfyethydyon yn borth yr Yscotteit ar Freinc. Ac ŷrth hynny ymadaŷ a oruc Arthur ar llyn, ac ymchoelut y arueu yn y Gŷydyl, ar rei hynny gan eu llad heb drugared a gymhellŷys ar ffo 20 y eu gŷlat. A gŷedy y uudugolyaeth honno ymchoylut draegeffyn elchŷyl y vynnu dileu kenedyl yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit hyt ar dim. A gŷedy nat arbedei neb megys y keffit, ymgynnullaŷ y gyt a ŷnaethant escyb y druan wlat honno y gyt ae hyscolheigon or a oed darystygedic 25 udunt, y gyt ac escyrn y seint ac eu creireu. Ac yn troet noethon y deuthant hyt rac bron Arthur, ac erchi y drugared dros atlibin y bobyl honno, ac ar eu glinyeu y wediaŷ hyt pan drugarhaei ŷrthunt. Kanys digaŷn o berigyl a drŷc ry ŷnadoed udunt; kanyt oed reit idaŷ 30 dilit hyt ar dim yr hyn a dihaysssei onadunt. A gŷedy erchi trugared onadunt ar y wed honno, wylaŷ o warder a oruc Arthur, a rodi yr gŷyrda seint hynny eu harch.

13. A gŵedy daruot<sup>a</sup> hynny, sylu a oruc Hoŵel uab Emyr Lydaŵ ac enryfedu ansaŵd y llyn, y saŵl avonoed ar saŵl ynyssed ar saŵl gerric ar saŵl nythot eryrot a oed yn y llyn. Ac ual yd oed yn ryfedu hynny, Arthur a dyŵaŵt 5 ŵrthaŵ bot llyn arall yny ŵlat honno oed ryfedach no honno. Ac nyt oed bell odynd, ac ugeint troetued yn y hyt, a vgeint yn y llet, a hynny yn bedrogyl; a phedeir kenedyl o byscaŵt amryŵ yndi; ac ny cheffit byth un or rei hynny yn ran y gilyd. “Ac y mae llyn 10 arall,” heb ef, “yg Kymry ar lan Hafren, a dynyon y wlat honno ae geilŵ llyn Liaŵn. Ar llyn honno, pan vo y mor yn llaŵn, y kymer y dŵfŵr yndaŵ ac y llŵnc megys morgerŵyn, hyt na chudyo y glanneu. Ac y gyt ac yd ymchoelo y mor draegefyn y dreiaŵ, y gŵrthyt y llyn y 15 dŵfŵr a gymerei yndi, ac y bŵrŵ ohonei megys mynyd, hyt pan el dros y glanneu. Ac o damweinei yna vot neb yn sefyll ae wyneb att y llyn, o chyuarffei dim o asgellwrych hŵnnŵ ae dillat,<sup>b</sup> anaŵd vydei idaŵ ymdianc, hyt nas sucknei y llyn ef yndaŵ. Ac o bydei ynteu ae 20 gefyn attaŵ, yr nasset vei idi yn sefyll, nyt argyŵedei idaŵ dim.”

14. A gŵedy hedychu ar Yscotteit y brenhin a aeth hyt yg Kaer Efraŵc, y anrydedu gŵylua y Nadolic a oed yn agos. A phan welas ef yr eglŵysseu gŵedy eu distryŵ 25 hyt y llaŵr, doluryaŵ yn uaŵr a oruc. Kanys gŵedy dehol Sansŵn<sup>c</sup> archescob ar gŵyrda maŵr enrydedus ereill y gyt ac ef, llŵsci yr eglŵysseu ar temleu a ŵnathod y Saeson, a distryŵ gŵassanaeth Duŵ ym pop lle. Kanys pan deuthant yr anreithwyr hynny, y foes Samsŵn archescob a seith escyb y gyt ac ef hyt yn Lydaŵ. Ac 30 yno yn enrydedus yd erbynyŵyt hyt y dyd diŵethaf oe

<sup>a</sup> MS. daruaŵt.<sup>b</sup> MS. dillan.<sup>c</sup> leg. Samsŵn.

vuched. Ac yno gŵedy galŵ paŵb y gyt or yscolheigon ac or bobyl o gyt gyghor paŵb yg kyt ef a ossodes Priaf y gaplan ehunan yn archescob yg Kaer Efraŵc. Ar eglŵysseu diŵreidedic hyt y llaŵr ef ae hatnewydŵys, ac ae hadurnaŵd<sup>a</sup> o grevydusson genveinoed o wyr a 5 gŵraged. Ar gŵyrda bonhedigyon dylvedaŵc a ry deholassei y Saeson ac a ducsynt tref eu tat, ef a rodes y baŵp eu dylwet ac eu hanryded.

15. Ac ym plith y rei hynny yd oedynt tri broder, a hanhoedynt vrenhinaŵl dylwet, nyt amgen, Leu uab 10 Kynuarach ac Vryen uab Kynuarach ac Araŵn uab Kynuarach. A chyn dyuot gormes y Saeson, y rei hynny a dylwynt tyŵysogaeth y gŵledi hynny. Ac yr gŵyr hynny, megys y baŵp or dylwedogyon ereill, ef a vynnaŵd talu eu dylwet. Ac ŵrth hynny ef a rodes y 15 Araŵn vab Kynuarach Yscotlont. Ac y Vryen y rodes Reget dan y tervyneu. Ac y Leu uab Kynuarach (y gŵr yd oed y chwaer gantaŵ yr yn oes Emrys Wledic, ac yd oed idaŵ deu vab ohonei, Gwalchmei a Medraŵt), y hŵnnŵ y rodes tyw[y]ssogaeth Lodoneis a gŵledi ereill a 20 berthynei attei. Ac or diŵed gŵedy dŵyn yr ynys ar y theruyneu yn hollaŵl ar y<sup>b</sup> hen teilygdaŵt ae hedychu, ef a gymerth gŵreic. Sef oed y henŵ Gŵenhŵyfar, yr honn a oed o uonhedickaf genedyl gŵyr Rufein, ac a uagyssit yn llys Kadŵr iarll Kernyŵ. Pryt honno ae 25 thegŵch a orchyfygei ynys Prydein.

16. A phan deuth y gŵanŵyn araf rac ŵyneb, ef a barattoes llyges ac a [a]eth hyt yn Iŵrdon. Kanys honno a vynei y goreskyn idaŵ ehun. Ac ual y deuth yr tir, nachaf Gillamŵri vrenhin Iŵrdon ac amylder [o] 30 bobyl gantaŵ yn dyuot yn erbyn Arthur wrth ymlad ac ef.

<sup>a</sup> MS. hardurnaŵd.<sup>b</sup> ar y : ae MS.

A gŵedy dechreu ymlad, yn y lle y bobyll noeth diarueu a ymchoelyssant drachefyn ar ffo yr lle y keffynt wascaŵt ac amdiffyn. Ac ny bu vn gohir yn dala Gillamŵri ae gymell ŵrth ewyllys Arthur. Ac ŵrth hynny holl  
 5 tywyssogyon Iŵrdon rac ofyn a doethant, ac o agreifft a ymrodassant oc eu bod yn wyr y Arthur.

17. A gŵedy daruot idaŵ oresgyn holl Iŵrdon ae hedychu, Arthur a aeth hyt yn Islont yn y lyges. A gŵedy ymlad ar bobyll honno, ef ae goresgynnŵys. Ac odyndros yr  
 10 ynyssed ereill yd aeth y glot ef, ac na allei vn teyrnas gŵrthŵynebu idaŵ. Doldan brenhin Godlont a Gŵinwas vrenhin Orch oc eu bod a deuthant y ŵrhau idaŵ gan dalu teyrnget idaŵ bop blŵydynd. Ac odyndros gŵedy  
 15 llithraŵ y gayaf hŵnnŵ heibaŵ, Arthur a ymchoelaŵd drachefyn hyt yn ynys Prydein, y atneŵydu ansaŵd y deyrnas ac y gadarnhau tagnefed yndi. Ac yno y bu deudeg mlyned ar vntu.

18. Ac yna [y] gŵahaŵd attaŵ marchogyon deŵr clotuaŵr o arall wladoed a phell teyrnassoed ac amylhau  
 20 y deulu, megys yd oed kyghoruynt gan teyrnassoed pell y wrthaŵ meint clot y lys, a ryodres<sup>a</sup> y teulu ae molyant. A cheissaŵ a wnaei baŵp kyffelybu a discyblu y wrth lys Arthŵr, ac y ŵrth y varchogyon ae deulu. Kanyt oed dim gan vn dylyedaŵc yn y teyrnassoed pell y ŵrthunt,  
 25 ony ellynt ymgeffelybu a marchogyon Arthur oc eu gŵiscoed ac oc eu harueu ac oc eu marchogaeth. A gŵedy ehedec y glot ae volyant ae haelder dros eithafoed y byt, ofyn a gymerassant brenhined tramor teyrnassoed racdaŵ, rac y dyuot y oresgyn eu kyfoetheu ac eu  
 30 gŵladoed. Ac ŵrth hynny rac gofeilon a phrydereu, sef a ŵnaei paŵb ohonunt atnewydu y keyryd ar dinassoed ar tyreu ar kestyll, ac adeilat ereill o neŵyd yn lleoed cryno.

<sup>a</sup> MS. rootdres.

Sef achaŵs oed hynny, o delei Arthur am eu penn, megys y keffynt y lleoed kadarn hynny yn amdiffyn, or bei reit.

19. A gŵedy gŵybot o Arthur bot y ofyn velly ar baŵp, ymardyrchael a oruc ynteu a medyliaŵ goresgyn yr holl Euoppa. Sef oed hynny, trayan y byt. Ac odyna 5 parattoi llyges a oruc. Ac yn gyntaf kyrchu Lychlyn a oruc, hyt pan vei Leu uab Kynuarch y daŵ gan y chwaer a ŵnelei yn vrenhin yno. Kanys nei [v]ab whaer oed Leu uab Kynuarch y vrenhin Lychlyn a uassei uarŵ yna. Ac ef a gymynassei y urenhinyaeth y Leu y nei; 10 ac ny buassei teilŵg gan y Lychlynwyr hynny, namyn gŵneuthur Ricŵlf yn vrenhin arnadunt a chadarnhau eu kestyll ac eu dinassoed, gan dybygu gallu gŵrthŵynebu y Arthur. Ac yn yr amser hŵnnŵ yd oed Walchmei uab Leu yn deudegmlŵyd, gŵedy y rodi oe ewythyr ef yg 15 gwassanaeth Suplius bab Rufein. Ac y gan Suplius y kymerth ef arueu yn gyntaf. A gŵedy dyfot Arthur, megys y dyŵespŵyt uchoŵ, y traeth Lychlyn, Ricŵlff a holl uarchogyon y wlat y gyt ac ef a deuth yn erbyn Arthur, a dechreu ymlad ac ef. A gŵedy gellŵg llaŵer 20 o greu a gwaet o bop part[h], or diwed y Brytanyeit a oruuant gan lad Ricŵlf a llaŵer oe wyr y gyt ac ef. A gŵedy caffel or Brytanyeit y uudugolyaeth, kyrchu y dinassoed a orugant ac eu llosgi, a gŵascaru eu pobloed. Ac ny orfoyssasant hyt pan daruu udunt goreskyn holl 25 Lychlyn a Denmarc. A gŵedy daruot hynny, ef a urdaŵd Leu uab Kynuarch yn vrenhin yn Lychlyn.

20. Ac odyna yd hŵylaŵd ynteu ae llyges hyt yn Freinc. A gŵedy kyweiraŵ y toruoed, dechreu anreithaŵ y wlat o bop parth a orugant. Ac yn yr amser hŵnnŵ 30 yd oed Frollo yn tywyssaŵc yn Freinc y dan Les amheraŵddŵr Rufein yn [y] llywyaŵ. A gŵedy clybot o Frollo dyuotedigaeth Arthur, ef a gynullaŵd holl uarchogyon Freinc, ac a deuth y ymlad ac Arthur; ac



ny allŷys gŵrthŷynebu idaŵ. Kanys gyt ac Arthur yd oed hoŵ ieuencitit yr ynyssed a oresgynassei. Ac ŵrth hynny kymeint o lu a dywedit y uot gantaŵ ac yd oed anaŵd y vn tywyssaŵc neu y neb y erbynyaŵ na  
5 goruot arnaŵ. Ac y gyt ac ef hefyt yd oed y ran oreu o Freinc, yr honn a ry ŵnathoed y haelder yn rŵymedic oe garyat ynteu. A gŵedy gŵelet o Frollo y dygŵydaŵ ef yn y ran waethaf or ymlad, yn y lle adaŵ y maes a oruc y gyt ac ychydic o nifer, a ffo hyt ym Paris; ac  
10 yno kynullaŵ y wasgaredic bobyl attaŵ a chadarnhau y gaer, a mynu elchŵyl ymlad yn erbyn Arthur o ganhorthŵ[y] y gymodogyon. Yn dirybud y deuth Arthur ae lŵ y warchae ynteu yn y dinas. A gŵedy llithraŵ mis heibaŵ, doluryaŵ a oruc Frollo o welet y  
15 bobyl yn aballu rac newyn. A gofyn a oruc y Arthur a vynnei eu dyuot eŵ teu y ymlad; ar hŵn a orfei onadunt, kymerei gyfoeth y llall heb lad neb or deu lu. Sef achaŵs y kynnigyei ef hynny. Gŵr maŵr hydŵf oed Frollo, ac anueitraŵl y leŵder ae gedernyt. Ac o achaŵs  
20 ymdiret yn y nerthoed yd archei ef y Arthur dyuot yn neilltuedic y ymlad ac ef, o tybygu kaffel fordŷ iechyt o hynny. A llawen uu Arthur wrth y genadŵri honno. Ac yn y lle anuon at Frollo y dywedut y vot yn dyuot, ac yn baraŵt y wneuthur yr amot hŵnnŵ ac ef ae gadŵ.

25 21. A gŵedy kadarnhau yr amot hŵnnŵ o bop parth, ŵynt a deuthant eŵ teu hyt y myŵn ynys odieithŷr y dinas; ar pobloed o bop parth yn aros y sylŵ py damwein a darffei y rydunt. Ac yno y deuthant yn hard wedus gyweir ar deu uarch enryfed y meint ae buanet,  
30 hyt nat oed paraŵt y neb adnabot y bŵy y delei y uudugolyaeth onadunt. A gŵedy sefyll onadunt a drychafel y harŵydon o bop parth, dangos<sup>a</sup> yr

<sup>a</sup> MS. A dangos.

ysparduneu yr meirych a orugant, a gossot o bop vn ar y gilyd y dyrnodeu mŷhaf a ellynt. Ac eissoes kywreinach yd arwedŷs Arthur y leif gan ochel dyrnaŷt Frollo. Arthur ae gŷant ym pen y vron, ac yn herŷyd y nerth ef ae byryaŷd hyt y daear. Ac yn y lle noethi y 5 gledyf a oruc, a mynu llad y ben. A Frollo a gyfodes yn gyflym, ac a gleif gossot ar varch Arthŷr yn y dŷyvron dyrnaŷt agheuaŷl, hyt pan dygŷydassant Arthur ae varch yr llaŷr. A phan welsant y brenhin yn syrthaw, abreid vu eu hattal heb torri eu hamot, 10 ac o un vryt kyrchu y Freinc. Ac mal yd oedynt yn torri eu kygreir, nachaf Arthur yn kyuodi yn gyflym wychyr, ac yn drychafel y taryan ac yn kyrchu Frollo. A sefyll yn gyfagos a wnaethant, a neŷidyaŷ dyrnodeu, a llafuryaŷ pob un ageu<sup>a</sup> y gilyd. Ac or diŷed Frollo 15 a gauas kyfle; a tharaŷ Arthur yn y tal a ŷnaeth. A pheĩ na ry bylei y cledyf ar vodrŷyeu y benffestin, ef a vuasseĩ agheuaŷl or dyrnaŷt hŷnnŷ.<sup>b</sup> A gŷedy gŷelet o Arthur y waet yn cochi y taryan ae arueu, ennynu o flamychedic lit ac o ŷychyr irloned a oruc. A 20 drycha[fel] Caletfŷlch ac oe hołł nerthoed gossot a oruc, ar helym ar penffestin a phen Frollo a hołłtes yn deu hanner hyt y dŷy yscŷyd. Ac or dyrnaŷt hŷnnŷ dygŷydaŷ a wnaeth Frollo, ac ae sodleu maedu y daear,<sup>c</sup> a gellŷg y eneĩt gan yr ŷybyr. A gŷedy honni hynny 25 dros y lluoed, bryssyaŷ a oruc y kiŷtaŷtwyr, ac agori porth y dinas ae rodi y Arthur.

22. A gŷedy caffel y uudugolyaeth honno o Arthur, ranu y lu a oruc yn deu hanner. Y neĩll ran oe lu a rodes y Hoŷel uab Emyr llydaŷ, ŷrth vynet y darestŷg 30 Gŷitart tyŷyssaŷ Peitaŷ. Ac ynteu ehun a[r] ran arall gantaŷ y oresgyn y gŷlatoed ereĩll yn eu kylch. Ac yn y

<sup>a</sup> MS. ogeu<sup>b</sup> MS. honnŷ.<sup>c</sup> MS. daeayar.

Ile y deuth Howel vab Emyr Lydaŵ yr wlat. Ef a gyrchŵys y keyryd ar dinassoed; a Góittart gŵedy Ilaŵer o ymladeu yn ofalus a gymhellŵys y ŵrhau y Arthur; ac odyndy Gŵasgŵin o flam a hayarn a anreithŵys; ae  
5 tyŵyssogyon a darestygŵys y Arthur.

23. A gŵedy Iithraŵ naŵ mlyned heibaŵ, a daruot y Arthur oresgyn hoŵl wladoed Freinc ŵrth y vedyant ehun, ef a deuth elchŵyl y Baris. Ac yno y dellis lys. Ac yno gŵedy galŵ paŵb or yscolheigon ar Ileygyon,  
10 kadarnhau a ŵnaeth ansaŵd y teyrnas, a gossot kyfreitheu, a chadarnhau hedŵch dros yr hoŵl teyrnas. Ac yna y rodes ef y Vedwyr y bentrullyat Normandi a Fflandrys. Ac y Gei y bensŵydŵr y rodes ef yr Angiŵ a Pheittaŵ, a Ilaŵer o wladoed ereiŵl yr dylyedogyon ereiŵl  
15 a oedynt yn y wassanaethu. Ac odyndy gŵedy hedychu a thagnefedu pob Ile or dinassoed ar pobloed uelly, pan yttoed y gŵanŵyn yn dyuot, Arthur a ymhoeles y ynys Prydein.

24. Ac ual yd oed gŵylua y Sulgŵyn yn dyuot, gŵedy  
20 y veint uudugolyaethu hynny o bop Ile, y gyt a diruaŵr leŵenyd ef a vedylyŵys dala Ilys yn ynys Prydein, a gŵisgaŵ y goron am y ben, a gŵahaŵd attaŵ y brenhined ar tyŵyssogyon a oedynt wyr idaŵ o bop Ile a orescynnyssei, ŵrth enrydedu gŵylua y Sulgŵyn yn vrenhinaŵl  
25 enrydedus, ac y atneŵydu kadarnaf tagnefed y rydunt. A gŵedy menegi ohonaŵ y vedŵl y gyghorwyr ae anŵylyt, ef a gauas yn y gyghor dala y lys yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc. Kanys or dinassoed kyvoethockaf oed ac adassaf yr ueint wylua honno. Sef achaŵs oed. Or neiŵl  
30 parth yr dinas y redei yr auon uonhedic honno Wysc. Ac ar hyt honno y doynt y brenhined, a delhynt dros y moroed, yn y Ilogeu hyt y dinas. Ac or parth araŵl gŵeirglodyeu a foresti yn y theckau. Ac y gyt a hynny adeiladeu a Ilyssloed brenhinaŵl a oedynt yndi oe myŵn,

a thei eureit, megys nat oed yn y teyrnassoed tref a gynhebyckyt y Rufein o ryodres namyn hi. Ac y gyt a hynny arderchaŵc oed o dŵy eglŵys arbenhic; vn o honunt yn ardyrchafedic yn enryded y Vyl verthyr, a chŵfeint o werydon yn talu molyant y Duŵ yndi yn 5 wastat dyd a nos yn enrydedus urdasseid; araŵ a oed yn enryded y Aaron kedymdeith y merthyr hŵnnŵ, a chŵfent yn honno a ganonwyr reolaŵdyr. Ac y gyt a hynny y dryded archescobaŵt a phenaf yn ynys Prydein oed. Ac y gyt a hynny arderchaŵc oed o deu cant yscol 10 o athraŵon a doethon, a ed[ne]bydynt kerdetyat y syr ac amryfaelon gelfydodeu ereiŵ. Kanys yn yr amser hŵnnŵ y keffit yndi y seith gelfydyt; a[r] rei hynny drŵy gerdetyat y syr a venegynt y Arthur ŵaŵer or damweineu a delhynt rac ŵaŵ. Or achŵysson [hynny] oŵ y mynnŵys 15 Arthur yno dala ŵys. Ac odyndy gellŵg kenadeu drŵy amryfaelon teyrnassoed a gŵahaŵd paŵb a orucpŵyt o deyrnassoed Ffreinc ac o amryfaelon ynyssed yr eigaŵn, o[r] a dylyynt dyuot yr ŵys.

25. Ac ŵrth y wys honno y deuthant yno : Araŵn uab 20 Kynuarch brenhin Yscotlont, Vryen y vraŵt brenhin Reget, Katŵallaŵn ŵaŵ[h]ir brenhin Gŵyned, Kadŵr ŵemenic tywyssaŵc Kernyŵ. Tri archescob ynys Prydein : archescob Ŵundeyn, ac archescob Kaer Efraŵc, a Dyfric archescop Kaer Ŵion ar Wysc; a phenaf 25 onadunt oed dan bab Rufein, ac y gyt a hynny eglur oed oe wassanaeth ae uuched; kanys pob kyfryŵ glefyt or a uei ar dyn, ef ae gŵaretei drŵy y wedi. Ac y gyt a hynny ŵynt a deuthant y tyŵyssogyon or dinassoed bonhedic, nyt amgen, Morud iarŵ Kaer Loyŵ, Meuruc 30 o Gaer Wyragon, Anaraŵt o Amŵythic, Kynuarch iarŵ Kaer Geint, Arthal o Warwic, Owein o Gaer Ŵleon, Ionathal o Gaer Idor, Cursalem o Gaer Lyr, Gŵallaŵc ap Ŵleenaŵc o Salsbri, Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac odieithyr

hynny Ilaŵer o wyrda, nyt oed lei eu boned nac eu teilygdaŵt nor rei hynny, nyt amgen, Dunaŵt Vŵr uab Pabo post Prydein, Keneu uab Coel, Peredur uab Elidyr, Grufud uab Vogoet, Rein uab Elaŵt, Edelin  
 5 vab Keledaŵc, Kyngar uab Bangaŵ, Kynnar Gorbanyon, Miscoet Cloffaŵc, Run uab Nŵython, Kynuelyn [uab] Trunyaŵ, Kadeŵ uab Vryen, Kyndelic uab Nŵython. Ac y gyt a hynny Ilaŵer o wyrda a oed ryhir eu henŵi. Ac y gyt a hynny or ynyssed yn eu kylch : Gillamŵri  
 10 brenhin Iwerdon, Melwas brenhin Islont, Doldan brenhin Gotlont Gŵynw brenhin Orc, Leu uab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc. Ac o Ffreinc y deuthant : Hodlyn tywyssaŵc Ruthyn, Leodgar iarŵ Bŵlŵyn, Bedŵyr pentruŵlyat duc Norŵmandi,  
 15 Borel o Cenomaŵs, Kei pensŵydŵr duc yr Angiŵ, Gŵittart o Beittaŵ, ar deudec gogyfarch o Freinc, a Gerein Garannŵys oc eu blaen yn dywyssaŵc arnadunt, Howel uab Emyr Lydaŵ brenhin Brytaen Vechan, a Ilaŵer o ŵyrda a oed darestygedic idaŵ y gyt ar ueint darmerth a  
 20 chyniret mulyoed a meiryh, megys yd oed dyrys eu datkanu a ryhir eu hyscriuenu. Ac odieithyr hynny ny thrigywys un tywyssaŵc y tu hŵn yr Yspaen ny delei ŵrth y wys honno. Py ryfed oed hynny ? Haelder Arthur ae glot ae volyant yn ehedec dros y byt a  
 25 dynassei baŵp yn rŵ[y]medic oe garyat.

26. Ac or diŵed gŵedy ymgynullaŵ paŵb yr gaer ar ŵylua yn dyuot, yr archescyb a elwit yr llys ŵrth wiscaŵ y goron am ben y brenhin. Ac odyndy Dyfric archescob a gant yr offeren. Kanys yn y archescobty yd oedit  
 30 yn dala llys. Ac or diwed gŵedy gŵisgaŵ y vrenhinaŵl wisc am y brenhin a theckau y ben o goron y teyrnas ae deheu or deyrnwialen, ef a ducpŵyt yr eglŵys benaf, ac or tu deheu ac or tu asseu idaŵ y deu archescob yny gynhal. Ac y gyt a hynny petŵar brenhin, nyt amgen,

brenhin yr Alban, a brenhin Dyuet, a brenhin Góyned, a brenhin Kernyó, yn heróyd eu breint ac eu dylyet, yn aróein petóar cledyf eureit noethon yn y vlaen. Ac y gyt a hynny lláwer o gófenoed amryfaelon vrdassoed yn eu processio o pop parth yn ol ac ym blaen yn kanu 5 amryfaelon gyóydolaetheu ac organ. Ac or parth arall yd oed y vrenhines yn y brenhinwisc, ac escyb o bop parth<sup>1</sup> yn y dóyn hitheu y eglóys y mynachesseu,<sup>2</sup> a phedeir góraged y petwar brenhin, a dywedassam ni uchot, yn aróein pedeir clomen<sup>3</sup> purwen<sup>4</sup> yn y blaen yn 10 heróyd eu breint óynneu, ar góraged yn enrydedus gan diruaór leóenyd yn kerdet yn y hol.<sup>5</sup> Ac or díóed góedy daruot y processio<sup>6</sup> ym pob vn or dóy eglóys, kyndecket a chyndigrifet y kenit y kywydolaetheu<sup>7</sup> ar organ ac na óydynt y marchogyon py le gyntaf y 15 kyrchynt;<sup>8</sup> namyn yn torfoed pob eilwers y kerdynt y honn yr aór hon ac yr llall góedy hynny. A phei treulit y dyd yn góból yn dóywaól wassanaeth, ny magei dim blinder y neb. Ac or díóed góedy daruot yr offereneu ym pob vn or dóy eglóys, y brenhin ar 20 vrenhines a diodassant eu brenhinwisgoed y amdanunt.<sup>9</sup>

27. Ac odynd y brenhin a aeth yr neuad ar góyr oll y gyt ac ef. Ar vrenhines ar góraged oll y gyt a hi<sup>1</sup> y neuad y vrenhines, gan gadó hen gynefaót Tro, pan enrydedynt y góyluaeu maór, y góyr y gyt ar góyr yn 25 bóyta, ar góraged y gyt ar góraged yn wahanedic. A góedy kyflehau<sup>2</sup> paób y<sup>3</sup> eisted yn heróyd y deissyfei y deilygtaót, Kei bennsóyódór yn wiskedic o ermynwisc, a mil<sup>4</sup> y gyt ac ef o vn ryó adurn a hynny<sup>5</sup> o veibon dylyedogyon, a gychwynassant y wassanaethu or gegin 30 anregyon. Ac or parth arall Bedwyr a mil o veibon

(Ch. 26). 1 idi *add.*, 2 machesseu, 3 colomen, 4 gvynyon, 5 yn ol, 6 prosessiwn, 7 kywydolyaetheu, 8 a gerdynt, 9 y amdanadunt

<sup>7</sup>Ch. 27). 1 hitheu, 2 kyfyavneheu (?) 3 yn, 4 mil o wyr, 5 ac ynteu

gŷyrda y gyt ac ynteu yn wisgedic o amryuaelon wisgoed yn gŷassanaethu gŷirodeu or vedgell. Ac or parth arall yn llys y vrenhines aneirf o amylder gŷassanaethwyr yn wisgedic o amryfaelon wisgoed yn herŷyd eu defaŷt.  
 5 yn talu eu gŷassanaeth yn diwall. Ar petheu hynny ae ryotres pei ascrifenŷn, gormod o hyt a blinder a ŷnaŷn yr ystorya. Kanys ar y veint teilygdaŷt honno yd oed<sup>6</sup> ynys Prydein megys y racvlaenei yr holl ynyssed o amylder eur ac aryant ac alafoed dayraŷl.<sup>7</sup> A phy  
 10 varchaŷc bynhac a vynnei<sup>8</sup> vot yn glotuaŷr yn llys Arthur, o vn ryŷ wisc yd aruerynt,<sup>9</sup> ac o vn ryŷ arueu, ac o un ryŷ dyŷygyat<sup>10</sup> marchogaeth. Y gorderchwraged o vn lliŷ wisgoed ac o un dyŷygyat<sup>10</sup> yd aruerynt. Ac ny bydei teilŷg gan un wreic garu<sup>11</sup> vn gŷr, ony bei y uot  
 15 yn brofedic teirgŷeith y milŷryaeth. Ac uelly diŷeirach y gŷneynt<sup>12</sup> y gŷraged a gŷell, ar gŷyr yn glotuorussach oc eu karyat.

28. Ac or diŷed gŷedy daruot bŷyta a chy[ch]wynnu y ar y byrdeu, allan odieithyr y dinas yd aethant y  
 20 chŷare<sup>1</sup> amryfaylon chwaryeu.<sup>2</sup> Ac yn y lle marchogyon yn dangos arŷydon, megys kyt bydynt<sup>3</sup> yn ymlad yn iaŷn ar y maes. Ar gŷraged y ar y muroed ar bylcheu yn edrych ar chware.<sup>4</sup> Ereill yn bŷrŷ mein, ereill yn saethu, ereill yn rydec,<sup>5</sup> ereill yn gŷare gŷydbŷ[y]ll, ereill  
 25 yn gŷare taplas. Ac uelly<sup>6</sup> drŷy bop<sup>7</sup> kyfryŷ amryuaelon dychymygeu<sup>8</sup> gŷaryeu<sup>9</sup> treulaŷ yr hyn a oed yn ol or dyd gan diruaŷr leŷenyd, heb lit a heb gyffro<sup>10</sup> a heb gynhen. A phŷy bynhac a vei vudugaŷl yn y gŷare, Arthur drŷy amlaf rodyon ae henrydedei.<sup>11</sup> A gŷedy treulaŷ y tri  
 30 dieu kyntaf uelly,<sup>12</sup> y petwryd dyd galŷ paŷp a wnaeth-

(Ch. 27.) 6 yr dothoed, 7 aualoed daeravl, 8 vynhei, 9 aruerhynt, 10 diwygyat, 11 karu, 12 ymwneynt

(Ch. 28.) 1 wareu, 2 waryeu, 3 beynt, 4 ar y gvareu, 5 redec, 6 y velly, 7 pop, 8 dychymygyon, 9 a gvaryeu, 10 a heb gyffro *om.*, 11 henrydedhei, 12 y velly

pŷt or a oedynt yg gŵassanaeth, a thalu<sup>13</sup> y baŷp y wassanaeth ae lafur herŷyd ual<sup>14</sup> y dyllynt. Ac yna y rodent<sup>15</sup> y dinassoed, ar kestyl, ar tir, ar dayar, ar escobaetheu,<sup>16</sup> ar archescobaetheu,<sup>17</sup> ar manachlogoed, ar amryuaelon urdasseu, megys y gŵedei y baŷp or ae 5 dyllyei.<sup>18</sup>

29. Ac yn a y gŵrthodes Dyfric archescob y archescobaŷt ae teilygdaŷt. Kanys gŵell oed gantaŷ bot yn didrifŵr a buchedu yn y didryf no bot yn archescob. Ac yn y le ynteu y gossodet Dewi<sup>1</sup> eŷythyr y[r]<sup>2</sup> brenhin yn 10 archescob yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc.<sup>3</sup> Buched hŷnnŷ oed agreiff<sup>4</sup> dayoni<sup>5</sup> y baŷp or a gymerassei y dysc ynteu. Ac yn<sup>6</sup> lle Samsŷn<sup>7</sup> archescob Lydaŷ drŷy anoc Howel<sup>8</sup> uab Emyr Lydaŷ y gossodet Teilaŷ escob<sup>9</sup> Lan Daf, yr hŷn a glotuorei y uuched, ae deuodeu da a dangossynt 15 y uot yn ŷrda. Ac odyna escobaŷt Gaer<sup>10</sup> Vudei y Veugant, ac escobaŷt Gaer<sup>10</sup> Wynt y Dywan,<sup>11</sup> ac escobaŷt Lincol y Aldelmi.

30. Ac val yd oedynt velly yn llunyaethu pob peth, nachaf deudegwyr aeduet eu hoet, enrydedus y gŵed, 20 a cheig [o] olyfwyd<sup>1</sup> yn llaŷ bop vn onadunt yn arŷyd eu bot yn genadeu, ac yn kerdet yn araf, ac yn kyfarch gŵell y Arthur, ac yn y annerch y gan Les amheraŷdyr Rufein, ac yn rodi llythyr yn y laŷ, ar ymadraŷd hŷnn<sup>2</sup> yndaŷ. 25

31. "Les amheraŷdyr Rufein yn anuon y Arthuryr hynn a haedŷys. Gan enryfedu<sup>1</sup> yn uaŷr enryfed yŷ genyf i dy greulonder di athrudannaeth.<sup>2</sup> Enryfedu<sup>3</sup>

(Ch. 28). 13 thallu, 14 *om.*, 15 rodet *recte*, 16 escobyathieu, 17 ar archescobaethieu *om.*, 18 y paŷb ac y dyllyei

(Ch. 29). 1 *in marg.*, 2 yr, 3 arvyse *om.*, 4 agriff, 5 a dayoni, 6 yny, 7 sampŷn, 8 hywel, 9 yn escob yn, 10 kaer, 11, dŷywan?

(Ch. 30). 1 o oliwyd, 2 ymadrodyon hynny

(Ch. 31). 1 anryfedu, 2 athrudanyaeth, 3 hefyd *add.*



ydŷyf gan goffau y sarhaedeu<sup>4</sup> a wnaethost di<sup>5</sup> y Rufein. Ac anheilŷg yŷ genyf nat atwaenost<sup>6</sup> dy vynet oth dieithyr<sup>7</sup> dy hun, ac na wydut ac nat yttŷyt<sup>8</sup> yn medylŷaŷ py veint trymder yŷ gŷneuthur kodyant y sened Rufein, 5 yr honn a ŷdost di<sup>9</sup> bot yr hoŷl vyt yn talu gŷassanaeth idi. Kanys y deyrnget a orchymynŷyt y dalu idi, yr hŷn<sup>10</sup> a gafas Ulkassar a ŷlaŷer o amherodron ereiŷl gŷedy ef a chyn no minheu<sup>11</sup> drŷy laŷer o amseroed—a hŷnnŷ gan dremygu<sup>12</sup> gorchymyneu kymeint ac vn 10 sened Rufein—a gamryvygeist di<sup>13</sup> y attal. Ac y gyt a hynny ti a dugost Bŷrgŷyn ac ynyssed yr eigaŷn yn hoŷlaŷl, brenhined y rei hynny, hyt tra yttoed Rufeinaŷl uedyant yn eu medu, a dallasant teyrnget yr amherodron a vuant kyn no minheu. A chanys or veint sarhaedeu<sup>14</sup> 15 hynny y barnŷys sened Rufein y minheu iaŷn y genhyt ti, ŷrth hynny minheu a ossodaf teruyn ytti yr Aŷst kyntaf yssyd yn dyuot, dyuot ohonat titheu hyt yn Rufein y wneuthur iaŷn or saŷl sarhaedeu<sup>14</sup> hynny, ac y diodef y vraŷt a uarnho sened Rufein arnat. Ac ony 20 deuy uelŷy,<sup>15</sup> miui a gyrchaf dy teruynneu.<sup>16</sup> A megys y ranho y clefydeu,<sup>17</sup> mi ae ranaf<sup>18</sup> ac a lafuryaf y dŷyn drachefyn ŷrth sened Rufein.”

32. A gŷedy datkanu y ŷlythyr hŷnnŷ rac bron Arthur ar brenhined ar tywyssogion a oedynt y gyt ac ef, ef 25 ac ŷynt a aethant y gyt hyt yn tŷr y keŷri y gymryt kyghor py beth a ŷnelhynt yn erbyn y kymynediŷeu<sup>1</sup> hynny. Ac ual yd oedynt yn esgynnu<sup>2</sup> gradeu y tŷr, kadŷr iarŷl Kernyŷ megys gŷr ŷlaŷen y uedŷl<sup>3</sup> a dywaŷt yr ymadraŷd hŷnn : “ Kyn no hynn ofyn a ry fu arnaf i 30 rac goruot o lesged y Brytanyeit o hir hedŷch, a cholli

(Ch. 31). 4 sarahedeu, 5 wnaethosti, 6 atwaenosti, 7 odieithyr, 8 ydŷyt, 9 ŷdosti, 10 hon, 11 thitheu, 12 tremygu, 13 gamryfygeisti, 14 sarahedeu, 15 dohy y velŷy, 16 terfynheu, 17 clefyfeu, 18 kymhellaf

(Ch. 32). 1 kymenediveu, 2 yskynnu, 3 y vedŷl *om.*

clot eu milŕyaeth, or honn y buant hŕy eglurach no neb o genedloed y byt yn hollaŕl. Sef achaŕs yŕ. Yn y lle y peitter ac<sup>4</sup> arueru o arueu, ac aruer or ŕydbŕyll ar daplas a serch gŕraged, nyt oes petrus yna llygru o lesged py beth bynhac a ry fei<sup>5</sup> o nerth yno a chedernit 5 ac enryded a chlot. Kynys<sup>6</sup> pump mlyned hayach ar<sup>7</sup> ethynt yr pan yttym ni yn arueru or ryŕ seguryt hŕnnŕ ar digrifŕch, a heb arueru o diŕyll ymlad. Ac ŕrth hynny Duŕ yr mynu<sup>8</sup> an rydhau ni or llesged honno a gyffroes gŕyr Rufein yn an herbyn, hyt pan alwem 10 ni an clot ac an milŕyaeth ar y hen gynefaŕt."

33. A gŕedy dyŕedut o Gadŕr yr ymadrodyon hynny a llaŕer o rei ereill, or diwed ŕynt a deuthant yr eisteduaeu. A gŕedy eisted o baŕp yn y le, Arthur a dyŕaŕt ual hynn ŕrthunt: "Vyg kedymdeithon ar rŕyd 15 ac ar dyrys, molyant yr rei hyt hynny<sup>1</sup> ac yn rodi eu<sup>2</sup> kyghoreu ac eu<sup>3</sup> milŕyaeth, ac yr<sup>4</sup> aŕr honn o vn vryt rodŕch aŕch kyghor, ac yn doeth racvedylyŕch py beth a uo iaŕn y atteb yn erbyn yr attebyon hynn Kanys py beth bynhac<sup>5</sup> a racvedylyer<sup>6</sup> yn da yn y blaen y gan 20 doethon, pan del ar ŕeithret, haŕs vyd y diodef. Ac ŕrth hynny haŕs y gallŕn ninheu diodef ryfel gŕyr Rufein, os o gyffredin gyfundeb a chytgyghor yn doeth y racuedylyŕn py wed y gallom ni gŕahanu ac eu ryfel ŕynt. Ar ryfel hŕnnŕ, herŕyd y tebygaf i, nyt 25 maŕr reit yn y ofynhau. Kanys andylyedus y maent hŕy<sup>7</sup> yn erchi teyrnget o ynys Prydein. Kanys ef a dyŕeit dylu y talu idaŕ ef ŕrth y talu<sup>8</sup> y Ulkassar<sup>9</sup> ac y ereill gŕedy hŕnnŕ, a hynny o achaŕs teruysc ac anuundeb<sup>10</sup> y rŕg an hendateu<sup>11</sup> ninheu, a dugassant<sup>12</sup> 30

(Ch. 32). 4 o, 5 ryfei, 6 kanys, 7 a, 8 mynnŕ

(Ch. 33). 1 yr rei a profeis hyt hyn, 2 om., 3 y, 4 ar, 5 bynac, 6 racweler, 7 ŕy, 8 dalu, 9 ulkassar, 10 annundab, 11 hendadeu, 12 ducasant

wyr Rufein yr ynys honn, ac o dreis<sup>12</sup> y gŵnaethant yn trethaŵl.<sup>13</sup> Ac ŵrth hynny py beth bynhac a gaffer drŵy na thŵyll na chedernit,<sup>14</sup> nyt o dylyet y kynhellir hŵnnŵ. Pŵy bynhac a dycko treis, peth andlyyedus a geis y 5 gynhal. A chanys andlyyedus y maent ŵy yn keissaŵ teyrnget y genhym ni, yn gynhebic y hynny ninheu a deissyfŵn teyrnget y gantunt hŵy<sup>15</sup> o Rufein, ar kadarnaf ohonom ni kymeret y gan y llall.<sup>16</sup> Kanys or goresgynŵys<sup>17</sup> Ulkassar<sup>18</sup> ac amherodron ereill gŵedy 10 ef ynys Prydein, ac o achaŵs hynny yr aŵr honn holi teyrnget ohanei,<sup>19</sup> yn gynhebic y hynny minheu a varnaf dylu o<sup>20</sup> Rufein talu teyrnget y minheu. Kanys vy rieni ynheu gynt a oresgynnassant<sup>21</sup> Rufein ac ae kynhalassant, nyt amgen, Beli uab Dyfynwal gan 15 ganhorthŵy Bran y vraŵt duc Bŵrgŵyn, gŵedy crogi petwar gŵystyl ar hugeint<sup>22</sup> o dylyedogyon<sup>23</sup> Ruuein rac bron y gaer, ac ae dalyassant drŵy laŵer o amseroed. A gŵedy hynny Custenin mab Elen a Maxen mab Lywelyn—pob vn or rei hynny yn gar agos y mi o 20 gerenhyd,<sup>24</sup> ac yn vrenhined arderchaŵc o goron ynys Prydein—yr vn gŵedy y gilyd a gaŵssant amherodraeth Rufein. Ac ŵrth hynny pony bernŵch chŵi bot yn iaŵn y minheu deissyfeit teyrnget o Rufein? O Ffreinc ac or ynyssed ereill ny ŵrthebŵn ni udunt ŵy, kany doethant 25 y hamdiffyn, pan y goresgynassam,<sup>25</sup> nac oe gŵarafun. Ac ŵrth hynny ny ŵrthebŵn ni udunt hŵy<sup>26</sup> or rei hynny.”

34. A gŵedy teruynu o Arthur yr ymadraŵd, Howel<sup>1</sup> uab Emyr Lydaŵ a ŵrthebaŵd ym blaen<sup>2</sup> paŵb y ymadraŵd Arthur ual hyn: “Pei<sup>3</sup> traethei bop un<sup>4</sup> ohonom ni<sup>5</sup> a 30 medyliaŵ pob peth yn y uedŵl, ny thebygaf i<sup>6</sup> gallu

(Ch. 33). 12 treis, 13 treulaŵ, 14 gaffer a thvyll a chedernit, 15 vy, 16 teyrnget *add.*, 17 o gverysgynnvys, 18 vlkassar, 19 oheni, 20 wyr *add.*, 21 weryskynassant, 22 hugein, 23 dylyedogyon, 24 gerenyd, 25 gveryscynassam 26 *om.*

(Ch. 34). 1 hywel, 2 ymlaen, 3 bei, 4 bavb, 5 oll *add.*, 6 thybygaf

o neb ohonam ni rodi kyghor gŵerthuaŵrogach<sup>7</sup> nac attech  
 grynoach na doethach nor hŵn a rodes doethineb<sup>8</sup> yr  
 arglŷyd Arthur ehun. Ac ŵrth hynny yr hyn a  
 racuedylyaŵd<sup>9</sup> medŵl doeth anyanaŵl gŵastat,<sup>10</sup> ninheu  
 yn hollaŵl moli hŵnnŵ a dylyŵn ae ganmaŵl yn wastat. 5  
 Kanys yn herŵyd y dylyet a dyŵedy di, or<sup>11</sup> mynny di  
 kyrchu Rufein, ny phetrussaf<sup>12</sup> i yd aruerŵn ni or  
 uudugolyaeth, hyt tra vom ni yn amdiffyn an rydit,  
 hyt tra geissom ni an iaŵn y gan an gelynyon, y peth  
 y maent hŵy<sup>13</sup> yn gam yn y geissaŵ y gennym ninheu. 10  
 Kanys pŵy bynhac a geisso dŵyn y ureint ae dylyet gan  
 gam y gan arall, teilŵg yŵ idaŵ ynteu kolli y vreint ae  
 dylyet. Ac ŵrth hynny kanys gŵyr Rufein yssyd yn  
 keissaŵ dŵyn yr einym ni, heb amheu ninheu a dygŵn  
 y racdunt<sup>14</sup> yr eidunt, o ryd Duŵ gyfle y ymgyuaruot ac 15  
 ŵynt. A llyna ymgyfaruot damunedic yr holl vrytanyeit.  
 Lyma daroganneu<sup>15</sup> Sibli yn wir,<sup>16</sup> a<sup>17</sup> dyŵaŵt dyuot o  
 genedyl y Brytanyeit tri brenhin a oresgynynt<sup>18</sup>  
 Rufeinaŵl amherodraeth. Ar deu a ryfu, ac yr<sup>19</sup> aŵr  
 hon yd ym yth gaffael titheu yn drydyd,<sup>20</sup> yr hŵn y 20  
 tyfŵys<sup>21</sup> blaenŵed Rufeinaŵl enryded.<sup>22</sup> Or deu neur  
 deryŵ eilenŵi yn amlŵc, megys y dyŵedeist ti,<sup>23</sup> yr eglur  
 tyŵyssogyon<sup>24</sup> Beli a Chustenin;<sup>25</sup> pob un onadunt a  
 uuant amherodron yn Rufein. Ac ŵrth hynny bryssya  
 titheu<sup>26</sup> y gymryt y pe[t]h<sup>27</sup> y mae Duŵ yn y rodi itt. 25  
 Bryssya y oreskyn<sup>28</sup> y peth oe uod yssyd<sup>29</sup> yn mynu<sup>30</sup>  
 y oresgyn.<sup>28</sup> Bryssya y an hardrychafel<sup>31</sup> ni oll, hyt  
 pan yth ardrychauer titheu. Ac<sup>32</sup> ny ochelŵn ninheu  
 kymryt gŵelieu ac agheu, or byd reit.<sup>33</sup> A hyt pan

(Ch. 34). 7 gverthuorogach, 8 nor hŵn a racuedylyaŵd racweledic  
 doethineb, 9 racwelas, 10 gvastadavr, 11 o, 12 phedrussaf, 13 vy,  
 14 dygvn racdunt vy, 15 darogan, 16 yn dyfot yn wir, 17 hi a, 18 weres-  
 cynynt, 19 ar, 20 ydym yn kafel y trydyd, 21 yr hŵn yd yttys yn adav,  
 22 anryded, 23 dywedeisti, 24 yn eglur y tywyssogyon, 25 chustenhin,  
 26 ditheu, 27 peth, 28 werescyn, 29 om., 30 oe vod add., 31 ardrychafel,  
 32 om., 33 in add.

geffych ti hynny, minheu ath gedymdeithockaf ti<sup>34</sup> a deg mil o varchogyon aruaŵc y gyt a mi y achŵanegu dy lu."

35. A gŵedy teruynu o Howel<sup>1</sup> y barabyl, Araŵn uab  
 5 Kynuarch brenhin Prydein a dywaŵt ual hynn: "Yr pan dechreuaŵd vy arglŵyd i dywedut y ymadraŵd, ny allaf i<sup>2</sup> traethu am tauaŵt y veint lewenyd yssyd ym medŵli. Kanys nyt dim gennyf i a rywnaetham<sup>3</sup> o ymladeu ar yr holl urenhined a oresgynnassam<sup>4</sup> ni hyt hynn, ōs  
 10 gŵyr Rufein a gŵyr Germania dihaŵant<sup>5</sup> yn diarueu<sup>6</sup> y genhym ni, a heb dial arnadunt yr aeruaeu a ŵnaethant ŵynteu oc an rieni ni gynt. A chanys<sup>7</sup> yr aŵr honn y mae darpar ymgyfaruot ac ŵynt, llaŵen yŵ genyf; a damunaŵ yd ŵyf y dyd yd ymgyfarffom ni ac ŵynt.  
 15 Kanys sychet eu gŵaet ŵynt yssyd arnaf i yn gymeint a pheĩ gŵelŵn fynhaŵn oer<sup>8</sup> ger vy mron y yfet diaŵt ohonaeĩ, pan vei arnaf diruaŵr sychet.<sup>9</sup> Oia Duŵ! gŵyn y uyt a arhoeĩ y dyd hŵnnŵ! Melys a welieu genyf i<sup>10</sup> y rei a gymerŵn i neu y rei a rodŵn inheu, tra  
 20 neŵityŵn an deheuoed y gyt an gelynyon. Ar agheu honnŵ yssyd uelys, yr honn a diodefŵn yn dial<sup>11</sup> uy rieni am kenedyl, ac yn amdiffyn vy rydit, ac yn ardyrchauel<sup>12</sup> an brenhin. Ac ŵrth hynny kyrchŵn yr hanher gŵyr<sup>13</sup> hynny; na safŵn yn eu kyrchu, hyt pan  
 25 orfom ni arnadunt ŵy gan dŵyn eu henryded,<sup>14</sup> yd aruerom<sup>15</sup> ni<sup>16</sup> o laŵen uudugolyaeth. Ac y achŵaneckau dy lu ditheu minheu a rodaf dŵy vil o varchogyon aruaŵc heb eu pedyt."<sup>17</sup>

36. A gŵedy daruot y baŵp dywedut y peth a vynhynt  
 30 yg kylch hynny, adaŵ a oruc paŵb nerth, megys y bei y

(Ch. 34). 34 gytymdeithockavn ditheu

(Ch. 35). 1 hvel, 2 allaffi, 3 genhym ar wnaetham, 4 werysgynassam, 5 diaghant, 6 diaerua, 7 achavs, 8 loyv eglur, 9 ohonaeĩ—sychet *om.*, 10 genhyfi, 11 gvaet *add.*, 12 ardrychafel, 13 yr avr hon yr haner gvyr, 14 hanryded, 15 aruerhom, 16 ni oll, 17 pedyd

aŵu ae defnyd yn y wassanaeth. Ac yna y kahat o ynys Prydein ehun<sup>1</sup> trugein mil o varchogyon aruaŵc, heb deg<sup>2</sup> mil a adaŵssei urenhin Lydaŵ. Ac ody na brenhined yr ynyssed ereiŵ (kany buassei aruer o varchogyon<sup>3</sup>) paŵb onadunt a edeŵis pedydgant y saŵl 5 a eŵynt eu kaffel. Sef a gahat or chwech ynys, nyt amgen, Iwerdon ac Islont a Gotlont ac o<sup>4</sup> Orc a Lychlyn a Denmarc, chŵe<sup>5</sup> ugein mil o pedyt,<sup>6</sup> ac y gan tyŵyssogyon Freinc, nyt amgen, Ruthyn a Phortu a Normandi a Cenoman ar Angiŵ a Pheitaŵ, petwar ugein 10 mil o uarchogyon. Ac y gan y deudec gogyfarch<sup>7</sup> y deuthant<sup>8</sup> y gyt a Gereint deucant<sup>9</sup> marchaŵc a mil o varchogyon aruaŵc. A sef oed eiryf hynny oŵl y gyt, deu cant marchaŵc a their mil a phetŵar vgein mil a chanmil, heb eu pedyt,<sup>6</sup> yr hyn nyt oed haŵd eu gossot 15 yn rif.

37. A gŵedy gŵelet o Arthur paŵb yn baraŵt yn y reit ae wassanaeth, erchi a oruc y baŵp bryssyaŵ y wlat ac ymbaratoi, ac yn erbyn Kalan Aŵst bot eu kynadyl oŵl y gyt ym porth Barberfloi ar tir Lydaŵ, ŵrth gyrchu 20 Bŵrgŵyn ody no yn erbyn gŵyr Freinc. Ac y gyt a hynny menegi a oruc Arthur ŵrth genadeu gŵyr Rufein na thalei ef tyrnget udunt hŵy<sup>1</sup> o ynys Prydein. Ac nyt yr gŵneuthur iaŵn vdunt or a holynt yd oed ef yn kyrchu Rufein, namyn yr kymell teyrnget idaŵ ef o 25 Rufein, megys y barnassei ehun y dylu. Ac ar hynny yd aethant y brenhined ar gŵyrda paŵb y ymbaratoi heb vn annot, erbyn yr amser teruynedic a ossodyssit udunt.

38. A gŵedy adnabot o Les amheraŵdyr yr atdeb a gaŵssei y gan Arthur, drŵy gyghor sened Rufein ef a 30

(Ch. 36). 1 *om.*, 2 y deg, 3 varchogaeth, 4 *om. recte*, 5 whe, 6 pedyd  
7 gogyfurd, 8 doethant, 9 deudeckant

(Ch. 37). 1 vy

ellygŷys kenadeu y wyssyaŷ brenhined y dŷfrein,<sup>1</sup> ac erchi<sup>2</sup> dyuot ac eu lluoed gantunt y gyt ac ef ŵrth oresgyn<sup>3</sup> ynys Prydein. Ac yn gyflym yd ymgynull-assant yno Epistrophus<sup>4</sup> vrenhin Groec,<sup>5</sup> Mustensar  
 5 brenhin<sup>6</sup> yr Affric, Aliphantina urenhin yr Yspaen, Hirtacus vrenhin Parth, Boctus brenhin Iudiff, Sertor<sup>7</sup> brenhin<sup>6</sup> Libia, Serx vrenhin Nuri, Pandrasius brenhin<sup>6</sup> yr Eifft, Missipia<sup>8</sup> brenhin<sup>6</sup> Babilon, Teucer duc Frigia, Euander duc<sup>6</sup> Siria, Echion o Boeti, Ypolit o Creta,<sup>9</sup> y  
 10 gyt ar tywyssogyon a oedynt darestygedigyon udunt ar gŷyrda. Ac y gyt a hynny o vrdas y senedwyr Les, Kadell, Meuruc, Lepidus, Gaius, Metellus,<sup>10</sup> Octa, Quintus, Miluius, Taculus, Metellus, Quintinus, Gerucius.<sup>11</sup> A sef<sup>12</sup> oed eiryf hynny oll y gyt,  
 15 canŵr a thrugein mil a phetŵar can mil.

39. A gŷedy ymgyweiraŷ onadunt o bop peth or a vei reit udunt, Kalan Aŷst hŷynt<sup>1</sup> a gymerassant eu hynt parth ac ynys Prydein. A phan ŷybu Arthur hynny, ynteu a orchymynŷys llywodraeth ynys Prydein y  
 20 Vedraŷt y nei uab y chŷaer, ac y Wenhŷyvar vrenhines. Ac ynteu ae lu a gychŷynŷys parth a phorthua<sup>2</sup> Hamtŷn. A phan gafas y gŷynt gyntaf<sup>3</sup> yn y ol, ef a aeth yn y logeu ar y mor.<sup>4</sup> Ac val yd oed uelly o aneiryf amylder llogeu yn y gylch, ar gŷynt yn rŷyd yn y ol, gan  
 25 leŷenyd yn rŷygaŷ y<sup>5</sup> mor, mal am aŷr haner nos, gŷrthrŷm hun a disgynŷys<sup>6</sup> ar Arthur. Sef y gŷelei drŷy y hun, arth yn ehedec yn yr aŷyr; murmur hŷnnŷ ae odŷrd a lanwei y traetheu o ofyn ac aruthred. Ac y ŵrth y gorlleŷin y gŷelei aruthyr<sup>7</sup> dreic yn ehedec, ac o

(Ch. 38). 1 dvyrein *recte*, 2 ac y erchi vdunt, 3 wereskyn, 4 epitrophus 5 goroece, 6 vrenhin, 7 settor, 8 mesipia, 9 greta, 10 metelus, 11 *For* Quintus Jerucius A *has* Quintus milnius katulus metelus Quintus cerutius (?), 12 Ac ysef

(Ch. 39). 1 vynt, 2 phorth, 3 kyntaf, 4 ar y mor *om.*, 5 *om.*, 6 dygvydvys, 7 arthur

egllurder y llygeit yn goleuhau yr hoŵ wlat. A phob vn or rei hynny a welei yn ymgyrchu, ac yn ymlad yn irat ac yn greulaŵn. Ac or diwed y gŵelei y racdyŵededic dreic yn kyrchu yr arth, ac ae thanaŵl anadyl yn y losgi, ac yn y vŵrŵ yn llosgedic yn y dayar. A 5 gŵedy duhunaŵ o Arthur, ef a datkanaŵd y weledigaeth<sup>8</sup> yr gŵyrda a o[e]dynt<sup>9</sup> yn y gylch. Ac ŵynt gan y dehogyl a dyŵedassant mae<sup>10</sup> Arthur a arŵydockaei y dreic, ar arth a arŵydockaei y kaŵr a ymladei ac ef, ar ymlad a welei y rydunt a arŵydockaei yr ymlad a vydei<sup>11</sup> 10 y rydaŵ ef ar kaŵr, ar uudugolyaeth a damweinhei<sup>12</sup> y Arthur or kaŵr. Ac amgen no hynny y tebygei<sup>13</sup> Arthur ehun uot y dehogyl. Kanys ef a dybygei y mae oe achaŵs ef ar amheraŵtyr<sup>14</sup> y gŵelei ef y vreidŵyt. A gŵedy rydec y nos, or diŵed pan yttoed gŵaŵr dyd yn 15 cochi tranoeth,<sup>15</sup> ŵynt a disgynnassant ym porthua<sup>16</sup> Barberflŵy yn Lŷdaŵ. Ac yn y lle tynu<sup>17</sup> pebylleu a wnaethant, ac yno aros brenhined yr ynyssed<sup>18</sup> ar gŵladoed ac eu lŵu atunt.

40. A gŵedy ymgynullaŵ paŵb y gyt or yd oedynt yn 20 aros, Arthur a gychŵynŵys odyndy hyt yn Aŵgustudŵm, y lle y tybygei bot yr amheraŵdyr ae lu yn dyuot. A gŵedy y dyuot hyt ar lann yr Avon Wenn ym Bŵrgŵyn, ef a venegit idaŵ bot yr amheraŵdyr gŵedy pebyllaŵ nyt oed beŵl odyndy, a chymeint o luoed gantaŵ ac y dywedit 25 nat oed neb a allei gŵrthŵynebu idaŵ. Ac yr hynny eissoes ny chynhyruaŵd Arthur dim, namyn gossot y bebylleu ae lueŵteu ar lann yr auon, megys y gallei yn rŵyd ac yn ehang lŵunyaethu y lu, or bei reit idaŵ, yn y lle hŵnnŵ. Ac odyndy yd anuones Arthur Boso o Ryt 30 Ychen a Gŵal[ch]mei uab Gŵyar a Gereint Garanŵys hyt

(Ch. 39). 8 vreidvyt, 9 oed, 10 y mae, 11 vei, 12 damweinei, 13 tybygei, 14 amheravdyr, 15 dranoeth, 16 ymhorthua, 17 tannu 18 ynyssod



ar amheraódyr Rufein, y erchi idaó mynet o teruynau Freinc, neu tranoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur, y wybot pŵy oreu onadunt a dyliei Ffreinc. Ac annoc a ŵnaeth jeuenctit llys Arthur y Walchmei gŵneuthur gŵrthgassed  
 5 yn llys yr amheraódyr, megys y gellynt gaffel gosgymonn y ymgysguaruot a gŵyr Rufein.

41. Ac odynd y trywyr hynny a gerdassant at yr amheraódyr, ac a archassant idaó mynet ymeith o Ffreinc, neu ynteu trannoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur. Ac ual  
 10 yd oed yr amheraódyr yn dyŵedut nat mynet ohonei a dyliei, namyn dyuot oe hamdiffyn ac y llyŵyaó, nachaf Quintinus nei yr amheraódyr yn dywedut bot yn hŵy gorhoffed a bocsach y Brytanyeit noc eu gallu ac eu gleóder, a bot yn hŵy eu tauodeu noc eu clefydeu.  
 15 Ac ŵrth hynny llytaó a oruc Gŵalchmei, a thynnu cledyf a llad y benn ger bronn y ewythyr. Ac yn y lle ar hynt kaffel eu meirych ac ymtynnu or llys ef ae gedym[d]eithon, ar Rufeinwyr ar veirych ac ar traet yn eu hymlyt y geissaó dial y gŵr arnadunt oc eu holl ynni.  
 20 Ac ual yd oed vn or Rufeinwyr yn ymordiwes a Gereint Garanŵys, ef a troes arnaó, ac a gleif ae gŵant trŵy y holl arueu a thrŵydaó ehun, yny vyd yr llaŵr y ar y varch yn varó. Ac yna blyghau a oruc Bosŵo Ryt Ychen, a throiy varch a oruc, ar kyntaf a gyvaruu ac ef, ef a ossodes  
 25 arnaó yn y vogel, ac a rodes dyrnaó agheuaól idaó, a chymell arnaó ymadaó ae varch ac ymadassu ar dayar. Ac ar hynny nachaf Marell Mut senedŵr oe holl ynni yn keissaó dial Qŵintilian ac yn ymordiwes a Gŵalchmei yn y ol ac yn mynnu y dala, pan ymchoelaó Gŵalchmei  
 30 arnaó yn gyflym, ac a chledyf llad y benn yn gyfuch ae dŵy yscŵyd; ac y gyt a hynny gorchymun idaó, pan elhei y uffern, menegi y Gŵintinal, yr hŵnn a ladassei ef yn y pebyll, bot yn amyl gan y Brytanyeit y ryŵ or hoffter hŵnnŵ. Ac odynd ymŵascu ae gedymdeithon

a oruc Gŵalchmei ac eu hannoc, a llad o bop un ŵr; ar Rufeinwyr ar gŵeŵyr ac ar clefydeu yn eu fustaŵ, ac ny ellynt nac eu dala nac eu bŵrŵ. Ac ual yd oedynt geir llad coet a oed yn agos udunt, ar Rufeinwyr yn eu herlit yn lut, nachaf chwe mil or Brytanyeit yn dyuot or coet 5 yn borth yr tywyssogyon a oedynt ar ffo, ac ar hynt yn dangos yr ysparduneu yr meiryh, ac yn llanŵ yr aŵyr o lefein a dodi eu taryaneu ar eu bronnoed ac yn deissyfyt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr ac yn y lle eu kymell ar ffo, ac o vn vryt eu herlit, a bŵrŵ rei onadunt yr lladŵr, a dala ereill, 10 a llad ereill.

42. A gŵedy menegi hynny y Petrius senedŵr, ef a gymerth degmil y gyt ac ef, a bryssyaŵ yn ganhorthŵy y gedymdeithon,<sup>1</sup> ac yn y lle kymell y Brytanyeit ar fo yr coet y dathoedynt ohonaŵ. Ac eissoes nyt heb 15 wneuthur diruadŵr gollet yr Rufeinwyr. Kanys y Brytanyeit, kyt foynt, pan geffynt adŵyeu kyfig a lleoed dyrys, aerua uadŵr a ŵneynt or Rufeinwyr. Ac ual yd yttoedynt hŵy yn ymladar y wed honno, nachaf Hydeir uab Mut a phump mil y gyt ac ef yn dyuot yn ganhorthŵy 20 yr Brytanyeit. Ac yn y lle ymchoelut a wnaethant; ar rei a oedynt yn dangos eu kefneu ar ffo yr aŵr honno, yn y lle yd oedynt yn dangos eu bronnoed ac yn rodi gŵrolyon dyrnodeu bop eilwers yr Rufeinwyr, ar Brytanyeit oc eu hoŵl dihwyt yn damunaŵ milŵryaeth. 25 Ac ny didorynt py damŵein y dygŵydynt yndaŵ, hyt tra gynhelynt eu clot ym milŵryaeth, megys y dechreuysynt. Ar Rufeinŵyr kymhennach y gŵneynt ŵy; kanys Petrius megys tyŵysaŵc da ae dysgei ŵynt yn doeth gŵers y gyrchu gŵers arall y ffo, megys y gŵelei yn dygrynoi 30 udunt. Ac uelly y gŵneynt golledeu maŵr yr Brytanyeit.

43. A phan welas Boso o Ryt Ychen hynny, galŵ a oruc attaŵ laŵer or Brytanyeit gleŵaf a ŵydat ar neilltu,

1. MS. gedyndeithon

- a dybedut  rthunt ual hyn : “ Dioer,” heb ef, “ kanys heb wybot y an brenhin y dechreuassam ni yr ymlad h nn, reit oed yn ninheu ymoglyt rac an dyg yda  yn y<sup>1</sup> ran waethaf or ymlad. Ac os uelly y dyg ydn, 5 kollet ma r oc an marchogyon a goll n, ac y gyt a hynny an brenhin a dyg n ar gyffro ac ir lled  rthym. Ac  rth hynny gel ch a ch gle der atta ch, a chanlyn ch vinheu dr y vydinoed y Rufeinwyr. Ac o kanhorth ya an tyghetuenneu ni, ae llad Petrius ae dala ni a orvydn.”
- 10 44. Ac ar hynny dangos yr ysparduneu yr meirych a orugant, a thr y vydinoed y marchogyon o ebr ydruthur mynet drostunt hyt y lle yd oed Petrius yn dysgu y gedymdeithon. Ac yn gyflym Boso a gyrcha d Petrius a meglyt ynda  her ydr y vyn gyl a, megys y 15 racdy edassei, dyg yda  y gyt ac ef yr lla r. Ac  rth hynny ymgynulla  a  neynt y Rufeinwyr y geissa  y ell g y gan y elynyon. Ac or parth arall yd ympentyrrynt y Brytanyeit yn borth y Voso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yna y cly it y lleuein ar gorderi ; yna yd oed yr aerua dirua r 20 o bop parth, hyt tra ytoedynt y Rufeinwyr yn keissa  rydhau eu ty yssa c, ar Brytanyeit yn y attal. Ac yna y gellit g ybot p y oreu a digonei a g ay , p y oreu a saetheu, p y oreu a chledyf. Ac or diwed y Brytanyeit gan te hau eu bydinoed a dugant eu ruthur ar 25 karcharoryon gantunt dr y vydinoed y Rufein yr, hyt pan vydynt ym perued kedernit eu hymlad ehunein a Phetriusgantunt. Ac yn y lle ymchoelut ar yr Rufeinwyr ymdieuit oc eu tywyssa c ac or ran v yaf yn  anach ac yn  asgaredigach dangos eu kefneu a orugant  rth ffo. 30 Ac  rth hynny est g gantunt a  naeth y Brytanyeit, ac eu llad ac eu hyspeila , ac erlit y rei a ffoynt, a dala lla er or rei a damunynt y eu dangos yr brenhin. Ac or

diwed gŵedy gŵneuthur llawer o berigleu a drŵc onadunt, y Brytanyeit ŷynt[eu] a ymchoelassant y eu pebylleu ar karcharoryon ac ar yspeileu gantunt. A chan leŷenyd ŷynt a dangossant Petrius ar karcharoryon ereill y gyt ac ef y Arthur. Ac ynteu a diolches udunt gan diruaŵr 5 leŷenyd eu llafur ac eu gŵassanaeth yn y aŵssen ef, gan adaŵ achŵaneckau eu henryded ac eu kyuoeth am eu milŵryaeth ac eu molyant. Ac yna yd erchis Arthur mynet ar carcharoryon hyt ym Paris y eu kadŵ, tra gymerit kyghor amdanunt. Ac yd erchis Arthur y 10 Gadŵr iarll Kernŷ a Bedwyr a Rickart a Bosel ac eu teuluoed y gyt ac ŷynteu eu hebrŵg, hyt pan elhynt yn diogel, rac ofyn tŵyll y Rufeinwyr.

45. Ar Rufeinwyr y nos hono, gŵedy caffel onadunt gŵybot y darpar hŵnnŵ, a etholassant pymtheg mil o wyr 15 aruaŵc ac ae gellygassant hyt nos y ragot y fford y tebygynt eu mynet trannoeth, y geissaŵ rydhau eu karcharoryon. Ac yn tyŵyssogyon ar yr rei hynny y gossodet Ultei a Chadeŵl a Chwintus senedŵr ac Evander vrenhin Siria a Sertor vrenhin Libia. Ar rei hynny 20 oll a gymerasant eu hynt, hyt pan gaŵssant y lle a vei adas gantunt y lechu, ac yno aros y dyd arnadunt.

46. Ar bore drannoeth kymryt eu fford a wnaeth y Brytanyeit ac eu karcharoryon parth a Pharis. Ac val yd oedynt yn dyuot yn agos yr lle yd oed y pyt y gan 25 eu gelynyon arnadunt, ac ŷynteu heb wybot dim or vrat nae thybyaŵ, yn dirybud eu kyrchu a oruc y Rufeinwyr, a dechreu eu gŵaskaru a mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes, kyt kyrchit y Brytanyeit yn dirybud, ny chahat yn diaruot, namyn yn ŵraŵl gŵrthŵynebu y eu gelynyon. 30 A rei a dodassant y gadŵ y karcharoryon, ac ereill yn vydinoed y ymlad. Ar vydin a ossodassant y gadŵ y carcharoryon a orchmynnassant y Rickert a Bedwyr. A thywyssogaeth y rei ereill a orchmynnŵyt y Gadŵr

iarll Kernyó, a Borel yn gyttwyssaó idaó. Ar Rufeinwyr kyrchu a wneynt heb geissaó na llunyeithaó eu góyr nae bydinaó, namyn oc eu hoíl lafur keissaó góneuthur aerua or Brytanyeit, hyt tra yttoedynt óynteu  
 5 yn bydinaó eu góyr ac yn eu hamdiffyn ehunein. Ac órth hynny gan eu góanhau yn ormod óynt yn dybryt a gollassynt eu karcharoryon, pei na danuonei eu tyghetuen vdunt damunedic ganhorthóy ar vrys. Kanys Góittart iarll Peittaó, góedy góybot y tóyll hónnó, a deuth a their  
 10 mil gantaó. Ac or diwed gan nerth Duó ar kanhorthóy hónnó y Brytanyeit a oruuant, ac a talyssant eu haerua yr tóyllwyr. Ac eissoes yn y gyfranc kyntaf y collasant lawer. Kanys yna y collasant yr arderchaó tywyssaó Borel o Cenoman; yn kyuaruot ac Euander vrenhin Siria  
 15 yn vrathedic gan y waeó y dygóydóys. Yna y kollasant hefyt petóar góyr bonhedigyon, nyt amgen, Hirlas o Pirón a Meuruc o Gaer Geint ac Alidóo o Dindagól a Hir uab Hydeir. Nyt oed haóð kaffel góyr leóach nor rei hynny. Ac yr hynny ny chollasant y Brytanyeit  
 20 eu glewder,<sup>1</sup> namyn oc eu llauur kadó eu karcharoryon. Ac or diwed ny allyssant y Rufeinwyr diodef eu ruthur, namyn yn gyflym adaó y maes a ffo parth ac eu pebylleu, ar Brytanyeit yn eu herlit ac yn góneuthur aerua onadunt. Ac ny pheidassant yn eu dala ac yn eu llad,  
 25 hyt pan ladassant Vltei a Chadell senedór ac Evander vrenhin Siria. A góedy caffel or Brytanyeit y vudugolyaeth honno, óynt a anuonassant y karcharoryon hyt ym Paris. Ar rei a dalyassant o newyd, óynt ae hym[ch]oelassant ar Arthur eu brenhin oe dangos, gan  
 30 adaó gobeith hoíl uudugolyaeth idaó; kanys nifer mor vychan a hónnó a geóssynt uudugolyaeth ar y saól elynyon hynny.

1. MS. gleuder

47. A gŵedy gŵelet o Les amheraŵtyr Rufein meint y gollet ar dechreu y ryfel, trŵm a thrist uu gantaŵ. A medylŵaŵ a oruc peidaŵ ae darpar am ymlad ac Arthur a mynet y dinas Aŵuarn y aros porth o newyd attaŵ y gan Leo amheraŵdyr. A gwedy caffel o honaŵ hynny 5 yn y gyghor, y nos honno ef a aeth hyt yn Legris. A gŵedy menegi hynny y Arthur, ynteu a raculaenŵys y fford ef. Ar nos honno, gan adaŵ y dinas ar y llaŵ asseu idaŵ, ef a aeth hyt y myŵn dyffryn y fford y kerdei Les amheraŵdyr ae lu. Ac yno y mynŵys ef bydinaŵ y 10 wyr. Ac ef a erchis y Vorud iarll Kaer Loyŵ kymryt attaŵ lleg o wyr a mynet ar neilltu yg gŵersyll, a phan welei uot yn reit ŵrthunt, dyfot yn ganhorthŵy. Ac odynd y nifer oll y am hynny a ranŵys yn naŵ bydin, ac ym pob bydin or naŵ chwe gŵyr a chwe ugeint a chwe 15 chant a chwe mil, ar rei hynny yn gyweir o bop arueu, ar rann o bop bydin yn uarchogyon ar rann araŵ yn bedyt, a thywyssogyon y dyscu pob bydin yn y blaen. Ac yr vydin gyntaf y rodet Araŵn uab Kynuarch a Chadŵr iarll Kernyŵ, vn yn yr anher deheu ar llaŵ yn yr anher 20 asseu. Ac yr vydin araŵ y rodet Gereint Garanŵys a Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yr dryded y rodet Echel vrenhin Denmarc a Leu uab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yr bedwared y rodet Howel uab Emyr llydaŵ a Gŵalchmei uab Gŵyar, deu nei y Arthur. Ac yn ol y pedeir hynny 25 y gossodet pedeir bydin ereill drae kefyn ŵynteu. Ac yr gyntaf or rei hynny y rodet Kei bensŵydwr a Bedwyr bentrullyat. Ac yr nessaf idi y rodet Hodlyn iarll Ruthyn a Gŵittart iarll Peittaŵ; ac yr tryded Owein o Gaer Leon a Ionathal o Gaer Weir; ac yr petwared 30 Vryen Vadon a Chursalem o Gaer Geint. Ac Arthur ehun a etholes <sup>1</sup> lleg idaŵ o varchogyon aruaŵc o

1. MS. ae otholes

chwe gŵyr a chwe ugeint a chwe chant a chŵe mil. A rac  
bron Arthur sefyll y dreic eureit, yr honn a oed yn lle arŵyd  
idaŵ, megys y gellynt y gŵyr blin ar rei brathedic, pan  
gymhellei eu hagen<sup>1</sup> udunt, ffo dan yr arŵyd honno  
5 megys y gastell diogel.

48. A gŵedy llunyaethu paŵb yn y ansaŵd, Arthur a  
dywaŵt val hynn ŵrth y varchogyon: "Vyg kytuar-  
chogyon kytdiodeuedic ymi,<sup>2</sup> chŵi a ŵnaethaŵch ynys  
Prydein yn arglŵydes ar dec teyrnas ar hugeint; y aŵch  
10 deŵred chŵi ac y aŵch molyant y kytdiolchaf ynheu  
hynny, y molyant nyt yttyŵ yn pallu nac yn dyffygyaŵ,  
namyn yn kynydu. Kyt ry foch chŵi ys pump mlyned  
yn arueru o seguryt heb arueru o arueu a milŵryaeth, yr  
hynny eissoes ny chollyssaŵch aŵch anyanaŵl dayoni,  
15 namyn yn wastat parhau yn ach bonhedic dayoni.  
Kanys y Rufeinwyr a gymellassaŵch ar ffo, y rei a oed  
oc eu syberŵyt yn keissaŵ dŵyn aŵch rydit y gennŵch,  
ac yn wŵy eu nifer nor einym ni. Ac ny allasant sefyll  
yn aŵch erbyn, namyn yn dybryt ffo gan achub y dinas  
20 hŵnn. Ac yr aŵr honn y doant o hŵnnŵ drŵy y dyffryn  
hŵnn y gyrchu Aŵuarn. Ac y am hynn yma y gellŵch  
chŵitheu eu kaffel ŵynt yn dirybud ac eu llad megys  
deueit. Kanys gŵyr y dŵyrein a debygant<sup>3</sup> bot llesked  
ynaŵch chŵi, pan geissynt gŵneuthur aŵch gŵlat yn  
25 trethaŵl udunt a chwitheu yn geith udunt. Pony  
wybuant ŵy py ryŵ ymladeu a dyborthassaŵch chŵi y wyr  
Lychlyn a Denmarc ac y tywyssogyon Freinc, y rei  
a oreskynassaŵch chŵi, ac a rydhayssaŵch y ŵrth eu  
harglŵydiaeth waratŵydus ŵy? Ac ŵrth hynny, kan  
30 gorfuaŵ ni yn yr ymladeu kadarnaf hynny, heb amheu  
ni a orfydŵn yn yr ymladeu yscaŵn hynn, os o vn  
dihewyt ac o vn vryt y llafuryŵn y gyŵarsagu yr hanner

1. MS. hageu      2 MS. yni      3 *leg.* debygnt

gŷyr hynn. Py veint o enryded a medyant a chyfoeth a geiff paŷb ohonaŷch chŷi, os megys kytvarchogyon ffydlaŷn yd ufudheŷch chŷi ym gorchymynn ynheu? Kanys gŷedy gorffom ni arnadunt, ni a gyrchŷn Rufein, a ni a gaffŷn y medu hi. Ac velly keffŷch yr eur ar aryant 5 ar llysoed ar tired ar kestyll ar dinassoed; ac eu holl gyuoeth a geffŷch.” Ac val yd oed yn dyŷedut hynny ŷrthunt, paŷb o vn eir a gadarnassant bot yn gynt y diodefynt ageu noc yd ymedeŷynt ac ef, tra vei ef vyŷ or blaen. 10

49. A gŷedy gŷybot or amheraŷdyr y vrat yd oedit yn y darparu idaŷ, nyt ffo a oruc ef megys y darparyssei, namyn galŷ y leŷder attaŷ a chyrchu y dyffryn hŷnnŷ ar eu tor. A galŷ y tyŷyssogyon attaŷ a dywedut ŷrthunt val hyn: “Tadeu enrydedus o arglŷydiaeth, or rei y 15 dylyir kynal teyrnassoed y dŷyrein<sup>1</sup> ar gorlleŷin yn darestygedic vdunt, koffeŷch ych hendadeu, y rei yr gŷorescyn eu gelynyon ny ochelynt ellŷg eu priaŷt waet ehunein, namyn adaŷ agreiff molyant yr rei a delei gŷedy ŷynt. Ac velly yn vynyh y goruydynt. A chan 20 oruot y gochelynt agheu, kanys ny daŷ y neb namyn yr neb y gŷelho Duŷ, ar ansaŷd y mynho Duŷ, ar amser y mynho. Ac ŷrth hynny yd achŷaneckeynt hŷy gyfoeth Rufein ac eu molyant hŷy ac eu clot ac eu hadŷynder ac eu haelder. Ac o hynny y dyrcheynt ŷynt ac eu 25 harglŷydiaeth ac eu hetuedyon ar yr holl vyt. Ac ŷrth hynny gan damunaŷ kyffroi ynaŷch chwitheu y kyfryŷ hŷnnŷ yd anogaf i hyt pan alŷoch chŷi attaŷch aŷch anyanaŷl dayoni, a hyt pan safoch yndi gan gyrchu aŷch gelynyon yssyd yn aŷch aros yn y dyffryn hŷnn 30 gan deissyfyt y gennŷch aŷch dylyet. Ac na thebygŷch y mae rac eu hofyn ŷy y kyrcheis i y dinas hŷnn, namyn

1. MS. dŷyfrein



o tebygu an herlit ni ohonunt hŷy, ac yn deissyfyt kaffel ohonam aerua diruaŵr eu meint ohonunt. A chanys yn amgen y gŷnaethant hŷy noc y tebygassŷn i, gŷnaŷn ninheu yn amgen noc y tebygant ŷynteu. Deisyfŷn 5 ŷynt, ac yn leŷ kyrchŷn ŷynt. A chyt gorffont, diodefŷn ni yn da y rythur gyntaf y gantunt; a velly heb amheu ni a oruydŷn. Kanys y neb a safo yn da yn y rythur gyntaf, mynych yŷ y vynet gan uudugolyaeth yn llaŷer o ymladeu.”

- 10 50. A gŷedy daruot idaŷ teruynu yr ymadraŷd hŷnnŷ a llaŷer o rei ereill, paŷb o vn dihewyt a rodassant eu dŷylaŷ gan tygu nat ymedewynt ac ef; ac ar vrys gwisgaŷ amdanunt eu harueu ac adaŷ Legrys a chyrchu y dyffryn, y lle yd oed Arthur gŷedy llunyaethu y  
 15 vydinoed. Ac yna gossot a ŷnaethant hŷynteu drŷy deudec bydin o varchogyon a phedyt yn herŷyd Rufeinaŷl deuaŷt o chwe gŷyr a thrugeint a chwe chant a chŷe mil ym pop bydin; ac ym pop vn ohonunt llyŷodyr, hyt pan vei o dysc hŷnnŷ y kyrchynt ac y  
 20 kilynt, pan vei dylvedus udunt, ac y gŷrthŷynebynt y eu gelynyon. Ac y vn or bydinoed y rodes<sup>1</sup> les. Kadell senedŷr o Rufein ac Aliphantina brenhin yr Yspaen, ac yr eil Hirtacus brenhin Parth a Meuruc senedŷr, ac yr tryded Bocus brenhin Nidif a Ganis  
 25 senedŷr, yr bedwarded Qŷintus a Myrr senedŷr. Ar pedeir hynny a rodet yn y blaen. Ac yn ol y pedeir hynny y dodet pedeir ereill. Ac y vn or rei hynny y rodet Serx brenhin Ituri, ac yr eil Polites duc Ffrigia, yr tryded Pandrasius brenhin yr Eift, yr pedŷared duc  
 30 Bitinia. Ac yn ol y rei hynny pedeir bydin ereill. Ac y vn ohonunt y rodet Qŷintus Carucius, ac yr eil iarll Lelli Hosti, yr tryded Sulpius, yr pedŷared Marius

1. MS. yr adodes

senedŵr. Ac ynteu yr amheraŵtyr hŵnt ac yma, yn annoc y wyr ac yn eu dysgu py wed yd ymledynt. Ac ym perued y llŵ yd erchis ef sefyll yn gadarn eryr eureit, yr hŵnn a oed yn lle arŵyd idaŵ, ac erchi y baŵp or a ōehenit y ŵrth y vydin, gyrchu yno.

5

51. Ac or diŵed gŵedy sefyll paŵb yn erbyn y gilyd onadunt y Brytanyeit or ne[i]ll parth ar Rufeinwyr or parth arall, pan glyŵssant sein yr arŵydon, y vydin, yd oed brenhin yr Yspaen ae gedymdeith yny llywyaŵ, ymgyuarfot a orugant a bydin Araŵn uab Kynuarch a Chadŵr 10 iarll Kernyŵ, a hynny yn wychyr ac yn leŵ. Ac eissoes ny allyssant nae thorri nae gŵasgaru. Ac ual yd oedynt uelly yn ymlad yn dywal ac yn wychyr, nachaf Gereint Garanŵys a Boso o Ryt Ychen ac eu bydin yn eu kyrchu yn deissyfyt o rydec eu meirych, ac yn tyllu eu gelynyon 15 ac yn mynet drostunt, hyt pan gyfarfuant a bydin brenhin Parth, yr honn a yttoed yn kyrchu yn erbyn bydin Echel brenhin Denmarc a Leu vab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yna heb vn gohir o bop parth ymgymysgu a ōnaethant y bydinoed, a mynet paŵb dros 20 y gilyd onadunt; ac aerua diruaŵr y meint o bop parth, ar lleuein ar gorderi yn llanŵ yr aŵyr o son; ar rei brathedic yn maedu y dayar ac ae penneu ac eu sodleu, a thrŵy eu gŵaet yn terfynu eu buched. Ac eissoes y kollet kyntaf a deuth yr Brytanyeit. Kanys Bedwyr a 25 las, a Chei a vrathŵyt yn agheuaŵl. Kanys pan ymgyfarvu Vedwyr a brenhin Nidif, y brathŵyt a gleif yny dygŵydŵys. A hyt tra yttoed Gei yn keissaŵ dial Bedwyr, ym perued kat brenhin Nidif y brathŵyt ynteu. Ac eissoes o defawt <sup>1</sup> marchaŵc da, ar ystondard a oed 30 yn y laŵ gan lad a gŵasgaru y elynyon, agori fford idaŵ a oruc; ac ae vydin gantaŵ yn gyfan ef a doeth hyt ym

- plith y wyr ehunan, pei nar gyfarffei ac ef vydin brenhin Libia. Honno a gasgarŷys y vydin ef yn hollaŷl, ac ynteu a ffoes a chorff Bedŷyr gantaŷ hyt y dan y dragon eureit. Ac yna py veint o gŷynuan a oed gan wyr Normandi,
- 5 pan welsant gorff eu tyŷyssaŷc yn vriŷedic or saŷl welioed hynny? Py veint gŷynuan a ŷneynt wyr yr Angiŷ ŷrth welet gŷelieu Kei eu tyŷyssaŷc, pei kaffei neb enkyt y gŷynaŷ y gilyd gan y amdiffyn ehunan yg kyfrŷg y bydinoed gŷaetlyt?
- 10 52. Ac ŷrth hynny Hirlas nei Bedwyr yn gyffroedic o agheu Bedwyr a gymerth a gyt ac ef trychant marchaŷc, a megys baed koet trŷy blith llaŷer o gŷn kyrchu drŷy blith y elynaŷl vydinoed yr lle y gŷelei arŷyd brenhin Nidif, heb didarbot py beth a damŷeinei idaŷ gan gaffel
- 15 dial y eŷythyr ohonaŷ. Ac or diŷed ef a gafas dyuot hyt y lle yd oed vrenhin Nidif, ac ae kymmerth o blith y vydin, ac ae duc gantaŷ hyt y lle yd oed gorff Bedwyr, ac yno y drylliaŷ yn drylleu man. Ac odyndy goralŷ ar y gedymdeithon, a chan eu hannoc kyrchu eu
- 20 ge nnyon yn vynyth, megys gan atnewydu eu nerth, hyt pan yttoedynt eu gelynyon yn ofnaŷc ac eu callonoed yn crynu. Ac y gyt a hynny kyŷreinach y kyrchynt y Brytanyeit oe dysc ynteu, a chreulonach y gŷneynt aerua. Ac ŷrth hynny grym ac angerd oe annoc ef a
- 25 gymerassant y Brytanyeit, a dŷyn ruthur y eu gelynyon; ac o bop parth udunt diruaŷr aerua a orucpŷyt. Y Rufeinwyr yna y gyt ac aneiryf o vilyoed y syrthassant. Yna y llas Aliphant vrenhi[n] yr Yspaen, a Misipia vrenhin Babilon, a Chŷintus Miluius, a Marius Lepidus
- 30 senedŷr. Ac o parth y Brytanyeit y syrthŷys Hodlyn iarll Ruthun, a Leodogar iarll Bolŷyn, a thri thyŷyssaŷc ereill o ynys Prydein, nyt amgen, Cursalem o Gaer Geint, a Gŷallaŷc vab Llywynaŷc o Salsbri, a Vryen o Gaer Vadon. Ac ŷrth hynny gŷahanu a ŷnaethant y bydinoed

yd oedynt yn y llywyaŵ, ac enkil drachefyn hyt ar y  
 vydin yd oed Howel uab Emyr Lydaŵ a Gŵalchmei uab  
 Gŵyar yn y llywyaŵ. A phan welas y gŵyr hynny eu  
 kedymdeithon yn ffo, enynu o lit megys fflam yn enynu  
 godeith, gan alŵ y rei a oedynt ar ffo a chyrchu eu 5  
 gelynyon. A chymell ar ffo y rei a oedynt yn eu herlit  
 ŷynteu kyn no hynny gan eu bŵrŵ ac eu llad, a gŵneuthur  
 aerua heb orfoŷys onadunt, hyt pan deuthant hyt ar  
 vydin yr amheraŵdyr.

53. A phan welas yr amheraŵdyr yr aerua oe wyr, 10  
 bryssyaŵ a oruc yn borth udunt. Ac yna y gŵnaethpŵyt  
 y Brytanyeit yn veirŵ; kanys Kynuarch tyŵysaŵc  
 Trigeri a dŵy vil y gyt ac ef a las yna. Ac yna y llas or  
 parth arall trywyr, nyt amgen, Rigyfarch a Bolconi a  
 Laŵin o Votlan. A pheir bydynt tywyssogyon teyrnassoed, 15  
 yr oessoed a delhynt gof hyt vraŵt ac a enrydedynt  
 eu molyant ac eu clot. Ac eissoes pŵy bynhac  
 a gyfarffei a Hoŵel neu a Gŵalchmei oc eu gelynyon,  
 ny diagei ae eneit gantaŵ. A gŵedy eu dyuot, megys  
 y dywespŵyt uchot, hyt ym plith bydin yr amheraŵdyr, 20  
 yn damgylchedic oc eu gelynyon y syrthassant y tryŵyr  
 hynny. Ac ŵrth hynny Howel a Gŵalchmei, y rei ny  
 magyssit yn yr oessoed kyn noc ŷynt neb well noc ŷynt,  
 pan welsant yr aerua oc eu kedymdeithon, yn ŷychyr y  
 kyrchassant hŵnt ac yman, vn o bop parth yn gyffredin 25  
 yn dyŵalhau ac yn blinaŵ bydin yr amheraŵdyr, ac  
 megys llucheit yn llad a gyfarffei ac ŷynt, ac yn annoc  
 eu kedymdeithon; a Gŵal[ch]mei yn damunaŵ oe holl  
 dihewyt ymgaffel a Les amheraŵdyr y gymell arnaŵ  
 peth a digonei ym milŵryaeth. Ac nyt oed haŵd barnu 30  
 pŵy oreu, ae Hoŵel ae Gŵalchmei.

54. Ac odyndy Gŵalchmei a gafas y damunedic hynt.  
 Ac yn ŷychyr kyrchu yr amheraŵdyr a oruc, a gossot  
 arnaŵ. Ac eissoes Les, megys yd oed yn dechreu

blodeuaŵ dewred y ieuenctit ac yn vaŵr y ynni, nyt oed well dim gantaŵ ynteu noc ymgaffel ar ryŵ uarchaŵc clotuaŵr hŵnnŵ, yr hŵnn a gymellei y wybot beth vei y angerd ae deŵred. Ac ŵrth hynny diruaŵr leŵenyd a  
 5 gymerth yndaŵ ŵrth ymgaffel ohonaŵ a gŵr kynglotuor-  
 russet a Gŵalchmei. Ac ymerbynyeit yn galet a ŵnaeth pob vn ae gilid, megys na ŵelat rŵg deu vilŵr ymlad a gyffelypit y hŵnnŵ. A phan yttoedynt ŵy yn neŵidyaŵ kaledyon dyrnodeu, a phob vn yn llafuryaŵ agheu y  
 10 gilyd, nachaf y Rufeinwyr ynn ympentyryaŵ yn eukylch, hyt pan vu reit y Walchmei a Howel ac eu bydinoed enkilyaŵ hyt ar vydin Ōrthur, gan eu llad or Rufeinwyr yn drut.

55. A phan welas Arthur yr aerua yd oedit yn y  
 15 wneuthur oe wyr ef, tynu Caletvŵlch y gledyf goreu a ŵnaeth, ac yn vchel dyŵedut val hynn: "Py achaŵs y gedŵch chŵi y gŵreicolyon wyr hynn y genŵch? Nac aet vn yn vyŵ onadunt, nac aet. Koffeŵch aŵch deheuoed, y rei yn gyfrŵys yn y saŵl ymladeu kyn no  
 20 hynn a darestygassant dec teyrnas ar hugeint ŵrth vym medyant. Koffeŵch aŵch hendadeu, y rei, pan oedynt gadarnach gŵyr Rufein no hediŵ, ae gŵnaethant yn drethaŵl udunt. Koffeŵch aŵch rydit, yr honn y mae yr hanher gŵyr hynn yn keissaŵ y dŵyn y genŵch. Ac ŵrth  
 25 hynny nac aet vn yn vyŵ onadunt, nac aet." A chan dywedut yr ymadrodyon hynny, kyrchu y elynyon ac eu bŵrŵ dan y draet ac eu llad. A phŵy bynnac a gyfarffei ac ef, o vn dyrnaŵt y lladei ac ef ae varch. Ac ŵrth hynny paŵb a foynt racdaŵ, megys y foynt aniueileit rac  
 30 lleŵ creulaŵn, pan vei neŵyn maŵr arnaŵ ac ynteu yn keissaŵ bŵyt. A phŵy bynhac o damŵein a gyfarffei ac ef, nys differei y arueu ef rac Caletvŵlch, hyt pan vei reit idaŵ talu y eneit y gyt ae ŵaet. Deu urenhin oc eu drycdamŵein a gyfaruuant ac ef, Sertor brenhin Libia

a Pholites brenhin Bitinia. Ar deu hynny gŵedy llad eu penneu a anuones Arthur y Rufein.

56. A gŵedy gŵelet or Brytanyeit eu brenhin yn ymlad uelly,<sup>1</sup> gleŵder ac ehofynder a gymerassant, a chan teŵhau eu bydinoed o vn vryt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr gan darparu 5 mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes gŵrthŵynebu yn wychyr a oruc y Rufeinwyr udunt, ac o dysc Les amheraŵdyr llafuryaŵ y talu aerua yr Brytanyeit. A chymeint uu yr ymlad yna o bop parth a chyt pei<sup>2</sup> yr aŵr honno y dechreuyn yr ymlad. Or neill parth yd oed yr arderchaŵc vrenhin 10 Arthur yn llad y elynyon, ac yn annoc y wyr y sefyll yn ŵraŵl. Ac or parth arall yd oed Les amheraŵdyr yn annoc y Rufeinwyr ac yn eu dysgu ac yn eu moli. Ac ny orfoŵyssei ynteu yn llad ac yn bŵrŵ y elynyon ac yn kylchynu y vydinoed ehun. A phy elyn bynac a 15 gyfarffei ac ef, a gŵayŵ neu a chledyf y lladei. Ac uelly o bop parth y bydei Arthur yn gŵneuthur aerua. Kanys gŵeitheu y bydynt trechaf<sup>3</sup> y Brytanyeit, gŵeitheu ereill y bydynt<sup>4</sup> trechaf<sup>3</sup> y Rufeinwyr. A phan yttoedynt hŵy<sup>5</sup> yn yr ymfust hŵnnŵ, heb wybot py diŵ y damŵeinei 20 y vudugolyaeth, nachaf Morud iarll Caer Loyŵ yn dyuot ar llog a dyŵedassam ni y hadaŵ uchoŵ yg gŵersyll, ac yn deissyfyt<sup>6</sup> yn kyrchu eu gelynyon yn dirybud or tu yn eu<sup>7</sup> hol ac yn mynet drostunt, gan eu gŵasgaru a gŵneuthur aerua diruaŵr y meint. Ac yna y syrthassant<sup>8</sup> 25 llaber o vilyoed or Rufeinwyr. Ac yna y dygŵydyŵs Les amheraŵdyr yn vrathedic gan leif neb vn, ac y bu varŵ. Ac yna, kyt bei drŵy diruaŵr lafur, y Brytanyeit a gaŵssant y maes.<sup>9</sup>

57. Ac yna y gŵasgarassant<sup>1</sup> y Rufeinwyr<sup>2</sup> yr diffeithŵch 30 ac yr coedyd, ac ofyn yn eu kymell. Ereill yr dinassoed

(Ch. 56). 1 y velly? *the initial letters are illegible*, 2 chyn bei, 3 drechaf, 4 bydei, 5 ŵy, 6 deissyfydic, 7 y, 8 syrthysant, 9 ar goruot *add*.  
(Ch. 57). 1 gvasgaryssant, 2 rei *add*.

ar kestyll ac yr lleoed kadarn y ffoynt; ar Brytanyeit oc eu hol yn<sup>3</sup> eu hymlit, ac o druanaf aerua<sup>4</sup> yn eu llad ac yn eu dala ac yn eu hyspeilað. Ac uelly megys y rodynt y ran vóyaf<sup>5</sup> onadunt eu dóylað yn wreigaðl y eu 5 róymað ac y eu karcharu, y geissað ystynu ychydic y<sup>6</sup> eu hoedel. A hynny<sup>7</sup> o jaðon vraðt<sup>8</sup> Duð. Kanys eu hendadeu ðynteu kyn no hynny yn andlyydedus a ðnathoedynt<sup>9</sup> y Brytanyeit yn drethaðl udunt; ar Brytanyeit yna yn nackau udunt y dreth yd oedynt yn 10 andlyydedus yn y cheissað gantunt.<sup>10</sup>

58. A gúedy caffel o Arthur y vudugolyaeth, ef a erchis gúahanu ar neilltu<sup>1</sup> kalaned y wyrda ef y órth y elynaðl galaned ac eu kyðeiryað o vrenhinaðl defaðt, ac eu dóyn yr<sup>2</sup> manachlogoed a vei yn eu gúlat yn ansodedic, 15 ac yno eu cladu yn enrydedus. Ac yna y ducpóyt corff Bedwyr hyt y dinas ehun yn Normandi gan diruaðr gúynuan y<sup>3</sup> gan y Normanyeit. Ac yno y myðn mynðent ar deheu y dinas y cladóyt yn enrydedus gyr<sup>4</sup> llað y mur. Kei a ducpóyt yn urathedic hyt yg Kam, y kastell<sup>5</sup> a 20 ðnathoed<sup>6</sup> ehun. Ac yno ny bu bell gúedy hynny yny vu<sup>7</sup> uarð Kei<sup>8</sup> or brath hðnnð. Ac yn y fforest a oed yn agos yno y myðn manachlaðc ermitwyr or enryded a dylpei iarll yr Angið y cladóyt. Hodlyn tyðyssaðc a ducpóyt hyt y<sup>9</sup> dinas ehun, yr hðn a elðir y Tyruan, ac 25 yno y cladóyt. Y gúyrda ereill a erchis Arthur eu dóyn yr manachlogoed nessaf udunt ar hyt y gúlatoed.<sup>10</sup> Ac yna<sup>11</sup> yd erchis ef y óyr y wlat honno cladu y elynyon,<sup>12</sup> ac anuon corff Les amheraðdyr hyt yn sened Rufein. Ac erchi menegi udunt na dylyynt hýy<sup>13 14</sup> teyrnget o ynys 30 Prydein amgen no hðnnð. Ac yno y bu Arthur y gayaf

(Ch. 57). 3 oc eu holl ynni yn, 4 agheu, 5 vvyaff, 6 *om.*, 7 ac uelly, 8 varn, 9 wnaethoedynt, 10 yn y cheissav yn andlyydedus y ganthunt

(Ch. 58). 1 gvahanu a neilltua, 2 yr, 3 *om.*, 4 ger, 5 hyt—kastell: hyt y castell, 6 wnaethoed, 7 yny vu: y bu, 8 *om.*, 9 yn y, 10 gvladoed, 11 odyna, 12 gelynyon, 13 vy, 14 tremygu y brytanyeit nac erchi *add.*

hónnó yn goresgyn y dinassoed y Mórgóin.<sup>15</sup> A phan  
yttoed yr haf yn dechreu dyuot, ac Arthur yn ysgynu  
mynydd Mynheeu<sup>16</sup> órth vynet parth a Rufein, nachaf  
genadeu o ynys Prydein yn menegi y Arthur ry daruot<sup>17</sup>  
y Vedraót y nei, uab y chóaer, goresgyn<sup>18</sup> ynys Prydein a 5  
góisgaó<sup>19</sup> coron y teyrnas am y pen<sup>20</sup> ehun<sup>21</sup> dróy  
greulonder a brat, a thynu<sup>22</sup> Góenhóyfar vrenhines oe  
rieingadeir a ry gysgu<sup>23</sup> genti, gan lygru kyfreith  
dóywaól y neithoreu.<sup>24</sup>

59. A góedy menegi hynny y Arthur, yn y lle peidyaó<sup>1</sup> 10  
a oruc ae darpar am vynet y Rufein, ac ymchoelut parth  
ac ynys Prydein, a brenhined yr ynyssed y gyt ac ef.  
A gellóg Howel uab<sup>2</sup> Emyr Lydaó a llu gantaó y  
tagnefedu ac y hedychu y góladoed.<sup>3</sup> Kanys yr  
yscymunedickaf<sup>4</sup> vradór gan Vedraót a anuonassei 15  
Cheldric<sup>5</sup> tyóysaó y Saeson hyt yn Germania y gynullaó  
y llu móyaf a gallei yn borth idaó. A rodi udunt a oruc o  
Humyr hyt yn Yscotlont, ac yn achóanec kymeint ac a  
uuassei y<sup>6</sup> Hors a Heingyst<sup>7</sup> kyn no hynny yg Kent.<sup>8</sup> Ac  
óρθ hynny y deuth Cheldric ac óyth cant<sup>9</sup> llog yn llaón 20  
o wyr aruaó gantaó<sup>10</sup> o baganyeit,<sup>11</sup> a górhau y Vedraót  
ac ufudhau megys y vrenhin. Ac neur daroed idaó  
gedymdeithockau ataó yr Yscotteit ar Ffichteit, a phaób  
or a óypei ef idaó gassau y ewythyr,<sup>12</sup> hyt pan yttoedynt  
oñ petwar<sup>13</sup> ugein mil róg Cristonogyon a phaganyeit. 25

60. Ac a hynny o nifer gantaó y deuth Medraót<sup>1</sup> hyt yn  
aber Temys, y lle yd oedynt llogau Arthur yn disgynnu.  
A góedy dechreu ymlad, ef a<sup>2</sup> wnaeth aerua diruaó

(Ch. 58). 15 gvrescyn dinassoed bórgóyn, 16 mynheu, 17 darvot?  
18 gverescyn, 19 arwisgaó? 20 ben, 21 om., 22 thynhu, 23 chysgu, ry om.  
24 neithoryeu

(Ch. 59). 1 peidaó, 2 ac eñvg hvel m., 3 gvledi, 4 yscymunediccaf.  
5 chledric, 6 om., 7 hengist, 8 ygkeint, 9 can, 10 om., 11 paganyeit,  
12 *The word before hyt is (a)rthur; between pav(b) and this there is a  
hole in the MS.,* 13 *The initial letters seem to be deu, what follows is  
illegible*

(Ch. 60). 1 om.



onadunt yn dyuot yr tir. Kanys yna y dygŷydassant Araŷn uab Kynuarch, brenhin Yscotlont, a Gŷalchme[i]<sup>3</sup> uab<sup>4</sup> Gŷyar. Ac yn ol Araŷn y deuth Owein vab<sup>4</sup> Vryen yn vrenhin yn Reget, y gŷr gŷedy hynny a vu clotuaŷr  
 5 yn llaŷer o gynhenneu. Ac or diwed, kyt<sup>5</sup> bei drŷy diruaŷr lafur a thrŷy eu llaŷ,<sup>6</sup> Arthur ae lu a gafas y tir. A chan talu yr aerua ŷynt a gymellaŷsant Vedraŷt<sup>7</sup> ae lu ar ffo. A chyn bei mwy eiryf llu Medraŷt no llu Arthur, eissoes kywreinach a doethach yd ymledynt o beunydyaŷl  
 10 ymladeu.<sup>8</sup> Ac ŷrth hynny y bu dir yr anudonaŷl<sup>9</sup> gan Vedraŷt gymryt y ffo. Ar nos honno, gŷedy ymgynullaŷ y wascaredic<sup>10</sup> lu y gyt, yd aeth hyt yg Kaer Wynt. A gŷedy clybot o Wenhŷyuar<sup>11</sup> hynny, diobeithaŷ a oruc, a mynet o Gaer Efraŷc hyt yg Kaer<sup>12</sup> Lion ar Wysc.  
 15 Ac<sup>13</sup> y myŷn manachlaŷc gŷraged a<sup>14</sup> oed yno gŷisgaŷ yr abit ymdanei ac adaŷ cadŷ y diŷeirdeb yn eu plith o hynny allan. Ar abit honno a vu ymdanei hyt agheu.

61. Ac ody na Arthur a gymerth lliŷt maŷr yndaŷ am golli<sup>1</sup> ohonaŷ y saŷl vilioed hynny, a pheri cladu y wyr.  
 20 Ar trydyd dyd kyrchu Caer Wynt a oruc ac yn diannot y chylchynu. Ac yr hynny ny pheidŷys Medraŷt ar hynn a dechreuassei, namŷn, gan annoc y wyr, eu gossot yn vydinoed a mynet allan or dinas y ymlad ac Arthur y ewythyŷr. A gŷedy dechreu ymlad, aerua vaŷr o pob  
 25 parth a wnaethant. Ac eissoes mŷyaf vu yr aerua o wyr Medraŷt; ac yn dybryt kymell arnaŷ adaŷ y maes. Ac ny hanbŷyllŷys<sup>2</sup> Medraŷt yna gohir ŷrth gladu y ladedigyon, namŷn ffo a oruc parth a Chernŷŷ.

62. Ac ŷrth hynny Arthur, yn bryderus ac yn lliŷdiaŷc

(Ch. 60). 2 aeth ac a *add.*, 3 gŷalchmei, 4 mab, 5 *only* ky is legible, 6 a thrŷy eu llaŷ *om.*, 7 medraŷt, 8 o beunydyaŷl ymladeu: wyr arthur, kanys kyfrŷys oedynt o peunydyaŷl ymlad, 9 kelwydaŷc *add.*, 10 gŷasgaredigyon, 11 vrenhines *add.*, 12 ygkaer, 13 yno *add.*, 14 *om.*

(Ch. 61). 1 rygolli, 2 handenŷys

a achawd dianc y túyllór<sup>1</sup> y gantaó, yn y lle<sup>2</sup> ae hymlynóys hyt y wlat honno hyt ar lan Kamlan, y lle yd oed Vedraót yn y aros.<sup>3</sup> Ac órth hynny megys yd oed Vedraót gleóaf a gúychraf yn cyrchu, yn y lle gossot y varchogyon yn vydinoed a oruc. Kanys góell oed 5 gantaó y lad neu ynteu a orffeí, no ffo yn húy no hynny. Kanys yd oed ettwa gantaó o eiryf trugein mil. Ac o hynny y gónaeth ef whech<sup>4</sup> bydin, a whech<sup>5</sup> gúyr a thrugeint a chwe<sup>6</sup> chant a chwe<sup>6</sup> mil ym pob bydin o wyr aruaóc. Ac or rei nyt aed<sup>7</sup> yn y chwech<sup>4</sup> bydin ef a 10 wnaeth bydin idaó ehun, a rodi llywodron y bop vn or rei ereill oll.<sup>8</sup> A dyscu paúb onadunt ac eu hannoc y ymlad a oruc, gan adaó udunt enryded a chyfoeth, os ef a orffeí. Ac or parth arall Arthur a ossodes y wyr<sup>9</sup> ynteu dróy naó bydin; a gorchymyn y baóp onadunt<sup>10</sup> 15 ac annoc llad y lladron túyllwyr yskymyn,<sup>11</sup> a dathoedynt o wladoed ereill o dysc y bratór<sup>12</sup> y geissaó y digyfoethi ynteu. “Ar bobyl a óelóch<sup>13</sup> racko,” heb Arthur, “a<sup>14</sup> gynullóyt o wlatoed<sup>15</sup> amryfaelon, ac aghyfyeth ynt a llesc ag aghyfróys ar ymlad. Ac ny allant góρθóynebu 20 yóch, kanys kyfróys yóch chóí.”<sup>16</sup> Ac velly paúb onadunt yn annoc y wyr or parth arall.<sup>17</sup> Ac yn deissyfyt ymgyfaruot a ónaeth y bydinoed yghyt,<sup>18</sup> a dechreu ymlad a newidyaó dyrnodeu yn vynyach. A chymeint vu yr aerua yna o bop parth ac megys yd oed góynfan<sup>19</sup> y rei 25 meiró yn kyffroi y rei byó ar lit ac ymlad, ac megys yd oed blin a llafuryus<sup>20</sup> y yscriuenu nae datkanu. Kanys o bop parth y brethynt ac y brethit óynteu; óynt a ledynt ac óynteu a ledit.

63. Ac or diwed góedy treulaó llaóer or dyd yn y mod

(Ch. 62). 1 y mynychet hónnó *add.*, 2 ef *add.*, 3 arhos, 4 whech, 5 óhe, 6 whe, 7 aeth, 8 rodi llywodraeth y pop bydin oll, 9 lu, 10 ohonunt, 11 ysgymun, 12 bratór, 13 welhóchi, 14 ar, 15 wladoed, 16 yóchi, 17 or parth arall : o pop parth, 18 ygyt, 19 kóynuan, 20 llafurus

hónnó, Arthur ae vydin a gyrchóys y vydin y góydat<sup>1</sup>  
 bot y tóyllór gan Vedraót yndi,<sup>2</sup> ac agori ffyrd udunt ar  
 clefydeu,<sup>3</sup> ac yn diannot mynet drostunt, a góneuthur<sup>4</sup>  
 aerua diruaór<sup>5</sup> onadunt. Kanys yn y lle y dygóydóys  
 5 yr yscymunedickaf<sup>6</sup> vradór hónnó gan Vedraót, a lláber o  
 vilioed y gyt ac ef. Ac eissoes yr hynny ny ffoyssant<sup>7</sup>  
 y rei ereill, namyn ymgynullaó y gyt<sup>8</sup> or maes oll, ac  
 yn heróyd eu gleóder keissaó ymgynhal a góρθóynebu  
 y Arthur. Ac óρθ hynny góychraf a girattaf<sup>9</sup> a  
 10 chreulonaf aerua a vu y rydunt yna o bop parth, ac eu  
 bydinoed yn syrthaó. Ac yna o bop<sup>10</sup> parth y<sup>10</sup> Vedraót y  
 syrthassant<sup>11</sup> Cheldric<sup>12</sup> ac Elafyós,<sup>13</sup> Egberinc<sup>10</sup> brenhin  
 or Saeson; or Góydyl Gilapadric,<sup>14</sup> Gillamóri, Gillasel,  
 Gillamor.<sup>15</sup> Yr Yscottyeit ar Ffichteit ac óynt ac eu  
 15 harglóydi oll hayach a las. Ac o bleit<sup>16</sup> Arthur y llas  
 Osbrinc brenhin Lychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc,<sup>17</sup>  
 Kadór Lemenic<sup>18</sup> iarll Kernyó, Kasóallaón, a lláber o  
 vililioed<sup>19</sup> y gyt ac óynteu,<sup>20</sup> róg y Brytanyeit a chenedloed  
 ereill a ducsynt y gyt ac óynt. Ac ynteu yr arderchaó  
 20 vrenhin Arthur a vrathóyt yn agheuaól, ac a ducpóyt  
 odyndy hyt yn ynys Avallach y iachau y welieu. Coron  
 y<sup>21</sup> teyrnas o ynys Prydein a gymynnóys ynteu y  
 Gustenin<sup>22</sup> vab Kadór iarll Kernyó y gar. Dóy vlyned a  
 deugeint<sup>23</sup> a phump kant góedy dyfot Crist yg knaót  
 25 dyn oed hynny yna.

(Ch. 63). 1 góydyat, 2 yndiane, 3 cledyfeu, 4 tristaf, 5 *om.*,  
 6 ysgymunediccaf, 7 foassant, 8 yghyt, 9 girattaff, 10 *om.*, 11 syrthyssant,  
 12 chledric, 13 elefyóys, 14 gillapadric, 15 gillamor gillasel gillamóri,  
 16 pleit, 17 denmarch, 18 llymenic, 19 vilyoed, 20 óynt, 21 *om.*,  
 22 gustenhin, 23 deu vgeint

## III. THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH.

1. Kerdet a orugant 6y y dyd h6nn6 educher. H6ny<sup>1</sup> vyd kaer uae<sup>2</sup>n g6ymr6t a welasit,<sup>3</sup> u6y<sup>4</sup>haf ar keyr6d y b6t<sup>4</sup>. Nachaf g6r<sup>5</sup> du m6y<sup>6</sup> no thr6y6r<sup>7</sup> y b6t h6nn a welant<sup>8</sup> yn dyuot or gaer. Amkeudant<sup>9</sup> 6rtha6: "Pan doy ti,<sup>10</sup> 6r?" "Or gaer a wel6ch ch6i yna."<sup>11</sup> "Pieu y gaer?"<sup>12</sup> "Meredic a wyr 5 y6chi.<sup>13</sup> N6t oes yn y b6t n6 y6ppo pieu y gaer honn. Wrnach Ga6r pieu."<sup>14</sup> "Py uoes yss6d y osp a phellenhic y diskynnu yn y gaer honn?" "Ha vnben, Du6 ach notho!<sup>15</sup> N6 dod6y<sup>16</sup> neb guestei eiroet oheni<sup>17</sup> ae uy6<sup>18</sup> gantha6.<sup>19</sup> N6 edir neb idi namyn a dycc6y<sup>20</sup> y gerd."<sup>21</sup> 10

2. K6rchu y porth a orugant. Amka6d<sup>1</sup> G6rh6r Gualsta6t Ieithoet: "A oes portha6r?"<sup>2</sup> "Oes. A titheu<sup>3</sup> n6 bo teu d6 penn,<sup>4</sup> p6r<sup>5</sup> y k6uerch6 d6?" "Agor y porth!" "Nac agoraf." "P6yst6r<sup>6</sup> nas agor6 ti?" "K6yllell a ed6y6 ym m6yt<sup>7</sup> a ll6nn y mual,<sup>8</sup> ac amsath6r yn neuad Vrnach.<sup>9</sup> 15 Namyn y gerda6r a dycc6y<sup>10</sup> y gerd n6t agorir."<sup>11</sup> Amka6d Kei:<sup>12</sup> "Y portha6r, y mae kerd genh6f i." "Pa gerd yss6d genh6t ti?" "Yslipan6r cled6ueu goreu yn y b6t 6yf ui." "Mi a af y d6wedut h6nn6 y Vrnach<sup>13</sup> Ga6r, ac a d6gaf atteb y6t." 20

VARIANTS H=RED BOOK OF HERGEST, P=PENIARTH MS. IV.

(Ch. 1). 1 yny H, 2 ua6r H, 3 welynt H, 4 v6y<sup>4</sup>haf or byt H, 5 6r H, 6 oed *add.* H, 7 yn *add.* H, 8 a welant *om.* H, 9 ac y dywedassant 6ynteu H, 10 deuy di H, 11 racco H, 12 heb 6ynt *add.* H, 13 y6ch ch6i H, 14 bieu H, 15 nodho H, 16 deuth H, 17 eiryoet ohonei H, 18 vywyt H, 19 ganta6 H, 20 dycko H, 21 ganta6 *add.* H.

(Ch. 2). 1 heb y H, 2 bortha6r H, 3 thithen H, 4 dy daua6t yth benn H, 5 py rac H, 6 Py ystyr H, 7 b6yt H, 8 ym bual H, 9 6rnach ga6r H, 10 dycko H, 11 yma heno bellach *add.* H, 12 Heb y kei yna H, 13 6rnach H

3. Dýuot a oruc y porthaŵr y mýŵn. Dýwaŵt<sup>1</sup> Wrnach Gaŵr:<sup>2</sup> "Whedleu<sup>3</sup> porth genhýt?"<sup>4</sup> "Yssýdýnt genhýt. Kýweithýd ýssýd yn drŵs y porth, ac<sup>5</sup> a uýnnýnt dýuot y mýŵn." "A ouýnneist ti<sup>6</sup> a oed gerd ganthunt?"<sup>7</sup> "Gouýnneis.<sup>8</sup>  
5 Ac vn onadunt a dýwaŵt gallel<sup>9</sup> ýslipanu cledýueu."<sup>10</sup> "Oed<sup>11</sup> reit y mi<sup>12</sup> ŵrth hŵnnŵ. Ys guers ýd ŵýf yn keissaŵ a olchei výt cledýf; nýt rýgeueis.<sup>13</sup> Gat hŵnnŵ y mýŵn, cans oed<sup>14</sup> gerd ganthaŵ."

4. Dýuot<sup>1</sup> y porthaŵr ac agori y porth. A dýuot Kei y  
10 mýŵn ehun. A chýuarch guell a oruc ef y Wrnach Gaŵr. Kadeir a dodet y danaŵ.<sup>2</sup> Dýwaŵt<sup>3</sup> Wrnach<sup>4</sup>: "Ha ŵr, ae gŵir a dýwedir arnat gallel<sup>5</sup> ýslipanu cledýueu?" "Mi ae digonaf."<sup>6</sup> Dýdŵyn<sup>7</sup> y cledýf attaŵ<sup>8</sup> a orucpŵýt.<sup>9</sup> Kýmryt agalen gleis a oruc Kei y dan y geffeil. "Pŵy well genhýt  
15 arnaŵ,<sup>10</sup> ae guýnseit ae grŵmseit?" "Yr hŵnn a uo da genhýt ti, malpei teu uei, gŵna arnaŵ." Glanhau a oruc hanher y lleill gýllell idaŵ, ae rodi yn y laŵ a oruc. "A reinc dý uod di hýnný?" "Oed well genhýt noc ýssýd ým gŵlat, bei oll ýt uei<sup>11</sup> val hýnn. Dýhed a beth bot gŵr kýstal  
20 a thi heb gedýmdeith." "Oia ŵrda, mae<sup>12</sup> imi gedýmdeith kýny dýgo[n]ho<sup>13</sup> y gerd honn." "Pwý ýŵ hŵnnŵ?" "Aet y porthaŵr allan, a mi a dýwedaf ar arŵýdon idaŵ.<sup>14</sup> Penn y wayŵ a daŵ y ar y baladýr. Ac ýssef a dýgýrch y guaet y ar y guýnt ac a diskýn ar y baladýr."<sup>15</sup> Agori y porth a  
25 wnaethpŵýt, a dýuot Bedwýr y mýŵn. Dýwaŵt<sup>16</sup> Kei: "Budugaŵl ýŵ Bedwýr, kýn ný digonho<sup>17</sup> y gerd hon."

(Ch. 3). 1 ac y dywaŵt H, 2 ŵrthaŵ H, 3 chwedleu H, 4 y gennyt H, in P, y has been added over the line, 5 om. H, 6 ouynneist di H, 7 gantunt hŵy H, 8 heb ef add. H, 9 gŵybot H, 10 ohonaŵ yn da add. H, 11 as oed H, 12 ynmi H, 13 ac nys keueis H, 14 kan oes H

(Ch. 4). 1 a oruc H, 2 geyr bron gŵrnach add. H, 3 ac y dywaŵt H, 4 ŵrthaŵ add. H, 5 arnat ti y gŵdost H, 6 Mia ŵnn hynn yn da heb y kei H, 7 Dŵyn H, 8 ŵrnach H, 9 wnaethpŵýt attaŵ H, 10 a gouyn or deu pŵy oed oreu gantaŵ H, 11 pei bei oll ual H, 12 y mae ymi H, 13 dycko H, 14 idaŵ y arwydon H, 15 eilweith add. H, 16 ac y dywaŵt H, 17 wypo H

5. A<sup>1</sup> dadleu maor a uu ar y gŵyr hynnŷ allan. Dyuot<sup>2</sup> Kei a Bedwyr y mŷon. A guas ieuanc a doeth gyt<sup>3</sup> ac ŷynt y mŷon, vn mab Custennhin heussaor. Sef a ŷnaeth ef ae gedŷmdeithon a glŷn<sup>4</sup> ōrthaŷ mal nat oed vŷŷ no dim ganthunt<sup>5</sup> mŷnet<sup>6</sup> dros y teir catlŷs a wnaethant<sup>7</sup> hŷt pan 5 dŷuuant<sup>8</sup> y mŷon y gaer. Amkeudant<sup>9</sup> y gedŷmdeithon ōrth vab Custenhin: "Goreu dŷn yŷ."<sup>10</sup> O<sup>11</sup> hynnŷ allan y gelwit Goreu mab Custenhin. Guascaru a orugant ŷŷ y eu llettyeu, mal y keffŷnt llad eu llettywŷr heb ŷŷbot ŷr caor.

6. ŷ cledŷf a daruu y ŷrteith. Ae rodi a oruc Kei yn llaŷ 10 Wrnach Kaor,<sup>1</sup> y malphei y edrŷch a ranghei y uod idaŷ y weith.<sup>2</sup> Dŷwaŷt<sup>3</sup> y kaor: "Da yŷ y gueith, a ranc bod yŷ genhŷf." Amkaŷd<sup>4</sup> Kei: "Dŷ wein<sup>5</sup> a lŷgrŷs dŷ gledŷf. Dŷro di imi y diot y kellellprenneu<sup>6</sup> oheni,<sup>7</sup> a chaffŷŷf inheu gŷneuthur rei newŷd<sup>8</sup> idaŷ." A chŷmrŷt y wein ohonaŷ, ar 15 cledŷf<sup>9</sup> yn y llaŷ arall. Dŷuot<sup>10</sup> ohonaŷ vch pen y kaor, malphei<sup>11</sup> y cledŷf a dottei yn y wein. ŷ ossot a oruc ŷm phen<sup>12</sup> y kaor, a llad y penn y ergŷt y arnaŷ. Diffeithaŷ y gaer, a dŷŷn a vŷnnassant o tŷlsseu.<sup>13</sup> ŷg kŷuenŷ ŷr vn dŷd ŷm phen<sup>14</sup> y vlŷdŷn y deuthant<sup>15</sup> y lys Arthur, a 20 chledŷf Wrnach Gaor gantunt.

7. Dywedut a ŷnaethant y Arthur y ual y daruu udunt. Arthur a dywaŷt: "Pa beth yssŷd iaŷnaf y geissaŷ gyntaf or annoetheu hynny?" "Iaŷnaf yŷ," heb ŷynteu, "keissaŷ Mabon uab Modron. Ac nyt kaffel arnaŷ nes kaffel Eidoel 25 uab Aer y gar yn gyntaf." Kyuodi a oruc Arthur a milwyr ynys Prydein gantaŷ y geissaŷ Eidoel. A dyuot a orugant hyt yn rac Kaer Glini, yn y lle yd oed Eidoel yg

(Ch. 5). 1 *om.* H, 2 gan y gŵyr a oed allan am dyuot Bedwyr a Chei H, 3 A dyuot gŷas ieuanc oed H, 4 yg glyn H, 5 mal—ganthunt *om.* H, 6 dyuot H, 7 a wnaethant *om.* H, 8 yttoed H, 9 Y dywedassant H, 10 ti a orugost hynn goreu dyn ŷyt H, 11 Ac o H

(Ch. 6). 1 gaor H, 2 gŷeith H, 3 ac y dywaŷt H, 4 Y dywaŷt H, 5 wein di H, 6 kŷllellbrenneu H, 7 ohonei H, 8 ac y wneuthur ereill o newŷd H, 9 chedŷf P, 10 a dyuot H, 11 mal pei H, 12 ynteu ym pennH, 13 or da ar tŷlsseu H, 14 penn H, 15 P *ends*

karchar. Seuyl a oruc Glini ar vann y gaer; ac y dywaot: "Arthur, py holy di y mi, pryt nam gedy yn y tarren honn, nyt da im yndi, ac nyt digrif, nyt gŕenith, nyt keirch im, kyn ny cheissych ditheu wneuthur cam im?"

5 Arthur a dywaot: "Nyt yr drŕc itti y deuthum i yma, namyn y geissaŕ y karcharaŕr yssyd gennyt." "Mi a rodaf y carcharaŕr itti, ac ny darparysswn y rodi y neb. Ac y gyt a hynny vy nerth am porth a geffy di." Y gŕyr a dywaot ŕrth Arthur: "Arglŕyd, dos di adref. Ny elly  
10 di uynet ath lu y geissaŕ peth mor uan ar rei hynn."

Arthur a dywaot: "Gŕrhyr Gŕalstaŕt Ieithoed, itti y mae iaŕn mynet yr neges honn. Yr hoŕl ieithoed yssyd gennyt, a chyfyeth ŕyt ar rei or adar ar annieileit. Eidoel, itti y mae iaŕn mynet y geissaŕ dy geuynderŕ yŕ gyt am gŕyr i. Kei  
15 a Bedwyr, gobeith yŕ gennyf y neges yd eloch ymdanei y chaffel. Eŕch im yr neges honn."

8. Kerdet a orugant racdunt hyt att vŕyalch Gilgŕri. Gouyn a oruc Gŕrhyr idi: "Yr Duŕ, a ŕdost ti dim y ŕrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducpŕyt yn teirnossic ody rŕng y vam  
20 ar paret?" Y uŕyalch a dywaot: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eingon gof a oed yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc oedŕn. Ny wnaethpŕyt gŕeith arnei, namyn tra uu vyg geluin arnei bob ucher. Hediŕ nyt oes kymmeint kneuen ohonei heb dreulaŕ. Diŕl Duŕ arnaf, o chigleu i dim y ŕrth  
25 y gŕr a ovynnŕch chŕi. Peth yssyd iaŕn hagen a dylyet y mi y wneuthur y gennadeu Arthur, mi ae gŕnaf. Kenedlaeth vileit yssyd gynt rithŕys Duŕ no mi; mi a af yn gyuarwyd ragoch yno."

9. Dyuot a orugant hyt yn lle yd oed karŕ Redynure.  
30 "Karŕ Redynure, yma y doetham ni attat kennadeu Arthur, kany ŕdam anieul hyn no thi. Dywet, a wdost di dim y ŕrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducpŕyt yn deirnossic y ŕrth y uam?" Y karŕ a dywaot: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, nyt

oed namyn vn reit o bop tu ym penn. Ac nyt oed yma goet namyn un o gollen derwen. Ac y tyfwys honno yn dar can keing. Ac y dygŷdydŷys y dar gŷedy hynny. A hediŷ nyt oes namyn ŷystyn coch ohonei. Yr hynny hyt hediŷ yd ŷyf i yma; ny chigleu i dim or neb a ouynnŷch chŷi. 5 Miui hagen a uydaŷ gyfarŷyd yŷch, kanys kennadeu Arthur yŷch, hyt lle y mae aniueil gynt a rithŷys Duŷ no mi."

10. Dyuot a orugant hyt lle yd oed cuan Cum Kaŷlŷyt. "Cuan Cŷm Caŷlŷyt, yma y mae kennadeu Arthur. A ŷdost di dim y ŷrth Vabon vab Modron a ducŷyt?" *et cetera*. 10 "Pei as gŷypŷn, mi ae dywedŷn. Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, y cŷm maŷr a welŷch glynn coet oed. Ac y deuth kenedlaeth o dynyon idaŷ, ac y diuaŷyt. Ac y tyuŷys yr eil coet yndaŷ. Ar trydyd coet yŷ hŷnn. A minneu neut ydynt yn gynyon boneu vy esgyl. Yr hynny hyt hediŷ ny chiglef i dim or 15 gŷr a ouynnŷch chŷi. Mi hagen a uydaŷ gyuarwyd y genadeu Arthur, yny deloch hyt lle y mae yr anniueil hynaf yssyd yn y byt hŷnn, a mŷyaf a dreigyl, eryr Gŷern Abŷy.

11. Gŷrhyr a dywaŷt: "Eryr Gwern Abŷy, ni a doetham gennadeu Arthur attat y ouyn itt a ŷdost dim y ŷrth Vabon 20 uab Modron a duc" *et cetera*. Yr eryr a dywaŷt: "Mi a deuthum yma yr ys pell o amser. A phann deuthum yma gyntaf, maen a oed ym, ac y ar y benn ef y pigŷn y syr bob ucher; weithon nyt oes dyrnued yn y uchet. Yr hynny hyt hediŷ yd ŷyf i yma. Ac ny chiglef i dim y ŷrth y gŷr a 25 ouynnŷch chŷi, onyt un treigyl yd euthum y geissaŷ uym bŷyt hyt yn Lynn Lyŷ. A phann deuthum i yno, y lledeis uyg cryuangheu y myŷn ehaŷc o debygu bot vym bŷyt yndaŷ wers vaŷr. Ac y tynnŷys ynteu ui hyt yr affŷys, hyt pann uu abreid im ymdianc y gantaŷ. Sef a ŷneuthum inheu, mi 30 am hŷll garant, mynet yg gŷrys ŷrthaŷ y geissaŷ y diuetha. Kennadeu a yrrŷys ynteu y gymot a mi. A dyuot a oruc ynteu attaf i y diot dec tryuer a deugeint oe geuyn. Onyt



ef a wyr peth or hynn a geissóch chúi, ny ónn i neb ae góypo. Mi hagen a uydaf gyuaróyd yóch hyt lle y mae."

12. Dyuot a orugant hyt lle yr oed. Dywedut a oruc yr eryr: "Ehaóc Lyn Lyó, mi a deuthum attat gan gennadeu  
 5 Arthur y ouyn a ódost dim y órth Vabon uab Modron, a ducpóyt yn teirnossic y órth y uam." "Y gymeint a wypóyf i, mi ae dywedaf. Gan bob llanó yd af i ar hyt yr auon uchot, hyt pan delóyf hyt y mach mur Kaer Loyó. Ac yno y keueis i ny cheueis eirmoet o dróc y gymeint. Ac mal y  
 10 crettoch, doet un ar uyn dóy ysgóyd i yma ohonaóch." Ac ysef yd aeth ar dóy ysgóyd yr ehaóc. Kei a Górh yr Góalstaót Ieithoed. Ac y kerdassant hyt pann deuthant am y uagóyr ar karcharaór. Yny uyd kóynuan a griduan a glywynt am y uagóyr ac óy. Górh yr a dywaót: "Pa dyn a góyn yn y  
 15 maendy hónn?" "Oia ór, yssit le idaó y góynaó y neb yssyd yma. Mabon uab Modron yssyd yma yg carchar; ac ny charcharóyt neb kyndostet yn llóró carchar a mi, na charchar Lud Laó Ereint neu garchar Greit mab Eri." "Oes obeith gennyt ti ar gaffel dy eilóng ae yr eur ae yr aryant ae  
 20 yr golut pressennaól, ae yr catwent ac ymlad?" "Y gymeint ohonof i a gaffer a geffir dróy ymlad." Ymchoelut ohonunt óy odyo, a dyuot hyt lle yd oed Arthur. Dywedut ohonunt y lle yd oed Mabon uab Modron yg karchar. Góyssyaó a oruc Arthur milwyr yr ynys honn, a mynet hyt  
 25 yg Kaer Loyó, y lle yd oed Mabon yg karchar. Mynet a oruc Kei a Bedwyr ar dóy yscóyd y pysc. Tra yttoed vilwyr Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, róygaó o Gei y uagóyr a chymryt y carcharaór ar y geuyn. Ac ymlad ar góyr ual kynt ar góyr. Atref y doeth Arthur a Mabon gantaó yn ryd.  
 30 13. Dywedut a oruc Arthur: "Beth iaónhaf weithon y geissaó yn gyntaf or annoethu?" "Iaónhaf yó keissaó deu geneu gast Rymhi." "A wys," heb yr Arthur, "pa du y mae hi?" "Y mae," heb yr un, "yn Aber Deugledyf."

Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt yn ty Tringat yn Aber Cleddyf. A gouyn a oruc  rtha  : "A glyweist ti y  rthi hi yma? Py rith y mae hi?" "Yn rith bleidast," heb ynteu, "ae deu geneu genthi yd ymda. Hi a lada d vy ysgrybul yn vynyeh. Ac y mae hi issot yn Aber Cleddyf y my n gogof." Sef a 5 oruc Arthur gyrru ym Prytwenn y long ar uor ac ereill ar y tir y hela yr ast; ae chylchynu uelly hi ae deu geneu. Ac eu datritha  o Du  y Arthur yn eu rith ehunein. G ascaru a oruc llu Arthur bob un bob deu.

14. Ac ual yd oed G ythyry mab Greida l dydg eith yn 10 kerdet dros vynyed, y clywei leuein a gridua[n] girat; a garscon oed eu clybot. Achub a oruc ynteu parth ac yno. Ac mal y deuth yno, dispeila  cleddyf a wnaeth, a llad y t ynpath  rth y dayar, ac ev diffryt uelly rac y tan. Ac y dywedassant  ynteu  rtha  : "D c uendyth Du  ar einym 15 gennyt. Ar hynn ny allo dyn vyth y waret, ni a do n y waret itt." H ynt y wedy hynny a doethant ar na  hesta r llinat, a nodes Yspadaden Pennka r ar Culh ch, yn uessuredic oll heb dim yn eisseu ohonunt eithyr un llinhedyn; ar morgrugyn cloff a doeth a h nn  kyn y nos. 20

15. Pan yttoed Gei a Bedwyr yn eisted ar benn Pumlumon ar Garn G ylathyr ar wynt m yaf yn y byt, edrych a  naethant yn eu kylch. Ac  ynt a  elynt v c ma r parth ar deheu ym pell y  rthunt heb drossi dim gan y g ynt. Ac yna y dywa t Kei : "Myn lla  vyng kyueillt, 25 syll dy racco tan ryss r." Bryssya  a orugant parth ar m c, a dynessau parth ac yno dan ymardisg yl o bell. Yny uyd Dillus Uaru c yn deiua  baed coet. Llyna hagen y ryss r m yaf a ochela d Arthur eiryoet. Heb y Bedwyr yna  rth Gei : "Ae hatwaenost di ef?" "Atwen," heb y 30 Kei; "llyna Dillus Uarru c. Nyt oes yn y byt kynllyuan a dalyo Drutwyn keneu Greit uab Eri, namyn kynllyuan o uaryf y g r a wely di racco; ac ny m ynhaa heuyt, onyt yn

vyó y tynnir a chylllellprenneu oe uaraf, kanys breu uyd yn uaró." "Mae an kynghor ninneu órth hynny?" heb y Bedwyr. "Gadón ef," heb y Kei, "y yssu y wala or kic; a góedy hynny kyscu a óna." Tra yttoed ef yn hynny, 5 y buant óynteu yn góneuthur kylllellbrenneu. Pan óybu Gei yn diheu y uot ef yn kyscu, góneuthur póll a oruc dan y draet móyhaf yn y byt. A tharaó dyrnaót arnaó anueitraól y ueint a oruc, ae wascu yn y póll, hyt pan daroed udunt y gnithiaó yn llóyr ar kylllellbrenneu y uaryf; a góedy 10 hynny y lad yn góbyl. Ac odynd yd aethant eil deu hyt yg Kelli Wic yg Kernyó, a chynlluyann o uaryf Dillus Uaruác gantunt. Ae rodi a oruc Kei yn llaó Arthur. Ac yna y kanei Arthur yr eglyn hónn :

15 "Kynnllyuan a oruc Kei  
o uaryf Dillus uab Eurei;  
pei iach, dy angheu uydei."

Ac am hynny y sorres Kei, hyt pan uu abreid y uilwyr yr ynys honn tangnuedu y róng Kei ac Arthur. Ac eissoes nac yr anghyfnert h ar Arthur nac yr llad y wyr nyt 20 ymyrróys Kei yn reit gyt ac ef o hynny allan.

16. Ac yna y dywaót Arthur: "Beth iaónaf weithon y geissaó or annoetheu?" "Iaónaf yó keissaó Drutwyn keneu Greit uab Eri." Kyn no hynny ychydic yd aeth Creidylat uerch Lud Laó Ereint gan Wythyr mab Greidaól. A chynn 25 kyscu genthi dyuot Góynn uab Nud ae dóyn y treis. Kynnullaó llú o Wythyr uab Greidaól a dyuot y ymlad a Góynn mab Nud. A goruot o Wyn, a dala Greit mab Eri a Glinneu eil Taran a Górgóst Letlóm a Dyfnarth y uab; a dala o Penn uab Nethaóc a Nóython a Chyledyr Wylt y 30 uab. A llad Nóython a oruc, a diot y gallon, a chymhell ar Kyledyr yssu callon y dat; ac am hynny yd aeth Kyledyr yg góyllt. Clybot o Arthur hynny, a dyuot hyt y Gogled.

A dyuynnv a oruc ef Góynn uab Nud attab, a gellong y wyrda y gantaó oe garchar, a góneuthur tangneued y róng Góynn mab Nud a Góythyr mab Greidaól. Sef tangneued a wnaethpóyt, gadu y uoróyn yn ty y that yn diuóyn or dóy barth; ac ymlad bob duó kalan Mei uyth hyt dyd braót or dyd hónnó allan y róng Góynn a Góythyr; ar un a orffo onadunt dyd braót, kymeret y uoróyn. A góedy kymot y góyrda hynny uelly, y kauas Arthur Mygdón march Góedó a chynhlllyuan Cór Cant Ewin. 5

17. Góedy hynny yd aeth Arthur hyt yn Lydaó, a Mabon uab Melít gantaó a Góare Góallt Euryr, y geissaó deu gi Glythmyr L[ed]ewic. A góedy eu kaffel yd aeth Arthur hyt yg gorllewin Iwerdon y geissaó Górgi Seueri, ac Odgar uab Aed brenhin Iwerdon gyt ac ef. Ac odyrda yd aeth Arthur yr Gogled, ac y delis Kyledyr Wylít. Ac yd aeth Yskithyrwynn Pennbeid; ac yd aeth Mabon mab Melít, a deu gi Glythuyr Ledewic yn y laó a Drutwyn geneu Greit mab Eri. Ac yd aeth Arthur ehun yr erhyl, a Chauall ki Arthur yn y laó. Ac yd esgynnóys Kaó o Brydein ar Lamrei kassek Arthur, ac achub yr kyfuarch. Ac yna y kymerth Kaó o Brydein nerth bóyellíc, ac yn wychyr trebelít y doeth ef yr baed, ac y hollides y benn yn deu hanner. A chymryt a oruc Kaó yr ysgithyr. Nyt y kón a nottayssei Yspaden ar Gólhóch a ladaód y baed, namyn Kauall ki Arthur ehun. 15 25

18. A góedy llad Ysgithyrwynn Bennbeid, yd aeth Arthurae niuer hyt yng Kelli Wic yng Kernyó. Ac odyrda y gyrróys Menó mab Teirgóaed y edrych a uei y tlysseu y róng deu glust Tórch Tróyth, rac salwen oed uynet y ymdaraó ac ef, ony<sup>1</sup> bei y tlysseu gantaó. Diheu hagen oed y uot ef yno; neur daroed idaó diffeithaó traean Iwerdon. Mynet a oruc Menó y ymgeis ac óynt. Sef y góelas óynt yn Esgeir Oeruel yn Iwerdon. Ac ymrithaó a oruc Menó yn rith

1. MS. ac ony, *corr. Loth.*

ederyn ; a disgynnu a ŵnaeth uch penn y gŵal, a cheissaŵ ysglyffyaŵ un or tlysseu y gantaŵ ; ac yn chauas dim hagen namyn un oe wrych. Kyuodi a oruc ynteu yn wychyr da ac ymysgytyaŵ, hyt pan ymordiwedaŵd peth or gŵenŵyn ac ef ; odyndu ny bu dianaf Menŵ uyth.

19. Gyrru o Arthur gennat gŵedy hynny ar Odgar uab Aed, brenhin Iwerdon, y erchi peir Diŵrnach Wydel, maer idaŵ. Erchi o Otgar idaŵ y rodi. Y dywaŵt Diŵrnach : “ Duŵ a wyr, pei hanffei well o welet un olŵc arnaŵ, nas kaffei.” A dyuot o gennat Arthur a nac genthi o Iwerdon. Kychŵynnu a oruc Arthur ac ysgaŵn niuer ganthaŵ, a mynet ym Prytwen y long, a dyuot y Ywerdon ; a dygyrchu ty Diŵrnach Wydel a orugant. Gŵelsant niuer Otgar eu meint. A gŵedy bŵyta onadunt ac yuet eu dogyn, erchi y peir a oruc Arthur. Y dywaŵt ynteu, pei as rodei y neb, y rodei ŵrth eir Odgar brenhin Iwerdon. Gŵedy lleueryd nac udunt, kyuodi a oruc Bedwyr ac ymauael yn y peir, ae doddi ar geuyn Hygŵyd gŵas Arthur ; braŵt oed hŵnnŵ unuam y Gachamŵri gŵas Arthur. Sef oed y sŵyd ef yn wastat ymdŵyn peir Arthur a doddi tan y danaŵ. Meglyt o Lenlleaŵc Wydel yg Kaletvŵlch, ae ellŵng ar y rot, a llad Diŵrnach Wydel ae niuer ach[1]an. Dyuot lluoed Iwerdon ac ymlad ac ŵy. A gŵedy ffo y lluoed achlan, mynet Arthur ae wyr yn eu gŵyd yn y llong, ar peir yn llawn o sŵllt Iwerdon gantunt ; a diskynnu yn ty llŵydeu mab Kelcoet ym Porth Kerdin yn Dyuet. Ac yno y mae messur y peir.

20. Ac yna y kynnullŵys Arthur a oed o gynifyŵr yn teir ynys Prydein ae their racynys, ac a oed yn Freinc a Llydaŵ a Normandi a Gŵlat yr Haf, ac a oed o gicŵr dethol march clotuaŵr. Ac yd aeth ar niuerod hynny oll hyt yn Iwerdon. Ac y bu ouyn maŵr ac ergryn racdaŵ yn Iwerdon. A gŵedy disgynnu Arthur yr tir, dyuot seint Iwerdon attaw y erchi naŵd idaŵ. Ac y rodes ynteu naŵd udunt hŵy, ac y

rodassant bynteu eu bendyth idaó ef. Dyuo<sup>t</sup> a oruc góyr Iwerdon hyt att Arthur a rodi bóyttal idaó. Dyuo<sup>t</sup> a oruc Arthur hyt yn Esgeir Oeruel yn Iwerdon, yn y lle yd oed Tórch Tróyth ae seithlydyn moch gantaó. Gelló<sup>ng</sup> kón arnaó o bop parth. Y dyd hó<sup>nnó</sup> educher yd ymladaó<sup>d</sup> y 5 Góydyl ac ef; yr hynny pymhet ran Iwerdon<sup>1</sup> a ó<sup>naeth</sup> yn diffeith. A thrannoeth yd ymladaó<sup>d</sup> teulu Arthur ac ef; namyn a gaóssant o dróc y gantaó, ny chaóssant dim o da. Y trydyd dyd yd ymladaó<sup>d</sup> Arthur ehun ac ef naó nos a naó nieu; ny ladaó<sup>d</sup> namyn un parchell oe uoch. Gouynnóys 10 y góyr y Arthur peth oed ystyr yr hóch hó<sup>nnó</sup>. Y dywaó<sup>t</sup> ynteu: "Brenhin uu, ac am y bechaó<sup>t</sup> y rithóys Duó ef yn hóch."

21. Gyrru a ó<sup>naeth</sup> Arthur Górh<sup>yr</sup> Góalstaó<sup>t</sup> Ieithoed y geissaó ymadraó<sup>d</sup> ac ef. Mynet a oruc Górh<sup>yr</sup> yn rith ederyn, a disgynnv a ó<sup>naeth</sup> vch benn y wal ef ae seithlydyn 15 moch. A gouyn a oruc Górh<sup>yr</sup> Góalstaó<sup>t</sup> Ieithoed idaó: "Yr y gó<sup>r</sup> ath wnaeth ar y deló honn, or gelló<sup>ch</sup> dywedut, y harchaf dyuo<sup>t</sup> un ohonaó<sup>ch</sup> y ymdidan ac Arthur." Gó<sup>r</sup>theb a ó<sup>naeth</sup> Grugyn Górych Ereint (mal adaned aryant oed y wrych oll; y fford y kerdei ar goet ac ar uaes y gó<sup>velit</sup>, ual y llithrei y 20 wrych). Sef at<sup>teb</sup> a rodes Grugyn: "Myn y gó<sup>r</sup> an gó<sup>naeth</sup> ni ar y deló honn, ny wnaó<sup>n</sup>, ac ny dywedó<sup>n</sup> dim yr Arthur. Oed digaó<sup>n</sup> o dróc a ó<sup>nathoed</sup> Duó ynni, an gó<sup>neuthur</sup> ar y deló hon, kyny deleó<sup>ch</sup> chó<sup>itheu</sup> y ymlad a ni." "Mi a dywedaf yó<sup>ch</sup> yd ymlad Arthur am y grib ar ellyn ar 25 gó<sup>lleu</sup> yssyd ró<sup>ng</sup> deu glust Tórch Tróyth." Heb y Grugyn: "Hyt pann gaffer y eneit ef yn gyntaf, ny cheffir y tlysseu hynny. Ar bore auory y kychó<sup>ynnó<sup>n</sup></sup> ni odyma; ac yd aó<sup>n</sup> y wlat Arthur, ar meint mó<sup>y</sup>haf a allom ni o dróc a ó<sup>naó<sup>n</sup></sup> yno." Kychó<sup>yn</sup> a orugant hóy ar y mor parth a 30 Chymry. Ac yd aeth Arthur ae luoed ae ueirch ae gó<sup>n</sup> ym Prytwen, a tharaó<sup>lygat</sup> ymwelet ac ó<sup>ynt</sup>. Disgynnu a ó<sup>naeth</sup>

1. MS. y iwerdon.

Tŵrch Trŵyth ym Porth Cleis yn Dyuet. Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt ym Mynyŵ y nos honno. Trannoeth dywedut y Arthur eu mynet heibaŵ. Ac ymordiwes a oruc ac ef yn llad gŵarthech Kynnwas Kŵrr y Uagyl. A gŵedy llad a oed yn  
 5 Deugledyf o dyn a mil kynn dyuot Arthur, or pan deuth Arthur, y kychŵynnŵys Tŵrch Trŵyth odyo hyt ym Presseleu. Dyuot Arthur a lluoed y byt hyt yno. Gyrru a oruc Arthur y wyr yr erhyl, Ely a Thrachmyr, a Drutwyn keneu Greit mab Eri yn y laŵ ehun; a Gŵarthehyt uab Kaŵ yghongyl  
 10 arall, a deu gi Glythmyr Letewic yn y laŵ ynteu; a Bedwyr a Chauall ki Arthur yn y laŵ ynteu. A restru a oruc y milwyr oll o deu tu Nyuer. Dyuot tri meib Cledyf Divŵlch, gŵyr a gauas clot maŵr yn llad Ysgithyrwyn Pennbeid. Ac yna y kychŵynnŵys ynteu o Lynn Nyuer, ac y doeth y  
 15 Gŵm Kerŵyn, ac y rodes kyuarth yno. Ac yna y lladaŵd ef bedwar ryssŵr y Arthur, Gŵarthehyd mab Kaŵ, a Tharaŵc Allt Clŵyt, a Reidŵn uab Eli Atuer, ac Iscouan Hael. A gŵedy llad y gŵyr hynny, y rodes yr eil kyuarth udunt yn y lle, ac y lladaŵd Gŵydr e uab Arthur, a Garselit Wydel,  
 20 a Gleŵ uab Yscaŵt, ac Iscaŵyn uab Panon; ae doluryaŵ ynteu yna a ŵnaethpŵyt.

22. Ar bore ym bronn y dyd drannoeth yd ymordiweadaŵd rei or gŵyr ac ef. Ac yna y lladaŵd Huandaŵ a Gogigŵr a Phenn Pingon, tri gŵeis Gleŵlŵyt Gauaeluaŵr, hyt nas gŵydyat  
 25 Duŵ was yn y byt ar y helŵ ynteu, eithyr Laesgenym ehunan, gŵr ny hanoed well neb ohonaŵ. Ac y gyt a hynny y lladaŵd llawer o wyr y ŵlat, a Gŵlydyn saer, pensaer y Arthur. Ac yna yd ymordiweadaŵd Arthur ym Pelumyaŵc ac ef. Ac yna y lladaŵd ynteu Madaŵc mab Teithyon, a Gŵyn  
 30 mab Tringat mab Neuŵt, ac Eiryaŵn Pennlloran. Ac odyo yd aeth ef hyt yn Aber Tyŵi. Ac yno y rodes kyuarth udunt. Ac yna y lladaŵd ef Kynlas mab Kynan, a Gŵilenhin bre[nh]in Freinc. Odyo yd aeth hyt yg

Glynn Ystu. Ac yna yd ymgollasant y gŷyr ar cŵn ac ef. Dyuyntu a oruc Arthur Gŷyn uab Nud attab, a gouyn idab a ŷydyatef dim yŷrth Tŷrch Trŷyth. Ydywabŷynteunasgŷydyat.

23. Y hela y moch yd aeth y kynnydyon yna oll hyt yn Dyffryn Lychŷr. Ac y digribyŷys Grugyn Gŷallt Ereint 5 udunt a Lŷydaŷc Gouynnyat; ac y lladass[ant] y kynnydyon, hyt na diengis dyn yn vyŷ onadunt namyn un gŷr. Sef a oruc Arthur dyuot ae luoed hyt lle yd oed Gŷgyn a Lŷydaŷc, a gellŷng yna arnadunt a oed o gi rynodydoed yn llŷyr. Ac ŷrth yr aŷr a dodet yna ar kyuarth, 10 y doeth Tŷrch Trŷyth ac y diffyrth ŷynt. Ac yr pan dathoedynt dros uor Iwerdon, nyt ymwelsei ac ŷynt hyt yna. Dygŷydaŷ a ŷnaethpŷyt yna a gŷyr a chŷn arnaŷ. Ymrodi y gerdet ohonaŷ ynteu hyt ym Mynydd Amanŷ. Ac yna y llas banŷ oe uoch ef. Ac yna yd aethpŷyt eneit 15 dros eneit ac ef. Ac y lladŷyt yna Tŷrch Llaŷin. Ac yna y llas araŷl oe voch; Gŷys oed y enŷ. Ac odynd yd aeth hyt yn Dyffrynn Amanŷ. Ac yno y llas banŷ a bennwic. Nyt aeth odynd gantaŷ oe uoch yn vyŷ namyn Grugyn Gŷallt Ereint a Lŷydaŷc Gouynnyat. 20 Or lle hŷnnŷ yd aethant hyt yn Llŷch Eŷin. Ac yd ymordiweadaŷd Arthur ac ef yno. Rodi kyuarth a ŷnaeth ynteu yna. Ac yna y lladaŷd ef Echel Uordŷyt Tŷll, ac Arŷyli eil Gŷydaŷc Gŷyr, a llaber o wyr a chŷn heuyt. Ac yd aethant odynd hyt yn Llŷch Taŷy. Yscar a ŷnaeth 25 Grugyn Gŷrych Ereint ac ŷynt yna. Ac yd aeth Grugyn odynd hyt yn Dintywi. Ac odynd yd aeth hyt yg Keredigyaŷn, ac Eil a Thrachmyr gantaŷ, a llabŷs gyt ac ŷynt heuyt. Ac y doeth hyt yg Garth Gregyn. Ac yno y<sup>1</sup> llas Llŷydaŷc Gouynnyat yn y mysc. Ac y lladaŷd 30 Ruduyŷ Rys, a llaber gyt ac ef. Ac yna yd aeth Llŷytaŷc hyt yn Ystrat Yŷ. Ac yno y kyuaruu gŷyr Lydaŷ ac ef.



Ac yna y lladaŵd ef Hir Peissaŵc brenhin Lydaŵ, a Lygatrud Emys a Gôrbothu, eŵythred Arthur, vrodryr y uam. Ac yna y llas ynteu.

24. Tŵrch Trŵyth a aeth yna y rŵng Taŵy ac Euyas.  
 5 Gŵyssyaŵ Kernyŵ a Dyfneint o Arthur yn y erbyn hyt yn aber Hafren. A dywedut a oruc Arthur ŵrth vilŵyr yr ynys honn: "Tŵrch Trŵyth a ladaŵd llaŵer om gŵyr. Myn gŵrhyt gŵyr, nyt a mi yn uyŵ yd aho ef y Gernyŵ. Nŵ s ymlityaf i ef bellach, namyn mynet eneit dros eneit ac ef a  
 10 wnaŵ. Gŵneŵch chŵi a ŵnelhoch." Sef a daruu o gyghor gantaŵ eŵlŵng kat o uarchogyon, a chŵn yr ynys gantunt, hyt yn Euyas, ac ymchoelut odyo hyt yn Hafren, ae ragot yno ac a oed o vilwyr prouedic yn yr ynys honn, ae yrru anghen yn anghen yn Hafren. A mynet a ŵnaeth Mabon  
 15 uab Modron gantaŵ ar Wynn mygdŵn march Gŵedŵ yn Hafren, a Goreu mab Custennin, a Menŵ mab Teirgŵaed y rŵng Lynn Liŵan ac aber Gŵy. A dygŵydaŵ o Arthur arnaŵ, a ryssŵyr Prydein gyt ac ef. Dynessau a oruc Osla Gyllelluaŵr a Manaŵydan uab Llyr a  
 20 Chacmŵri gŵas Arthur a Gŵyn Gelli, a dygrynnyaŵ yndaŵ, ac ymauael yn gyntaf yn y traet, ae gleicaŵ ohonunt yn Hafren, yny yttoed yn llenŵi odyuchtaŵ. Brathu amŵs o Uabon uab Modron or neil[1] parth, a chael yr eŵlyn y gantaŵ. Ac or parth arall y dygyrchŵys Kyledyr Wylŵt y  
 25 ar amŵs arall gantaŵ yn Hafren, ac y duc y gŵelleu y gantaŵ. Kynn kaffel diot y grib, kaffel dayar ohonaŵ ynteu ae draet. Ac or pan gauas y tir, ny allŵys na chi na dyn na march y ganhymdeith, hyt pan aeth y Gernyŵ. Noc a gaffat o drŵc yn keissaŵ y tlysseu hynny y gantaŵ, gŵaeth a gaffat  
 30 yn keissaŵ diffryt y deu ŵr rac eu bodi. Kacmŵri ual y tynnit ef y uynyd, y tynnei deu uaen ureuan ynteu yr affŵys. Osla Gyllelluaŵr yn redec yn ol y tŵrch, y dygŵydyŵs y gyllell oe wein ac y kolles; ae wein ynteu

gŵedy hynny yn llawn or dŵfyr, ual y tynnit ef y uynyd, y  
 tynnei hitheu ef yr affŵys. Odyna yd aeth Arthur a lluoed,  
 hyt pan ymordiweadaŵd ac ef yg Kernyb. Gŵare oed a gafat  
 o drŵc gantaŵ kyn no hynny y ŵrth a gaffat yna gantaŵ yn  
 keissaŵ y grib. O drŵc y gilyd y kaffat y grib y gantaŵ. 5  
 Ac odyna y holet ynteu o Gernyb, ac y gyrrŵyt yr mor yn y  
 gyueir. Ny wybuŵyt vyth o hynny allan pa le yd aeth, ac  
 Anet ac Aethlem gantaŵ. Ac odyo yd aeth Arthur y  
 ymeneinaŵ ac y uŵrŵ y ludet y arnaŵ hytyg Kelli Wic yg Kernyb.

25. Dywedut o Arthur: "A ōes dim weithon or anoetheu 10  
 heb gaffel?" Y dywaŵt vn or gŵyr: "Oes. Gŵaet y widon  
 Ordu merch y widon Orwen o penn Nant Gouut yg gŵrthtir  
 Uffern." Kychŵyn a oruc Arthur parth ar Gogled,  
 a dyuot hyt lle yd oed gogof y wrach. A chynghori o  
 Wynn uab Nud a Gŵythyŵr uab Greidaŵl gellŵng Kacmŵri a 15  
 Hygŵyd y uraŵt y ymlad ar wrach. Ac ual yd euthant y  
 myŵn yr ogof, y hachub a oruc y wrach; ac ymauael yn  
 Hygŵyd herŵyd gŵallt y benn, ae daraŵ yr llawr deni.  
 Ac ymauel o Gacmŵri yndi hitheu herŵyd gŵallt y  
 phenn, ae thynnu y ar Hygŵyd yr llawr. Ac ymchoelut a 20  
 oruc hitheu ar Kacmŵri, ac eu dygaboli yll deu, ac eu diaruu, ae  
 gyrru allan dan eu hub ac eu hob. A llidyaŵ a oruc Arthur  
 o welet y deu was hayachen wedy eu llad, a cheissaŵ achub  
 yr ogof. Ac yna y dywedassant Gŵynn a Gŵythyŵr ŵrthaŵ:  
 "Nyt dec ac nyt digrif genhym dy welet yn ymgribyaŵ a 25  
 gŵrach. Gellŵng Hir Amren a Hir Eidyl yr ogof." A mynet  
 a orugant. Ac or bu drŵc trafferth y deu gynt, gŵaeth uu  
 drafferth y deu hynny, hyt nas gŵypei Duŵ y vn ohonunt  
 ell pedwar allu mynet ōr lle, namyn mal y dodet ell pedwar  
 ar Lamrei kassec Arthur. Ac yna achub a oruc Arthur 30  
 drŵs yr ogof, ac y ar y drŵs a uyrŵei y wrach a Charnwennan  
 y gyllell, ae tharaŵ am y hanner, yny uu yn deu gelŵrn hi. A  
 chymryt a oruc Kaŵ o Brydein gŵaet y widon ae gadŵ ganthaŵ.

#### IV. THE PROCEDURE IN A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY.

Puipenac auenno kefroÿ  
haul am tir a dayar.<sup>1</sup> Kefroet  
panuenno o nauuethid ka-  
langayaf allan. Neu onauu-  
5 ethid meÿ. Kanis<sup>2</sup> eram-  
seroyd henny ybit agoredic  
keureith am tir ay dayar.

Oderuit yr haulur mennu  
10 holi tir en eramseroyt hinni  
deuhet<sup>1</sup> ar er argluit yerchi  
did y guarandau y haul  
a hinni aretir. In edid  
hunnu datkanet y haul. Ni  
15 dele y dithun<sup>2</sup> kaifail ateb  
edithun. Kanis haul dissuiut  
yu ar<sup>3</sup> guercheidveith ac  
wrth hinni yguercheidveith  
a deleant oyt urth porth.  
20 Yaun yu irhalur y ludyas  
udunt onit ekeureyth ay  
deweyt ydeleu. Ac ena  
emay<sup>4</sup> ereneyt ev guarandau.  
A gouin pale emay eu porth.  
25 Odeweduuant pot eu porth  
eneu kemmut euhun. Roy  
oyt trideu udunt. Obit en

1. Pwy bynnac a uynno  
kyffroi hawl am dir a dayar,  
kyffroet pan uynno o nawvet  
dyd kalan gayaf allan, neu  
o nawvet dyd Mei. Kanys  
yn yr amseroed hynny y  
byd agoredic kyvreith am  
dir a dayar.

2. O deruyd yr hawlwr  
mynnu holi tir yn yr  
amseroed hynny deuget ar yr  
arglwyd y erchi dyd y  
warandaw y hawl, a hynny  
ar y tir. Yn y dyd hwnnw  
dadganet y hawl. Ny dily  
kaffael ateb y dyd hwnn.  
Kanys hawl dysseivyt yw ar  
y gwercheidweit. Ac wrth  
hynny y gwercheidweit a  
dylyant oet wrth borth. Iawn  
yw yr hawlwr y ludyas udunt,  
onyt y gyvreith a dyweit y  
dilyu. Ac yna y mae iawn  
yr yneit eu gwarandaw, a  
govyn pa le y mae eu porth.  
O dywedant bot eu porth yn  
eu kymmwt eu hun, roi oet

(Ch. 1). 1 the second *a* is added over the line, 2 *add yn with several MSS.*

(Ch. 2). 1 *h* over the line, 2 omit, 3 *add y with many MSS.*, 4 *add iaun with many MSS.*

eli<sup>5</sup> kemut naunieu. Obit en etredit neu uot llanu a trey eregthun ac eu porth. Os kin *han*ner did ebernir eroyt· petheunos or did hunnu ebit eroyt. Os guedi *han*ner did petheunos otrannoyth. Ac essev achaus yu *he*ne. Kanydoys did kubil· ac nat yaun talu drill did en lle did. Ac en eroyt barnedic *hu*nnu· emay yaun deuod ar etir<sup>6</sup> ac vynt ac eu porth.

Ac ena ymay yaun guneythur<sup>1</sup> du<sup>2</sup> pleit ac eiste en<sup>3</sup> keureithiaul. Esseu ual etestedyr en keureythiaul. Eiste orbrenhin neu or neb a uo enile. ay keuen ar er eul<sup>4</sup> neu ar er<sup>5</sup> hin. Rac aulonidu er hin oyuyneb ef. Ar enat llis neu egnat ekemut erhun henau auo en eiste rac euron ef. Ac ar<sup>6</sup> llau assu y *hu*nnu er egnat arall auo enemays neu er eneid.<sup>7</sup> Ac ar ellau

tridieu udunt. O byd yn yr eil gymmw, naw nieu. O byd yn y trydyd neu vot llanw a threi yryngthunt ac eu porth, os kyn hanner dyd 5 y bernir yr oet, pythewnos or dyd hwnnw y byd yr oet; os gwedy hanner dyd, pythewnos o drannoeth. Ac yssef achaws yw hynny; 10 kanyt oes dyd kwbyl, ac nat iawn talu dryll dyd yn lle dyd. Ac yn yr oet barnedic hwnnw y mae iawn dyvot ar y tir ac wynt ac eu porth. 15

3. Ac yna y mae iawn gwneuthur dwy bleit ac eisted yn gyfreithiawl. Sef ual yd eistedir yn gyfreithyawl. Eisted or brenhin neu or neb 20 a uo yn y le ae gevyn ar yr heul neu ar yr hin, rac avlonydu yr hin oe wyneb ef. Ar ynat llys neu ynat y kymmwt, yr hwn hynaf a uo, 25 yn eisted rac y uron ef. Ac ar y llaw assw y hwnnw yr ynat arall a vo yn y maes. Ac ar y llaw deheu idaw yr

(Ch. 2). 5 leg. ereil, 6 *e* over the line

(Ch. 3). 1 *n* and *y* over the line, 2 leg. dui, 3 MS. eneu, 4 the *e* over the line, 5 added over the line, 6 *add y with many MSS.*, 7 *after neu some letters cancelled*; er eneid *added over the line*

deheu ydau ereferiat neu er  
 eferieit.<sup>8</sup> Ac egkell<sup>9</sup> er ar-  
 gluid edeu heneuid. Ay  
 guirda o hinny allan o pop-  
 5 thu ydau. Odena ford yr  
 eneyt keuarvyneb· ac eu<sup>10</sup>  
 darimret yeubraudle. Keg-  
 haus er haulur ar ellau assu  
 ydau ar eford· ar haulur  
 10 enessav· ydau· en eperued<sup>11</sup>  
 ar kanllau ar ellau arall  
 ydau. Ar<sup>12</sup> rigyll en seull  
 trakeuen ekeghaus<sup>13</sup>· er  
 amdiffinur ar ellau deheu ar  
 15 eforth· ar amdiffinhur  
 enessau· ydau· eneperued·  
 ay kanllau or tu arall ydau·  
 arigill traigeuen entheu.  
 Gwedi darvo eiste euelly·  
 20 Kemerer<sup>14</sup> mach ar keureith.  
 Esseu meychyeu auid ar<sup>15</sup>  
 tir ay dayar. Guystlon<sup>16</sup> o  
 dynyon· deu<sup>17</sup> dyn neu auo  
 muy· o popleit· arey<sup>18</sup> hinni  
 25 emedyant er argluid edant.

effeiryat neu yr effeiryet. Ac  
 yg kylch yr arglwyd y deu  
 hyneuid; ae wyrda o hynny  
 allan o bob tu idau. Odyna  
 fford yr yneit gyvarwyneb  
 ac wynt y darymret y eu  
 brawdle. Kynghaws yr  
 hawlwr ar y llaw assw idaw  
 ar y fford, ar hawlwr yn  
 nessaf idaw yn y perved, ar  
 kanllaw ar y llaw arall idaw;  
 ar ringyll yn sevyll tracheuyn  
 y kynghaws. Ar bleit arall  
 y tu arall yr fford; yn nessaf  
 yr fford kynghaws yr amdiff-  
 ynnwr ar y llaw deheu ar y  
 fford, ar amdiffynnwr yn  
 nessaf idaw yn y perued, ae  
 ganllaw or tu arall idaw;  
 ar rhingyll traegevyn ynteu.  
 Gwedy darvo eisted yvelly,  
 kymerer mach ar gyvreith.  
 Sef meichyeu a vyd ar dir a  
 dayar, gwystlon o dynyon,  
 deu dyn neu a vo mwy o  
 bob pleit. Ar rei hynny yn  
 medyant yr arglwyd yd ant.

(Ch. 3). 8 in marg., where it has been written twice, the first entry having been mutilated by the cutting of the margin, 9 on p. 103 the phrase is *ynŷ gylch*, 10 *leg. uy y or the like*, 11 after this ydau with a stroke beneath it, 12 after this some letters cancelled, 13 some words omitted which in the text of the Laws are: ar bleit arall y tu arall yr ford yn nessat yr fford kygla0s, 14 MS. Kemerert, 15 MS. art, 16 some letters cancelled, 17 e over the line, 18 h after a cancelled and r written above it.

Odena guedi henne e dodir tellued.<sup>1</sup> essev yu hene.<sup>2</sup> Gostec ar emays. Puipenac a thorro etelleued honno teyr biu<sup>3</sup> camluru a tal ne nau ugeint. Ar geyr adeweter guedi er ostec bot hunnu<sup>4</sup> en diuunyant er neb ay deweto ac yr keghaus edevether irporth ydau.

Guedi daruo eyste<sup>1</sup> en keureithaul mal y redewes-sam ny vchot ena e may yaun yr egnat deueduit wrth e dupleit ymdeveduch o keureith weithion. Ac ena may yaun iregnat gouin yr<sup>2</sup> haulur puy de keghaus<sup>3</sup> di a puy de kanllau ac ena e may yaun<sup>4</sup> yr haulur ev henwi. Ac ena may yaun eregnat gouin ir haulur a dodycolli a kaffayl eneu pen vinteu. Ac ena ema yaun yr haulur.<sup>5</sup> dodav heb eff. Ac ena may yaun eregnat<sup>6</sup> ac yr kanllau a sauant huy ydau ef en erenmay ef enidody arnadunthuy.<sup>7</sup> Ac

4. Odyna gwedy hynny y dodir tyllwed. Sefyw hynny, gostec ar y maes. Pwy bynnac a dorro y dyllwed honno, teir buw camlwrw a 5 dal neu naw ugeint. Ar geir a dywetter gwedy yr ostec, bot hwnnw yn divwyn-yant yr neb ae dywetto, ac yr kynghaws y dywetter yr 10 porth idaw.

5. Gwedy darvo eisted yn gyvreithiawl, val y rydywed-assam ni uchot, yna y mae iawn yr ynat dyvedut wrth y 15 dwy bleit: "ymdywedwch o gyvreith weithyon." Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "pwy dy gynghaws di a phwy dy 20 ganllaw?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr eu henwi. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "a dody colli a chaffael yn eu pen 25 wynteu?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dywedut, "dodaf," heb ef. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr kynghaws ac yr kanllaw, a 30

(Ch. 4). 1 *u* over the line, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *i* over the line, 4 *after this* did *cancelled*

(Ch. 5). 1 *y* over the line, 2 MS. *h̄yr*, 3 *ke* over the line, 4 *after this* eregnat *cancelled*, 5 *leg.* haulur deueduyt, 6 *add* gouin yr kyghaus, 7 *h* over the line

ena emay yaun<sup>8</sup> udunt huin-  
theu dewedvyt sauun.

5

Ac guedi hinny emay yaun  
eregnat gouin eramdiffenvr<sup>1</sup>  
puy dekeghaus ditheu apuy  
de kanllau. Ac ena emay  
10 yaun ydau entehu eu henwi.  
Ac ena emay yaun<sup>2</sup> yr egn-  
at gouin ydau entehu · a did  
ev kolli a kaffayl en eu pen  
Ac ena may yaun ydau  
15 entheu dewetuyt dodau heb  
ef. Ac ena emay iaun<sup>3</sup>  
eregnat devetvit wrth er-  
haulur · haul di weythron de  
haul. Ac ena emay<sup>4</sup> yaun  
20 yhaulur<sup>5</sup> decreu.

Llema essit yaun yr haulur  
edewetuyd<sup>1</sup> menegi · yuot  
ef en briodaur ar etir hun-  
25 ema ardayar. Ac obit  
aameuho ydau ef yuot en  
briodaur · bot kanthau entheu  
a kathuo ybriodolder · o · ach  
ac edriu · hit emay digaun  
30 en ekeureyth. Ay reerru en

savant hwy idaw ef yn yr  
hyn y mae ef yn y dodi  
arnadunt hwy. Ac yna y  
mae iawn udunt hwynteu  
dywedut : “savun.”

6. A gwedy hynny y mae  
iawn yr ynat ouyn yr  
amdiffynnwr : “pwy dy  
gynghaws ditheu, a phwy dy  
ganllaw?” Ac yna y mae  
iawn ydau ynteu eu henwi.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat  
ovyn idaw ynteu, a dyd ef  
golli a chaffael en eu pen.  
Ac yna y mae iawn idaw  
ynteu dywedut : “dodaf,” heb  
ef. Ac yna y mae iawn  
yr ynat dywedut wrth yr  
hawlwr : “hawl di weithon  
dy hawl.” Ac yna y mae  
iawn yr hawlwr dechreu.

7. Llyma yssyd iawn yr  
hawlwr y dywedut, menegi y  
vot ef yn briodawr ar y tir  
hwnn yma ar dayar. Ac o  
byt a amheuo idaw ef y vot  
yn briodawr, bot ganthaw  
ynteu a gatwo y briodolder  
o ach ac edrif, hyt y mae  
digawn yn y gyvreith, ae

(Ch. 5). 8 *after this yregnat cancelled*

(Ch. 6). 1 *e* over a cancelled *i*, 2 over the line, 3 over the line; *after this*  
*irhaulur cancelled*, 4 *e* over the line, 5 *leg. yrhaulur*

(Ch. 7). 1 MS. edewetduyd

agkeureithiaul yar ybriodol-  
der · ac osid ay hammehuho<sup>2</sup>  
emay ydau ef<sup>3</sup> ay guyr ·  
yreherru enagkeureithiaul.  
Ac essev emayentehu<sup>4</sup> endodi  
ar ekeureith deleu deuot en  
keureythaul traykeuen er lle  
ereherruyd en agkeureith-  
yaul<sup>5</sup> ohonau.

Oderuit bot rey adewetho  
dodi keythveid ac guybed-  
yeid or un pleyt Ninni  
adewedun egellir ene war-  
handawer atdeb er amdiffen-  
hur.

Heb amdiffenhur<sup>1</sup> myuy  
essit briodaur o acch<sup>2</sup> ac  
edriu · ac esseu eduyf en  
guarchadu empriodolder<sup>3</sup> val  
emay goreu edeleauvy y-  
guarchadu · ac osid ay  
hamehuo y · am<sup>4</sup> henni  
emay ymy ageidu digaun<sup>5</sup>  
bot en guir adewedau. A  
thitheu obuosty ema ty hay-  
thost en keureythaul odema.  
Ac osid a hamehuo hinni ·  
emay ymy digaun aygyr.

ryyrru yn anghyvreithyawl  
y ar y briodolder. Ac osit  
ae hamheuo, y mae idaw ef  
digawn ae gwyr y ryyrru yn  
anghyvreithyawl. Ac yssef 5  
y mae ynteu yn doddi ar y  
gyvreith, dylyu dyvot yn  
gyvreithyawl traegvyn yr lle  
y ryyrrwyd yn anghyvreith-  
yawl ohonaw. 10

8. O dervyd bot rei a  
dywetto doddi ceidweid a  
gwybydyeid or un bleit,  
Ninni a dywedwn y gellir,  
yny warandawer atdeb y 15  
amdiffynnwr.

9. Heb yr amdiffynnwr :  
“ Mivi yssyd briodawr o ach  
ac edrif. A sef yd wyf yn  
gwarchadw vym priodolder, 20  
val y mae goreu y dylyaf y  
warchadw. Ac osit ae ham-  
heuo imi hynny, y mae imi  
ageidw digawn bot yn wir a  
dywedaf. A thitheu, o buost 25  
ti yma, ti a aethost yn  
gyvreithyawl odyma. Ac osit  
a hamheuo hynny y mae imi  
digawn ae gwyr.”

(Ch. 7). 2 the third *h* over the line, 3 digawn *has probably been omitted*, 4 *h* over the line, 5 *r* over the line

(Ch. 9). 1 *leg.* eramdiffenhur, 2 there is something like an *h* over the second *c*, 3 the third letter seems to have been altered to *p*, 4 *y* *am*; *leg.* *y* *mi*? 5 *leg.* digaun ageidu



Ninni adewedun ket darfo  
eramdiffenur rohi atheb kin  
oyholý ev or haulur bot en  
anolo er ateb · eny warandao  
5 ef · er haul ac odena atebet.

Ac guedy darfo vdunt  
euduy kegheussayth mal ede-  
wedassam ni vchot. Gouenet  
10 er egnat udunt aydygaun hyn  
adewedassant. Ac gouenet  
udunt auennant guellau eu  
kykeussayth.<sup>1</sup> Ac obit ay  
menno gather<sup>2</sup> ydau. Ac  
15 onibit ay menno kymeret  
eregnat euduy kegheussayth<sup>3</sup>  
a dadkanet huy. A guedy  
estadkano aynt eregneyt  
allan. ar effeyryhet y gyt  
20 ac vy · a. Righyll ygyt aguy ·  
hy eu kadv. Rac douot  
dynyon ywarandu<sup>4</sup> arnadunt.  
Oderuit idyn deuot ywaran-  
dau arnadunt huntheu<sup>5</sup> ev  
25 adely talu teyrbuy kamluru  
hir brenhin. Ac o bit ebrenin  
enemays · ev adele talu kam-  
luru deudeplic am hinny.  
Ac ena guedy edeystedont  
30 huy emay iaun · yr effeyryat ·  
guedya duy ydangos oduy

10. Ninni a dywedwn, kyt  
darffo yr amdiffynnwr roi  
attek kyn noe holi ef or  
hawlwr, bot yn anolo yr  
attek, yny warandao ef yr  
hawl, ac odyna attek.

11. A gwedy darffo udunt  
eu dwy gyngheusaeth, val y  
dywedassam ni uchot, gov-  
ynet yr ynat udunt, ae  
digawn yr hyn a dywedas-  
sant, a gouynet udunt a  
vynnant gwellau eu kyng-  
heusaeth. Ac o byd ae  
mynno, gatter idaw. Ac ony  
byd ae mynno, kymeret yr  
ynat eu dwy gyngheussaeth,  
a dadganet hwy. A gwedy  
as dadgano, aent yr yneit  
allan, ar effeyryet y gyt ac  
wy, ar ringhyll y gyt ac wy  
y eu kadw, rac dyvot dynyon  
y warandaw arnadunt. O  
dervyd y dyn dyvot y waran-  
daw arnadunt wynteu, ef a  
dyly talu teirbuw kamlwrw  
yr brenhin. Ac o byd y  
brenhin yn y maes, ef a dyly  
talw kamlwrw deudyplic am  
hynny. Ac yna gwedy yd  
eistedont hwy y mae iawn

(Ch. 11). 1 *ky* over the line, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *ssa* over the line, 4 *leg*.  
ywarandaw, 5 the second *h* over the line

er yaun<sup>6</sup> udunt. Akanu onadunt huyntheu eu pader. Ac guedy epader emay yaun yr egnat dadkanu eduykeg-hessaith eylweyth.

Ac o deruit bot enreyt<sup>1</sup> egeyr keuarch. Elleger deu oy ouyn. Ac obit reyt yr bleytegouener egeyr keuarhc ydy vrth kemyrit keghor<sup>2</sup> aynt tuy kan kanyat<sup>3</sup> yr egneyt hyeu keghor. ac essev edant ynŷuer ebuant en eukehussayth. heb auo muy. aguas yr arglwyd ygyt aguy. yeu kadu Rac deuod neb yeu keghor. ygyt ac huy. ac odau neb atadunt ay keghoro talet ef kamluru er brenin a bot en anolo ekeghor. Ac guedy edarfo ekeghor deu<sup>nt</sup> edeu hinny ar eregneyt<sup>4</sup> adatkanent egneyth<sup>5</sup> ekeghor.

Oderuit nabo reyt urth eyr keuarch yaun yu gadayl udunt vintheu eu ardelu.

yr effeiryat gwediaw Duw y dangos o Duw yr iawn udunt. A chanu onadunt wynteu eu pader. A gwedy y pader y mae iaun yr 5 ynat dadganu y dwy gyngheussaeth eilweith.

12. Ac o dervyd bot yn reit y geir kyvarch, ellynger deu oe ovyn. Ac o byd reit 10 yr bleit y govyner y geir kyvarch idi wrth gymryt kynghor, aent wy gan ganyat yr yneit y eu kynghor. Ac yssev yd ant, y niver y buant 15 yn eu kyingheussaeth, heb a vo muy, a gwas yr arglwyd y gyt ac wy y eu kadw rac dyvot neb y eu kynghor y gyt ac wy. Ac o daw neb 20 attadunt ae kynghoro, talet ef gamlwrw yr brenhin, a bot yn anolo y kynghor. A gwedy y darffo y kynghor, deu<sup>nt</sup> y deu hynny ar yr 25 yneit a dadganent yr yneit y kynghor.

13. Odervyd naboreit wrth eyr kyvarch, iawn yw gadael udunt wynteu eu hardelw, a 30

(Ch. 11). 6 *u* over the line

(Ch. 12). 1 *some* MSS. *add* wrth, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *y* over the line, 4 the second *e* over the line, 5 *n* over the line; *leg.* eregneit

agerru deu youyn puy eu-  
 gubideyt · aç eu kedweyt · a  
 phale emaynt · odewedant eu  
 bot ene mays · munaher vynt ·  
 5 odewedant<sup>1</sup> eubot en<sup>2</sup> un ke-  
 mut ac vy rodher oyd trideu<sup>3</sup>  
 udunt. Odewedant eubot en  
 ereil kemud rodher oyd  
 naunyeu udunt. Odewetant  
 10 eubot egulat arall vynt<sup>4</sup> neu  
 lanu neu trey eregthunt ac  
 vy · oyt petheunos or did  
 hunnu · os kin hanner did  
 vit · os guedy hanner did  
 15 petheunos odranoyth · ar did  
 hennu endyd kolli akaffayal.  
 Abot eguystlon egkarch<sup>5</sup>  
 brenin · hit edid hunnu · ac  
 erchi y paup deuot ay devni-  
 20 dev kanthau edid hynnu ·  
 hit ar etir. Kenebo duun  
 kan edu bleyd · hinny. Neu<sup>6</sup>  
 edyu endid keureit bar-  
 nedic.

25 En etrededet guedi edele-  
 her vyneb<sup>1</sup> iaun yu i paup  
 eistet enelle mal ereystedus  
 edid kint · ac obetant meiru  
 30 rey or guir auu en ekeg-

gyrru deu y ovyn pwy eu  
 guibydeyt ac eu keidweit, a  
 pha le y maent. O dywedant  
 eu bot yn y maes, mwynhaer  
 wynt. O dywedant eu bot  
 yn un kymwt ac wy, rodher  
 oet tridieu udunt. O dywe-  
 dant eu bot yn yr eil gymwt,  
 rodher oet naw nieu udunt.  
 O dywedant eu bot yg gwlat  
 arall neu lanw neu drei  
 yryngthunt ac wy, oet  
 pythewnos or dyd hwnnw,  
 os kyn hannerdyd y byd.  
 Os gwedy hannerdyd,  
 pythewnos o dranoeth, ar  
 dyd hwnnw yn dyd kolli a  
 chaffael. A bot y gwystlon  
 yg karchar y brenhin hyt y  
 dyd hwnnw. Ac erchi y  
 bawp dyvot ae devnydeu  
 ganthaw y dyd hwnnw hyt  
 ar y tir. Kynnybo duungan y  
 dwy bleit hynny, neud ydiw  
 yn dyd kyvreith barnedic.

14. Ynytrydyd dyd guedy  
 y delher wyneb yn wyneb  
 iawn yw y bawb eisted yn y  
 lle, val y ryeistedws y dyd  
 kynt. Ac o bydant meirw

(Ch. 13). 1 *ed* over the line, 2 over the line, 3 *e* over the line, 4 omitted in several MSS., 5 *leg.* karchar e, 6 *written twice over*; *leg.* neud

(Ch. 14). 1 *leg.* vyneb en vynep; *there are remains of the missing words on the margin*

kussaeith dodder ereill en eu lle · a guedi er<sup>2</sup> eisteter ena emae yaunt yr haulur · kenic y devnidieu iam etestion ay keidveit<sup>3</sup> adeueduit evot ef en paraut. Ac ena emay yaun ir<sup>4</sup>amdifinnur gurtheb ac esev ateb a dere · deueduit yvot ef en paraut · ay defnetyeu kanhau val y hedeuis ac ena emae yaun yr brenin hercki dankos eguestelon en emays · kanys vint essit vechieu.<sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup>Ac ena emay yaun ir egnat deuedut kosb er anostec · esseu eu hene teir biu camluru abot en anolo egeir adeueter.

Ac ena emae yaun ir haulur dodi em pen er eneyt pan niu effo adedeuis<sup>1</sup> en kentaf testion · akeitueit · a deleu ohonau enteu<sup>2</sup> muenhau en kentaf Ac ena emay yaun yr eneit erchi ydau enteu duyn y keditveit<sup>3</sup> ay testion

rei or gwyr a vu yn y gyn-  
gheussaeth, dotter ereill yn  
eu lle. A gwedy yr eistether,  
yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr  
kynnic y devnydyeu y am y 5  
dystyon ae geidweit, a  
dyuedut y vot ef yn barawt.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr  
amdifynnwr gwrtheb. Ac  
yssef ateb a dyry, dyuedut 10  
y vot ef yn barawt, ae  
devnydyeu ganthaw, val y  
hedewis. Ac yna y mae  
iawn yr brenhin erchi dangos  
y gwystlon yn y maes; 15  
kanys wynt yssyd veichieu.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat  
dywedut kosb yr anostec.  
Sef yw hynny teir buw  
kamlwrw a bot yn anolo y 20  
geir a dywetter.

15. Ac yna y mae iawn yr  
hawlwr dodi ym pen yr yneit  
panyw efo a edewis yn  
gyntaf dystyon a cheidweit, 25  
a dylyu ohonaw ynteu eu  
mwynhau yn gyntaf. Ac  
yna y mae iawn yr yneit  
erchi idaw ynteu dwyn y

(Ch. 14). 2 *some MSS.* yd, 3 the second *i* over the line, 4 *after this brenin cancelled*, 5 *kanis—vechieu* interlined, in part on the margin and illegible, 6 *there seems to be a lacuna here*; *some MSS.* have: Ac ena gŵedy dangosser y gŵystlon y mae iaŵn yr brenhin erchi yr righyll dodi gostec ar y maes

(Ch. 15). 1 *leg.* aedeuis, 2 *leg.* enteu eu, 3 *leg.* keidveit

y eu muinahu. Ac ena  
 emae yaun idau enteu eu  
 duin huy ene keuil<sup>4</sup> ef ac  
 eudangos · esseu eu rei  
 5 aedeueis<sup>5</sup> ef erei a enguis  
 en edit kyntaf Ny dele er  
 amdifennwr llessu yrun ona-  
 dunt kanivir<sup>6</sup> nabo da idau  
 adeueduit.<sup>7</sup> Ar hun a llesso  
 10 onatuunt kin guibot bet  
 aduedoent<sup>8</sup> bit sauedc<sup>9</sup>  
 hunu · er amdifenur ail  
 gouin<sup>10</sup> aoes breint yr rei-  
 hinny. Ac obit doent rac-  
 15 dunt · esseu pa achaus<sup>11</sup>  
 egeill ef gouin hinny vrth na  
 eill alldut bot en vybitiat ar  
 treftadauc. Ac na eill  
 gureic · ar gur. Ac ekit  
 20 ahene ni heill llauer o  
 deneon bot yn vibetiet nac  
 en kedueit heruit breint ar  
 amdifenur ni lluger arnau  
 deueduit hinny.

25 Oderuit ir amdifenur  
 readau testion auo gwell no  
 rei aedeuis er haulur · ae ouot  
 en guell yu breint ay o bot  
 30 en amlach Amennu ohonau

geidweit ae dystyon y eu  
 mwynhau. Ac yna y mae  
 iawn idaw ynteu eu dwyn  
 hwy yny kyvyl (?) ef ac eu  
 dangos. Sef yw rei a edewis  
 ef y rei a enwis yn y dyd  
 kyntaf. Ny dyly yr am-  
 diffynnwr llyssu yr un on-  
 adunt, kany wyr na bo da  
 idaw a dywettont. Ar hwn  
 a lyssu onadunt cyn gwybot  
 beth a dywettont, bit savedic  
 hwnnw. Yr amdiffynnwr a  
 eill ovyn a oes breint yr rei  
 hynny. Ac o byd, doent  
 racdunt. Sef pa achaws y  
 geill ef ovyn hynny, wrth  
 na eill alltut vot yn wyby-  
 dyat ar drevtadawc, ac na  
 eill gwreic ar wr. Ac y gyt  
 a hynny ny eill llawer o  
 dynyon vot yn wybydyeit  
 nac yn geidweit herwyd  
 breint. Ar amdiffynnwr ny  
 lwgryr arnaw dywedut hynny.

16. O deruyd yr amdiffyn-  
 nwr ryadaw tystyon a uo  
 gwell nor rei a edewis yr  
 hawlwr—ae o vot yn well eu  
 breint ae oe bot yn amlach—

(Ch. 15). 4 some MSS. have kyleh, 5 the second e over the line; leg. aedewis, 6 the second i over the line, 7 leg. adeueduint, 8 o over the line, 9 leg. sauedic, 10 i over the line, 11 the second a over the line

kannal hinny. Iaun eu<sup>1</sup> dangos aguedi dangosso ef etestion nityaun<sup>2</sup> yr haulur eu llessu vyntheu. Ena emai iaun yr enat gouin yr haulur may breint de destion dŷ. Ac ena emay yaunt yr haulur deueduit breint y testion · ae vntoe en veirri neu en kegheoron<sup>3</sup> ae vnteu en veneich<sup>4</sup> neu en ahtraon ae vnteu en efferiet neu en escoleicion ae vinteu en lleecion breinaul Guedi daruo ir enat gouen ir haulur breint etestion iaun eu yr enat gouin yr amdifenur breint y testion Ac ena emay yaunt yr amdifennur deuedut ebreint goreu avo oy testion Ac ena emay yaunt yr enat datkanu deubrein yreduedasant eduypleit yeu testion.

Ena emay yaun yr enat gouin ir duipleit<sup>1</sup> a sauant huy hen erhen ededis en ydodi en eu pen · llema paup or guebethit en deueduit

a mynnu ohonaw gynnal hynny, iawn yw eu dangos. A gwedi dangosso ef y dystion, nyt iawn yr hawlwr eu llyssu wynteu. Yna y 5 mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "Mae breint dy dystyon di?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dywedut breint y dystyon, ae wynteu 10 yn veiri neu yn gynghelloryon, ae wynteu yn veneich neu yn athrawon, ae wynteu yn effeiryet neu ysgoleigyon, ae wynteu yn lleygion brein- 15 niawl. Gwedy darvo yr ynat govyn yr hawlwr breint y dystyon, iawn yw yr ynat govyn yr amdiffynnur vreint y dystyon. Ac yna y mae 20 iawn yr amdiffynnwr dywedut y breint goreu a vo oe dystyon. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat dadganu deu vreint y rydywedassant y 25 dwy bleit y eu tystyon.

17. Yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr dwy bleit a savant hwy yn yr hyn yd ydys yn y doddi yn eu pen. 30 Llyma bawb or gwybydyeit

(Ch. 16). 1 *leg.* eu eu, 2 *t* over the line, 3 *leg.* keghelloron, 4 MS. veniech  
Ch. 17). 1 There is a smudge between *p* and *l*

esauahant · llema popun or  
 duipleit yn amheu guibytied  
 y kilit nasdegant yr degin ·  
 ket as deuetoent ar eutauaut  
 5 leuerit jaun eu yr eneit ena  
 ev kreirhau · ac guedi askreir-  
 hauont emay yaun vddunt  
 menet allan. Ac edrych<sup>2</sup> er  
 hyn jaunaf aueloent vrth a  
 10 gluassant. Ac oguelhant bot  
 en vell testion eneill rei noe  
 gilit · diuarnent huy eguae-  
 thaf e testion. Oderuit bot en  
 kestal eustestion · diuarner er  
 15 amdifennur · kanys etheuis  
 ef testion a vey guell noc  
 aoet kan ellall. Ac nis  
 cauas. Ac ena emay jaun  
 yr egneit barnu deuot er  
 20 haulur ar etir · ar e breint  
 edoet pan kechuinuus<sup>3</sup> en  
 agkaefreithiaul yarnau

25 Ac guediheni emay<sup>1</sup> yr  
 eneit proui ekedueit<sup>2</sup> y edric  
 a duc pop rey onadunt huy  
 bot en priodaur ebleit emaent  
 enikanhelu a deueduit o  
 30 keituueit pop rey eu bot  
 en priodaur Ac odamheuir

yn dywedut y savant. Llyma  
 bob un or dwy bleit yn  
 amheu gwybydieit y gilyd  
 nas dygant yr dygyn, kyt as  
 dywettont ar eu tavawt  
 leveryd. Iawn yw yr yneit  
 yna eu kreirhau. A gwedy  
 askreirhaont y mae iawn  
 udunt vynet allan, ac edrych  
 yr hyn iawnaf a welont wrth  
 a glywassant. Ac o gwelant  
 bot yn well testyon eneill rei  
 noe gilyd, divarnent hwy y  
 gwaethaf y dystyon. O  
 dervyd bot yn gystal eu  
 tystyon, divarner yr amdiff-  
 ynnwr; kanys edewis ef  
 tystyon a vei well noc a oed  
 gan y llall, ac nys kauas. Ac  
 yna y mae iawn yr ygneit  
 barnu dyvot yr hawlwr ar y  
 tir, ar y breint yd oed pan  
 gychwynws yn aghyvreithy-  
 awl y arnaw.

18. A gwedy hynny y  
 mae iawn yr yneit provi y  
 keidweit, y edrych a dwng  
 pob rei onadunt hwy bot yn  
 briodawr y bleit y maent yn  
 y chynhelu; a dywedut o  
 geidweit pob rei eu bot yn

(Ch. 17). 2 *h* over *c*, 3 *h* over the line

(Ch. 18). 1 *leg.* emay iawn, 4 MS. ekeuit<sup>due</sup>

vntheu yaun eu eucreirhau  
ar nep akellio y kedueit  
onaduunt y vrht ellu kollet  
etir · o seif ekeitueit or due-  
pleit kehedet yv · ar lle ebo  
kehedet deuhanner vit.

Ked barner ydau deuod  
yr tir · nikecuuin egur aoet  
ene mediant kynt erdau  
okeill kaffael · tu · atal · ydau  
en er un lle ac en kastal  
edeudir vrth na burir odena  
ef. Ac nideleir talu tir  
ambreinaul en lle tir abreint  
ohonau val kegkalloraith  
neu vaeron y neu redit.

Ac ena emay yaun er  
egneit deuot traceukeuen y  
eu braudle ac ena emay  
yaun vdunt kemrit keder-  
nit a<sup>1</sup> bot vrth ebraut a  
kamrit mach areugober. Ac  
ena edeleant er eneit datcanu  
eduy kegheusaeh · a guedi  
hene datcanu eu uaraut<sup>2</sup> ac  
ena ebrenin adele redhau  
eguestelon · oeu carcar.

(Ch. 20). 1 *leg.* ar, 2 *leg.* braut

briodawr. Ac ot amheuir  
wynteu, iawn yw eu kreir-  
hau. Ar neb a gilio y geid-  
weit onadunt y wrth y llw,  
kollet y dir. O seif y keidweit 5  
or dwy bleit, kyhyded yw.  
Ar lle y bo kyhyded deu-  
hanner vyd.

19. Kyt barner idaw dyvot  
yr tir, ny chychwyn y gwr a 10  
oed yn y medyant gynt  
yrdaw, o geill gaffael tu a  
thal idaw yn yr un lle ac yn  
gystal y deu dir, wrth na  
vwryr odyna ef. Ac ny 15  
dylyir talu tir ammreiniawl  
yn lle tir a breint ohonaw,  
val kynghelloraeth neu vae-  
roni neu rydit.

20. Ac yna y mae iawn yr 20  
yneit dyvot tracheukevyn y  
eu brawdle. Ac yna y mae  
iawn udunt kymryt kedernit  
ar vot wrth y vrawt, a  
chymryt mach ar eu gobyr. 25  
Ac yna y dylyant yr yneit  
dadganu y dwy gyngheu-  
saeth, a gwedy hynny dad-  
ganu eu brawt. Ac yna y  
brenhin a dyly rydhau y 30  
gwystlon o eu karchar.



## V. THE PRIVILEGE OF ST. TEILIO.

The following Latin Charter (Lib. Land., page 118) deals with the same subject, and illustrates the Welsh :

Privilegium Sancti Teliaui est et ecclesiae suae Landaniae, datum sibi et omnibus successoribus suis in perpetuo a regibus istis et principibus Britannie, confirmatum apostolica auctoritate, cum omnibus legibus suis in se plenariis sibi et terris suis, libera ab omni regali seruitio, sine consule, sine proconsule, sine conuentu intus nec extra, sine expeditione, sine uigilanda regione. Et cum omni iustitia sua ; de fure et furto, de rapina, de homicidio, de arsiōe, de rixa, de sanguine, de refugio uiolato ubique in terra sancti, de assaltu uiarum et extra uias, de faciendo iudicio et patiendo, de omni populo Sancti Teliaui in curia Landaniae ; de communione aquae et herbae, campi et siluae populo ecclesiae Sancti Teliaui ; cum mercato et moneta in Landania ; cum applicatione nauium ubique per terras Sancti Teliaui libera pro regibus et omnibus nisi ecclesiae Landaniae et episcopis eius. De opprobrio et omni iniuria quod rex Morcanhuc et sui homines fecerint episcopo Sancti Teliaui et suis hominibus, idem rex Morcanhuc et sui homines rectum faciant episcopo et suis hominibus, et iudicium patiantur in curia Landaniae. Omnis lex quae fuerit regali, omnis etiam et in curia plenarie episcopali Landauensi.

Lŷmma y cŷmreith ha  
 bryein eccluyŷ Teliau o  
 lanntaf arodes brenhined  
 hinn ha touyŷsocioŷ Cŷmry  
 5 yŷntrŷcŷguidaul dŷ eccluyŷ  
 teliau hac dir escip oll gueti  
 ef amcŷtarnedic o audurdaut  
 papou rumein y holl cŷfreith  
 didi hac dŷ thir · hac di dair ·  
 10 ryd o pop guasanaith bre-  
 ennin bydawl · heb mair ·  
 heb cŷghellaur · heb cŷhoith ·  
 dadlma ymeun gulat hac nŷ  
 dieithŷr · heb luyd · heb  
 15 gauayl · heb guylma ycyf-  
 reith idi yn hollaul · o leitŷr  
 o latrat · o treis · odŷnnŷorn ·

Llyma y gyvreith a breint  
 eglwys Deilaw o Lanndaf, a  
 rodes y brenhined hynn a  
 thywysogyon Cymry yn dra-  
 gywydawl y eglwys Deilaw  
 ac yr escyp oll gwedy ef,  
 amgadarnedic o awdurdawt  
 pabeu Ruvein. Y holl  
 gyvreith idi ac y thir ac y  
 dayar ; ryd o bob gwasanaeth  
 brenhin bydawl ; heb vaer,  
 heb gynghellawr, heb gyhoed  
 dadylva y mewn gwlat ac yn  
 y dieithyr ; heb luyd, heb  
 avel, heb wylva. Y chyv-  
 reith idi yn hollawl o leidyrr,  
 o ladrat, o dreis, o dynyorn,

o cýnluýn hac o losc · o amryson canguaýt ahebguaýt · ý diruý haý camcul ýndi didi yn hollaul · o dorri naud ýnn lann hac ýndieýthýr lann · orachot ýnn luhýn hac dieithýr luhýn · o cýrch ý popmýnnic artir teliau haý guir · haý braut dý lýtu ýr ecluýs ygundý teliau ýnn lantaf · hac ný lýs · dufýr ha guell · hac choýt ha maýs ýncýfrýtin dý lýtu teliau · cýfnofut habathori- aýth ýnn lanntaf hac aperua ardir teliau dýr loggou adiscýnno nýthir ý pop mýnnic ýt uoý rýd rac brennin arac paup namýn dý teliau aý eccluýs lantam · ha dý escýp · har mefýl har sarhaýthar cam har ennuet a gunech<sup>1</sup> brennhin morcannhuc hay gur haý guas dý escop teliau hac dý gur hac dý guas · dýuot brennhin morcannhuc ýgundý teliau ýn lanntaf · dý gunethur guir ha cýfreith · ha diguadef braut diam ý cam a diconher dý escop teliau ha dý gur ha dý guas · ýthir haý daýr dý luyd dý uuner digauaýl · ha pop

o gynllwyn ac o losc, o amryson gan waet ac heb waet. Y dirwy ae chamgwl yndi idi yn hollawl o dorri nawd yn llann ac yn diethyr llann, 5 o ragot yn llwyn ac diethyr llwyn, o gyrch [ ] ar dir Teilaw. Ae gwir ae brawt y deulu yr eglwys yg Gwndy Teilaw yn Llandaf 10 ac yny llys. Dwvyr a gwellt a choet a maes yn gyffredin ý deulu Teilaw. Cyvnewit a bathoriaeth yn Llandaf, ac aberva ar dir Teilaw yr 15 llongeu a discynno yny thir pa le bynnac y bo, ryd rac brenhin a rac pawb namyn y Deilaw ac eglwys Landaf ac y hescyp. Ar 20 mevyl ar sarhaet ar cam ar enywet a wnel brenhin Morgannuc ae wr ae was y escop Teilaw ac y wr ac y was, dyvot brenhin Morgannuc y 25 Wndy Teilaw yn Llandaf y wneuthur gwir a chyvreith a diodef brawt yam y cam a a digonher y escop Teilaw ac y wr ac y was. Y thir ae 30 dayar di luyd divuner diavael. A pob cyvreith a vo y vrenhin Morgannuc yn

cyfreith auo dŷ brennin  
 morcannuc yn lŷs · ou bot  
 oll yn hollaul dŷ escop teliau  
 nŷ lŷs yntou · haŷ bot  
 5 ŷnemelldicetic hac yn ŷscu-  
 munetic ŷr neb aitorro hac  
 aŷ dimanuo ŷ brŷeint hunn ·  
 hac ef haŷ plant guetŷ ef.  
 Hŷnn bendicetic hac ef haŷ  
 10 plant aŷ enrŷdedocao ŷ-  
 breint hunn hac aŷ cat(ŷo).<sup>2</sup>

Amen.

[y] lys, eu bot yn hollawl y  
 escop Teilaw yn y lys ynteu.  
 Ae vot yn emelldigedic ac  
 yn yscumunedic y neb ae  
 torro ac ae divanwo y breint  
 hwnn, ac ef ae blant wedy  
 ef. Yn vendigedic ac ef ae  
 blant ae enrydedockao y  
 breint hwnn ac ae katwo.  
 Amen.

1. leg. gunel. 2. ŷo added in later hand.

## VI. MORAL VERSES.

Kalan gaeaf, kalet graŵn,  
 deil ar gychŵyn, llynnwynn llawn :  
 y bore gynn noe vynet  
 gwae a ymdiret y estraŵn.

Kalan gayaf, kein gyfrin; 5  
 kyfret awel a dryckin :  
 gŵeith keluyd yŵ kelu rin.

Kalan gayaf, cul hydod,  
 melyn blaen bedŵ, gŵedŵ hauot :  
 gŵae a haed meuyll yr bychot. 10

Kalan gayaf, crŵm blaen gŵrysc,  
 gnaŵt o benn dirieit teruysc :  
 lle ny bo daŵn ny byd dysc.

Kalan gaeaf, garŵ hin,  
 anhebic y gynteuin : 15  
 namwyn Duŵ nyt oes dewin.

Kalan gaeaf, kein gyfreu  
 adar, byrr dyd, ban cogeu :  
 trugar daffar Duŵ goreu.

Kalan gayaf, kalet cras, 20  
 purdu bran, buan o vras :  
 am gŵymp hen chwerdit gŵen gŵas.

Kalan gaeaf, cul kerwyt,  
gwae wann pan syrr; byrr vyd byt:  
gŵir gŵell hegarŵch no phryt.

5

Kalan gayaf, llŵm godeith,  
aradyr yn rych, ych yg gweith:  
or kant odit kedymdeith.

## VII. DOOMSDAY.

Deus Duó delwat, 4  
 Góledic, góaed neirthyat.  
 Crist Jessu góyliat,  
 Róysc rihyd amnat  
 Aduelach kaffat. 5  
 Nym gónel heb ranned  
 Moli dy trugared.  
 Ný dyfu yma,  
 Góledic, dy gynna.  
 Ny dyfu, ný dyfyd 10  
 Neb kystal a Douyd.  
 Ny ganet yn dyd plóyó  
 Neb kystal a Duó.  
 Nac nyt adef  
 Neb kystal ac ef. 15  
 Vch nef, is nef  
 Nyt góledic namyn ef.  
 Vch mor, is mor  
 Ef an creóys.  
 Pan dyffo Deós, 20  
 Ef an gwnaho maór trós.  
 Dyd braót yn echwrys.  
 Kennadeu o drós  
 Gwynt a mor a than,  
 Luchet a tharyan, 25  
 Eiryf ab<sup>1</sup> góengan.  
 Lóyth byt yg griduan  
 Ergelaór, dygetaór Ilaóhethan.  
 Ergelhaór mor a syr<sup>2</sup>,

1. leg. *eiry fab?*      2. leg. *ser.*

- Pan discynho Pater  
 Y dadyl ae nifer,  
 A chyrn gopetror  
 Ac ennynnu mor.  
 5 Llóyth byt Iloscetaór  
 Hyny uóynt marwaór,  
 Loscaót ynyal ran  
 Rac y vaór varan.  
 Ef tynho aches  
 10 Rac y varanres.  
 Diffurn dyd reges  
 Góae ae harhoes.  
 Ef tardho talaór;  
 Terdit nef y laór.  
 15 Góynt rud dygetaór  
 Ech y gadóynaór.  
 Neu byt mor wastat  
 Mal pan great.  
 Seith Pedyr ae dywaót,  
 20 Dayar diwarnaót.  
 Dywaót duó Sadórn  
 Dayar yn vn ffórn.  
 Sadórn vore róyd  
 In gónaho ny Culóyd.  
 25 Tir bydaót tywyd,  
 Góynt y todo góyd.  
 Ebryn pop dyhed,  
 Pan losco mynyded.  
 Atuyd triganed  
 30 A chyrn rac rihed.  
 Kyfoethaóc ae henuyn,  
 Mor a tir a llyn.  
 Atuyd cryn dygryn

|                               |    |
|-------------------------------|----|
| A dayar gychwyn.              |    |
| Ac uch pop mehyn              |    |
| A maró mein uudyn.            |    |
| Eryf argelóch                 |    |
| Ac enýnnu llóch.              | 5  |
| Ton aghyolóch,                |    |
| Taryan ymrythóch.             |    |
| Teithýaóć afar                |    |
| Ac eryf tróy alar             |    |
| Ac enynnu tróy var            | 10 |
| Rwg nef a dayar.              |    |
| Pan dyffo Trindaót            |    |
| Y maes maestaót,              |    |
| Lu nef ymdanaót,              |    |
| Lóyth llydan attaót,          | 15 |
| Kyrd a cherdoryon,            |    |
| A chathleu egylyon.           |    |
| Drychafant o vedeu ;          |    |
| Eirant o dechreu.             |    |
| Eirant kón coet,              | 20 |
| Ar gymeint adoet.             |    |
| A rewinyóys mor               |    |
| A wnant maór gaór,            |    |
| Pryt pan dyffo                |    |
| Ef ae góahano.                | 25 |
| “ Y saól a uo meu,            |    |
| Ymchoelant o deheu.           |    |
| A digonóy kamwed,             |    |
| Ymchaelent y perthgled.       |    |
| Ponyt erlys dy gyfreu         | 30 |
| A lefeir dy eneu ?            |    |
| Dy vynet yn du hynt yn nanheu |    |
| Yn tywyll heb leuuereu.       |    |



- Ac ym oed y ereu,  
Ac ym oed i ieitheu,  
Ac ym oed i ganwlat  
Ac eu cant lloneit.
- 5 Canuet gŵlat pressent  
Nŷ bum heb gatwent.  
Oed mynych kyfar chwerŵ  
Yrof am<sup>1</sup> kefynderŵ.  
Oed mynych kyryscŵydat
- 10 Yrof y am kywlat.  
Oed mynych kyflafan  
Yrof i ar truan.  
Am goryŵ hŵn vyth;  
Nym gŵnaei dyn byth.
- 15 Am gyrrŵys yg croc,  
A wydŵn yn oc.  
Am gyrrŵys ym pren  
Dipynŵys vym pen.  
Tafaŵ ti vyn deu troet,
- 20 Mor tru eu hadoet.  
Tauaŵ dy 'r boenet,  
Escyrn vyn traet.  
Tauaŵ dy vyn dŵy vreich;  
Ny ny dybyd eu beich.
- 25 Tauaŵ dy vyn dŵy yscŵyd;  
Handit mor dyuyd.  
Tauaŵ dy 'r cethron  
Y myŵn vyg callon.  
Tauaŵ dy gethraŵt
- 30 Yrwg vyn deu lygat.  
Tauaŵ yr da allat,  
Coron drein ym iat.  
Tauaŵ dy oestru,

A wanpóyt vyn tu.  
 Teu ýó chitheu  
 Mal yr yóch Ilaó deheu.  
 Ióch ný byd madeu  
 Vy gwan a bereu.” 5  
 “A wledic, ny wydyem  
 Pan oed ti a grogem.  
 Góledic nef, góledic pop tut,  
 Ný wydem ni, Grist, tut vyhut.  
 Bei ath óybydem, 10  
 Crist, ath athechem.”  
 “Nyt aruollir góat  
 Gan lóyth eissyfflat.  
 Digonsaóchi anuat  
 Yn erbyn Dofydyat. 15  
 Can mil egylyon  
 Yssyd imi yn tyston,  
 A doeth ym kyrchaó  
 Góedy vyg crogaó.  
 Yg croc yn greulet 20  
 Myhun ym góaret.  
 Yn nefoed bu cryt,  
 Pan ým crogysst.  
 Pan orelwis Keli  
 Dy Culóyd vch keli. 25  
 A chenóch deu iewan  
 Ragof y deu gynran,  
 A deu lyfyr yn ach Ilaó  
 Yn eu darlleaó.  
 Nys deubi ryrrys 30  
 Rygossóy rygossys.  
 Ac aóch bi wynnyeith  
 Góerth aóch ynuyt areith.

Kayator y dyleith

Arnaŵch y vffern lleith.”

Crist Jessu uchel ry seilas trycha[n] mil  
blŷdyned,

5 Er pan yttyŵ ym buched.

Ac eil mil kyn croc

Yt lewychi Enoc.

Neu nyt atwen drut

Meint eu heissyllut.

10 Gŵlat pressent yth ermut,

A chyt aŵch bei odit.

Trychan mil blŷdyned namyn vn

Oric odit buched tragywyd.

## VIII. TO GWENWYNWYN.

Ysym arglôyd gôrd, gordiung y var,  
 (gordôy neb nyô hystung)  
 glyô diwreid gôrdvleid<sup>1</sup> gorvlôg,  
 gleô dywal, ny dal, ny dô<sup>n</sup>g.

Yssit ym arglôyd aerglôyf ner nerthuaôr, 5  
 aerlleô llaoôr,<sup>2</sup> llaoch niuer,  
 ny oleith lleith yr llyfyrder,  
 ny odef cam, nyw kymer.

Yssit ym arglôyd eurgledyfrud gaôr, 10  
 breisc llafnaôr brôysc llofrud,  
 ny daôl ôrth ae maôl maôruud,  
 ny graôn golut, nyw golud.

Yssit ym arglôyd argledyr anaô beird,  
 am bardeir yn eidaô,  
 am karyat kadarn arnaô, 15  
 am kerd, am kynnelô ohonaô.

Yssit ym arglôyd argledyr cat a tharyf,  
 a theruyn ar gywlat,  
 klotuaôr llaoôr, llao agk<sup>u</sup>aeat, k 20  
 koryf toryf, teruysc oe anghat.

Yssit ym wledic wlat amdiffyn llary,  
 (llawer dyn ae govyn)  
 gwalchlan wosparth warth wrthryn,  
 gôalpar gôanar Gôenwynwyn.

<sup>1</sup>r over d    <sup>2</sup>r over ô

## IX. CYNDDELW TO RHYS AB GRUFFUDD.

(\*) BLACK BOOK, page 39*b*.

Assuŷnaw naut Duv diamhev<sup>1</sup> ŷ daun  
 ae donŷauc wiffinnhev.  
 ar dŷ guir erir aerev.  
 ar dŷ gulad guledic dehev.

5 Assuinaf archaf eirchad ŷmgelwir.  
 naut kŷuir kŷgwastad.  
 ar dŷ drissev aer. drussad.  
 ar di drissaur gvaur gwenvlad.

10 Assuinaw archaw arch vaur ŷ *periw*.  
 a *peris* new a llaur.  
 naut rac dŷ uar car kertaur.  
 ar dŷ pirth ar di porthaur.

Assuinaf naut haut haelon deheuparth  
 diheuporth kertorion.  
 15 ath turuf oth tarianogion.  
 ath torŷf oth teern meibon.

Assuinaf ŷch naut na cheluch ŷch porth.  
 can *perthin* attreguch.  
 gostecwir llis gosteguch.  
 20 gostec beirt bart aglŷwuch.

Assuinaf naut haut<sup>2</sup> haelvonet worsset.  
 nŷth orsseiw teernet.  
 ar dŷ torif corŷf kŷwrisset  
 ar dŷ teulu teilug met.

1. MS. diamehv. 2. MS. haut naut *with marks of transposition*.

Metcuin ev gwiraud metkirn ae gwallav.

ae gwellig in eurdirn.

a gloev y ved in edirn.

a gliv deur. a glev teeirn.

Teernweilch *Pridein* prýdaw ých priwgert. 5

ých *priwclod* a digaw.

ých bart ých beirnad výtaw.

ých porth *perthin* ýv ataf.

Attep a ganaw ar canhuýw vȳ argluit.

ergliv. wi. can dothuif. 10

*Ileissaun Iliw Ilev* gliv glevrvit.

*Ilaessa* di var di bart wif.

Viw kertaur im ruw. ruisc. morkimlaut gurt.

ruisfirt kirt kert. vahaut.

assuin asserv herv hirvlaut. 15

assuinaf ar wut naw. naut.

(b) RED BOOK.

Dadolóch Rys vab Gruffud. Kyndeló ae cant.

Assóynaf naóð Duó (diamheu dy daón,

ath donyaóð óyf inneu)

ar dy wyr, eryr aereu, 20

ar dy wlat, wledic deheu.

Assóynaf, archaf arch vaór y beryf

a beris nef a *Ilaór*,

naóð rac dy var, car kerdaór,

ar dy byrth, ar dy borthaór. 25

Assóynaf, archaf (eirchat ym gelwir)

naóð kywir *kyngwastat*

ar dy drysseu, aer dróssyat,

ar dy dryssaór, góawr góenwlat.

# 236 CYNDDELW TO RHYS AB GRUFFUDD

Assóynaf aóch naóð, na chelóch aóch porth,  
     <sup>k</sup>an perthyn attregóch.

Gostecwyr llys, gostegóch:  
 "Gostec, beird! bard a glywch."

5      Assóynaf naóð haóð haelon deheubarth,  
         diheuborth kerdoryon,  
         ath daryf oth duranogyon,  
         ath doryf ath deyrnueibyon.

Assóynaf naóð haóð haeloned worsaf  
 10          (nyth orseif teyrned)  
         ar dy doryf, koryf kywryssed,  
         ar dy deulu teilóng med.

Medgwyn eu góyn eu góiraóð, medgyrn ae góarchae,  
         ae góercheidó yn eurdryn,  
 15          a gloeó yfet yn etyrn,  
         a glyó deór, a gleó deyrn.

Teyrnweilch Prydein, prydaf aóch prifgerd,  
         aóch prifglot a dygaf,  
         aóch bard, aóch beirnyat vydaf,  
 20          aóch porth perthyn yó attaf.

Atteb a ganaf a ganóyf; arglóyd,  
         erglyó vi, kan dothóyf.  
         Leissaón llyó, lleó glyó gleó róyf,  
         llaessa dy var, dy vard óyf.

25      Wyf kerdáur ym róyf róysc morgvmlaóð góyrd,  
         róysc ffyrd, kyrd kerd wahaóð.  
         Assóyn asseró heró hirvlaóð,  
         assóynaf ar ud naf naóð.

## X. A RELIGIOUS POEM.

| BLACK BOOK.                                                 | RED BOOK.                                                  |    |
|-------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| In enu domni<br>meu ý. voli.<br>maur ý uolaud.              | Yn enó Dñi,<br>meu y moli ;<br>maór y molaót.              |    |
| Molawe douit.<br>maur ý kinnit<br>ar ý cardaud.             | Molaf Douyd,<br>maór y gynnyd<br>ar y cardaót.             | 5  |
| Duu an amuc.<br>Duu an goruc.<br>Duu an guaraud.            | Duó an hamuc,<br>Duw an goruc,<br>Duó an góaraót.          | 10 |
| Duu an gobeith.<br>teilug pirfeith.<br>tec ý purfaud.       | Duó an gobeith,<br>teilóng perffeith,<br>tec y purffaót.   |    |
| Duu an dýli.<br>Duu issi vry.<br>vrenhin trindaud.          | Duó an dyly,<br>Duó yssy bry,<br>brenhin trindaót.         | 15 |
| Duu a broued<br>in ý truyted<br>in <sup>1</sup> ý trallaud. | Daó a prouet<br>ynn yn dróydet<br>dróy y drallaót.         |    |
| Duu a dýfu.<br>oe garcharu<br>gan vuildaud.                 | Duw a dyuu<br>oe garcharu<br>gan uvulldaót.                | 20 |
| Guledic deduit<br>an gunel in rit<br>erbin dit braud.       | Góledic detwyd<br>an gónel ni yn ryd<br>erbyn dyd braó[t]. | 25 |



An duch ir gulet  
ir y varet.  
ae werindaud.

An dôc yr wled  
yr y wared  
ae werindaot.

5 Ym paraduis.  
im pur kynnuis  
rac puis pechaud.

Ym Paradôys,  
ym pur gynnôys  
rac pôys pechaot.

An gunel iechid  
ir y penid  
ae pimp dirnaud.

An gônél iechyt  
yr y penyt  
ae pym dyrna<sup>n</sup>ot.

10 Dolur eghirith.  
Duu an diffir<sup>h</sup>th  
ban kýmirth cnaud.

Dolur eghyrth—  
Duó an diffir<sup>h</sup>th,  
pan gym<sup>y</sup>erth knaot.

15 Din a collei  
bei nas prinhei  
diuei devaud.

Dyn a gollei  
pei nas prynei—  
diuei deuaot.

Or croc crevled  
y deuth guared  
ir vedissyaud.

Or groc greulet  
y deuth gwaret  
yr vedissya<sup>h</sup>wt.

20 Kadarn bugeil  
Crist nid adweil.  
y teilyгдаud

Cadarn ugeil  
Crist nyt ad<sup>h</sup>ueil  
y teilyngdaot.

# XI. A DIALOGUE BETWEEN UGNACH UAB MYDNO AND TALIESSIN.

“Marchauc a girch y dinas,  
ae cun gwinion ae cirn bras,  
nyth adwaen, mi ryth welas.”

“Marchauc a kirch ir aber  
y ar march cadarn kadfer, 5  
dabre genhiw ; nym gwatter.”

“Mi nŷd aw ina in aur,  
gotev gueith y godriccaur :  
elhid bendith new a llaur.”

“Y gur nim guelas beunit 10  
y<sup>1</sup> tebic y gur deduit,  
ba hid ei dŷ? a phan doit?”

“Ban deuaw o Caer Seon  
o imlat ac Itewon,  
it aw Caer Lev a Gwidion.” 15

“Dabre de genhiw ir dinas,  
ath uit met ara phellas,  
ac eur coeth ar di wanas.”

“Mi nŷd adwaen y gur hŷ  
a metev tan a gveli : 20  
tec a chuec y diwedi.”

“Dabre genhiw im tino,  
ath uit guin gorÿsgelho,  
Vgnach ýw vÿ heno mab Mýdno.”

5

“Vgnach, bendith ith orsset !  
ath vo rad ac enrydet !  
Taliessin viw inheu, talaw itti dÿ  
gulet.”

10

“Taliessin, penhaw or guir,  
beitad ýg kert kÿuergir,  
tric ima hid dÿv merchir.”<sup>2</sup>

“Vgnach, mvihaw ý alaw,  
ath vo rad ý gulad pennhaw :  
nÿ haetaw kabil, ny thrigiaw.”

2. *ir added in a later hand.*

## XII. WINTER.

Llŷm awel, llum brin,  
anhaut caffael clid :  
llicrid rid, reuhid llin,  
rŷ seiw gur ar vn conin.

Ton tra thon toid tu tir, 5  
goruchel guaetev rac bron banev  
bre : breit allan or seurir.

Oer lle lluch rac brŷthuch  
gaeaw, crin caun, calaw truch,  
kedic awel, coed in i bluch. 10

Oer guelŷ pisscaud yg kisscaud  
iaen, cul hit, caun barywhaud,  
birr diuedit, guit gvŷrhaud.

Ottid eirŷ, guin ŷ cnes,  
nid a kedwir oe neges, 15  
oer llinnev, eu llŷu heb tes.

Ottid eirŷ, guin aren,  
segur ŷscuid ar iscuit hen,  
rŷuaur guint, reuhid dien.

Ottid eirŷ ar warthaw rev<sup>1</sup>, 20  
goscupid guit<sup>2</sup> blaen guit tev,  
kadir ŷscuid ar ŷscuit glev.

1. In MS. **res** has been altered later to **reo**.

2. MS. **gint**

Ottid eirý, tohid istrad,  
diurýssint vy keduir y cad,  
mi nid aw, anaw nim gad.

5

Ottid eirý o dv riv,  
karcharaur goruit, cul biv,  
nid annuýd hawdit hetiv.

Ottid eirý, guin goror  
mýnit, llum guít llog ar mor :  
meccid llwyr llauer kýghor.

# Glossary



## GLOSSARY

The paragraphs refer to the Grammar. voc.=causing vocalic mutation (lenation). nas.=causing nasal mutation. spir.=causing spirant mutation. coll.=collective. n.l.=nomen loci. chw follows c, ð follows d, ng follows g in the order of the alphabet.

1. a (voc.) rel. part. § 82 ff. With pers. pron. (§ 48 ff.) sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath (voc.), sg. and pl. 3 ae, ay, as, pl. 1 an, pl. 2 ach.

2. a (voc.) interr. part. § 239. With pres. of copula ae. ae...ae *whether*...or.

3. a (voc.) interj. § 243.

4. a (spir.) prep. *with*, see 1. ac.

5. a (spir.) conj. *and*, see 2. ac.

6. a (voc.) prep., see 1. o.

6. a- used to infix pronoun. § 94. With pers. pron. sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath, sg. and pl. 3 as.

abad m. *an abbot*; pl. -eu.

aballu *to perish*. 158, 15.

aber *a river-mouth, estuary*.

aber-fa f. *harbour, harbourage*.

aberth *sacrifice*. 150, 17.

abid f. *a habit, monastic dress*.

abreid *scarcely, hardly*. 159, 10. 197, 20. 200, 17.

1. ac, a (spir.) prep. *with*, § 162. With art. ar; with poss. adj. sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath (voc.), sg. 3 m. ae (voc.) f. ae (spir.), pl. 1 an, pl. 2 ach, pl. 3 ae.

2. ac, a (spir.) conj. *and, as*. § 198. With art. ar; with poss. adj. sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath (voc.) etc. ac...ac *both...and*.

1. ach (awch, ych) *your*. §§ 57, 58.

2. ach *lineage, descent*; pl. -oed.

3. ach, see 1. a, 1. ac, 2. ac.

achaws m. *cause, reason*. pa a. *why?* 218, 16. o a. *because* § 199.

Cf. achwysson.

achenoctid, see anghenoctid.

aches (from Lat. accessus) *flood-tide*. 228, 9. See CZ. V, p. 566.

achlan *entire, all*. 202, 22. 23.

achub *to occupy, seize, precipitate oneself, snatch*. 151, 5. 180, 19. 199, 12. 201, 20 (see cyfarth). 207, 17.

achubeid *to seize*. 152, 8.

achwanecäu *to augment, increase*.

achwaneg *more*.

achwanegu *to increase*.

achwysson (pl.) *causes*. 161, 15.

achyfyeth, see anghyfyeth.

adan f. *a wing*; pl. -eð. 203, 19.

adar (coll.) *birds*; sg. ederyn.

adaw *to leave, allow*. pres. ind. pass. edir. 152, 4. 158, 8. 193, 10.

adeilad *to build, a building*; pl. -eu. 139, 3.

ad-feilaw *to decay, decline*. 238, 20.

ad-fod *to exist, be*. fut. ind. sg. 3 adfyð 228, 29. 33.

ad-libin *a wretched remnant*. 153, 28.

ad-na-bod *to recognise, know*. § 144.

pres. ind. act. sg. 1 adwaen.

ad-newyðu *to renew*. 155, 4.

adolwyn *to beseech*. 142, 31. pret.

pl. 3. adologyssant. 149, 10.

adref *homeward*. 196, 9. atref 198, 29.

adwaen, see adnabod.

adwy *a gap, opening*; pl. -eu. 175, 17.

aðas *fit, meet, suitable*.

aðassu *to fit, adjust*. 150, 26.

aðaw *to promise*. 170, 13. 177, 7. 218, 27. pres. ind. sg. 3 eðew 239, 20. <sup>NG. eðew</sup>

aðef *to acknowledge, admit, allow*. 227, 14.

aðfelach? 227, 5.

að-fwyn-der m. *gentleness, nobility, honour*. 181, 24.

að-oed m. *appointed time; destiny, fate*. 229, 21. 230, 20. <sup>wishup</sup>

aðurn *adornment*. 163, 29.

aðurnaw *to adorn, decorate*. 155, 5.

1. ae, see 1. a. 2. ae, see 2. a.

3. ae, see 1. ac. 4. ae, see 2. ac.

aed, see myned.

Aeð (Ir. Āed) n. pr. m. 201, 14.

aeðfed *ripe, mature*. 165, 20.

aer *slaughter*; pl. -eu.

Aer n. pr. m. 195, 26.

aer-fa f. *slaughter*; pl. -eu.



aer-giwyf *dealing wounds in battle.* 233, 5.

aer-llew m. *lion of battle.* 233, 6.

aeth, see *myned.*

aeth-lym *keen and sharp.* Aeth-lem f. *the name of a sow.* 207, 8.

af, see *myned.*

Afallach n.l. *Avallon.*

afar m. *grief.* 229, 8.

af-lonyðu *to incommode.* 209, 23.

aflonyðwch *disturbance.* 148, 6.

afon f. *a river*; pl. -oeð.

afory *to-morrow.* 203, 28.

Affric *Africa.*

affwys m. *an abyss, deep, bottom.* 197, 29. 206, 32. 207, 2.

agalen f. *a whetstone.* 194, 14.

agori *to open*; part. agoredig.

agos *near*; comp. nes; sup. nessaf.

angel *an angel*; pl. engylyon.

angerð m. *vehemence, force.* 151, 17. 184, 24. 186, 4.

angeu, see *angheu.*

anghad f. *hand.* 233, 20.

anghaead *unclosed, open, liberal.* 233, 19.

anghen (agen) m. *need, necessity*;

a. yn a. *by sheer necessity* 206, 14; cf. Hg. II. 197, 25.

anghenoctid (achenoctid) *want, indigence.* 142, 20. 146, 3.

angheu (agheu, agen) f. *death.*

150, 15. angheuawl <sup>angheu sp. c. angheu</sup> *deadly*; *mortally wounded.* 159, 8. 18. 183, 26.

anghlywedig *unheard of, unusual.*

anghreifft (agreifft, agriff) *example.*

165, 12.

anghyf-nerth *helplessness, impotence.* 143, 6.

anghyf-reith *injustice, wrong.*

anghyfreithawl *unjust, wrongful.*

anghyfrwys *untrained, unskilled.*

anghyf-yeith *alien in speech, foreign.* 191, 19. pl. -yðyon. 153, 17.

anghyolwch? 229, 6.

aho, see *myned.*

alaf *wealth*; pl. -oeð. 164, 9.

Alban *Scotland.* yr A. 141, 7.

allan *out, outwards, outside.* o

hynny a. *thenceforth.*

allt a *cliff.* A. Clwyd (*wrongly, instead of Clud*) *Dumbarton.*

all-tud *a foreigner, alien; exile.*

am (voc.) *prep. about, on account of.* § 164. am hynny *therefore.*

am-blygu *to embrace.* 148, 12 v. 1.

amcawð *said (he).* amkeuðant *said they.* § 133 (b).

am-ðiffyn *to defend, protect; defence.*

amðiffynwr m. *a defendant in a lawsuit.*

am-gadarnedig *confirmed, ratified.*

amgen *different.* nyd a. *namely.*

amherawdyr m. *an emperor*; pl.

amherodron.

amherodraeth f. *empire, dominion.*

amheu *to doubt, dispute, call in question.*

amlach, amlaf, see *amyl.*

amlwg *clear, manifest.*

ammreiniawl (ambreinawl) *without privilege.* 221, 16.

amnad? 227, 4.

amod m. *a covenant, compact.*

149, 17. 150, 20. 153, 24. 159, 10.

amryfael *various, different*; pl. -on.

amryson *a quarrel.* 223, 2.

am-ryw *various, divers.*

am-sathyr *a treading, moving of feet.* 193, 15.

amser m. *time*; pl. -oeð.

amug, see *amwyn.*

amws m. *a stallion*; pl. emys.

am-wyn *to protect.* § 133 (b). pret.

ind. act. sg. 3 amug.

Amwythig *Shrewsbury.* 161, 31.

amyl *frequent*; *numerous*; comp.

amlach; sup. amlaf.

amyllder *plenty, abundance, multitude.* 145, 23.

amylhäu *to increase, augment.*

1. an (yn) our. § 57.

2. an, see 1. a.

3. an, see 1. and 2. ac.

anadyl *breath.*

anaf m. *a blemish, wound.* 242, 3.

anaw *poetry, muse.* 233, 13.

anawð, see *an-hawð.*

an-dylyedus *illegal, wrong.* 167, 26.

an-eiryf *innumerable, countless*;

a *countless number.* 184, 27.

an-fad *evil, crime.* 231, 14.

an-feidrawl *immense.*

anfon *to send, dispatch.* pres. ind. sg. 3 enfyn 228, 31.

Angiw *Anjou.*

an-hawð *not easy, difficult.* 241, 2.

anhebig (y) *unlike, dissimilar (to).* 225, 15.

anheilwng *unworthy.*

anher, see *hanher.*

anifeil m. *an animal, beast*; pl. -eid.

annerch to greet, address; pl. -eu greetings. 143, 8.

annobeithaw (o) to despair (of).

annod delay. 171, 27.

annoeth (anoeth) a precious thing; pl. -eu. 165, 13. 187, 13. Cf. Arch. I, p. 453.

annog to urge, encourage, recommend,

annwyd nature, temper. 242, 6.

anolo void, worthless, nugatory.

an-osteg f. disturbance, disorder.

anreg f. a dish of meat; pl. -yon. 163, 31 (fercula).

anreithaw to plunder, ravage.

anreithwr m. a plunderer.

anrydeð, see enrydeð.

ansawð f. condition, nature, quality, state, station. 160, 10. 180, 6.

ansoðedig established, founded.

ant, see myned.

an-udonawl perjured, treacherous, wicked. 149, 31 v. 1.

an-uundeb (-dab) discord, disunion, conflict. 167, 30.

an-waethach no less. 145, 20 v. 1.

anwyl a friend; pl. -yd. 160, 26.

anyanawl natural, native, innate.

1. ar (voc.) prep. on, over, for, before.

§ 165. within 146, 25. ar hynt there-upon. About to, on the point of. ar gychwyn 225, 2.

2. ar, see 1. and 2. ac.

3. ar=a (rel. part.) + ry, see § 95 note.

4. ar, see 1. o.

aradyr a plough.

araf slow, gentle, mild. 155, 27.

arall another, other; pl. ereill.

§ 68. ereill . . ereill some . . others.

arbed to spare, save. 153, 23.

ar-benhig chief, principal.

arch f. a request. 153, 34. 234, 9.

arch-esgob m. an archbishop; pl.

archesgyb.

archesgobaeth an archbishopric; pl. -eu.

archesgobawd f. an archbishopric.

archesgob-dy m. an archbishop's palace.

archyssant, see erchi.

ar-dymheru to temper, warm.

143, 13.

ar-ðelw a voucher. 215, 30.

ar-ðerchawg exalted, noble, illustrious.

ar-ðerchocäu to exalt, honour,

ar-ðyrchafel to raise, exalt; part. ar-ðyrchafedig.

areith f. a speech. 231, 33.

aren (arien) hoarfrost. 241, 17.

arf m. a weapon; pl. -eu.

arfawg armed.

ar-fer to be wont, be accustomed; use, wont.

arferu (o) to use, employ, enjoy, be accustomed.

arfol to entertain, receive. 148, 10; 231, 12.

ar-gelwch concealment, seclusion. 229, 4.

ar-gledyr m. a protector.

arglwyð m. a lord; pl. -i.

arglwyðes f. a lady, mistress.

arglwyðiaeth f. lordship.

ar-gyfreu a marriage portion. 140, 12. 24.

ar-gyweðu (y) to injure, hurt.

arnaf etc., see ar § 53.

aros to await, expect, wait. past subj. sg. 3 arhoei; pret. sg. 3 arhoes.

arth m. a bear. 172, 27.

aruthrêd terror, fear. 172, 28.

aruthyr terrible, fearful. 172, 29.

ar-weðu to bear; wield. 159, 3.

arwein to carry, bear. 163, 3. 10.

arwyð f. a token, mark; a battle-standard; signal; pl. -on. 150, 26.

158, 32. 180, 4. 183, 8. 194, 22.

arwyðocäu to signify, imply.

aryant silver.

as (es), see 1. and 6. a.

asgell a wing; pl. esgyll.

asgell-wrych m. spray. 154, 18.

asgrifenu, see ysgrifenu.

asgwrn a bone; pl. esgyrn.

asserw bright, brilliant. 235, 15.

assw (asseu) left.

asswyn an invocation. 235, 15.

asswynaf I invoke, entreat.

at (voc.) prep. to. §§ 53, 166.

attal to restrain, withhold, hinder.

attek (at-heb) m. to answer; an answer, defence; pl. -yon. 167, 19. 169, 1.

attregwch a stopping, delay. 234, 18. 236, 2.

1. ath, see 1. and 6. a.

2. ath, see 1. and 2. ac.

athechem? 231, 11.

athoeð, see myned.

athraw a teacher; pl. -on. 145, 3. 161, 11. 219, 13.

awdurdawd m. authority. 222, 7.

awch, see ach.

awel m. *a breeze, wind.* 241, 1.  
 awn, see *myned*.  
 awr f. *hour.* yn a. now. 239, 7.  
 yr a. *hon now.* 142, 15.  
 awssen *absence.* 177, 6.  
 awst *August.* 166, 16.  
 1. ay, see 1. a.  
 2. ay, see 1. and 2. ac.  
 ba, see pa.  
 bach a *bend, angle.* 198, 8.  
 baeð m. *a boar.* b. coed a *wild boar.* 184, 12; pl. beið. 201, 16.  
 Baðon n. l. *Bath.* 179, 31.  
 bagyl f. *a crook, crutch.* Cwrr y Fagyl n. l. 204, 4.  
 1. ban *loud.* 227, 18.  
 2. ban, see pan.  
 bann a *height*; pl. banu 241, 6.  
 b. y gaer *battlement*; 196, 1.  
 banw a *pigling.* porhell . . hyt tra uo en denu . . ac o henne eny el e moch yr coet banu vyt BCh. 92, 28.  
 bar m. *wrath, anger.* 229, 10.  
 233, 1.  
 baraf, see baryf.  
 baran *wrath, fury.* 280, 8.  
 baran-res *rank of soldiers, host.* 228, 10.  
 Barberfloi n. l. *Barfleur.*  
 bard m. *a poet, bard*; pl. beirð.  
 bard-eir *song, panegyric.* 235, 14.  
 barfawg *bearded.* 199, 31.  
 barn *judgment.* 188, 6 v. 1.  
 barnu *to judge, decide, fix, pass judgment, deem.* past. part. barnedig.  
 barwn m. *a baron*; pl. -eid, -yeid.  
 baryf (baraf) *a beard.*  
 baryfhäu *to grow a beard.* 241, 12.  
 Cf. baryf-lwyf rew FB. 244, 9.  
 bathoriaeth f. *mintage, mint.* 223, 14.  
 bedissyawd f. *the universe.* 238, 18.  
 bedw f. (coll.) *birch-trees.* 225, 9.  
 Bedwyr n. pr. m.  
 beð m. *a grave*; pl. -eu.  
 1. bei, bey, see bod.  
 2. bei a *fault.*  
 beich a *burden, load.* 230, 24.  
 beidäð m. *a challenger.* 240, 9.  
 beirnad (beirnyad) m. *a judge.* 235, 7. 236, 19.  
 bendigedig *blessed.*  
 bendyth (bendith) f. *a blessing.*  
 bennwig f. *a young sow.* 205, 19.  
 ber a *spike, lance*; pl. -eu. 231, 5.  
 beth, see peth.  
 beunyðyawl *daily.* 190, 9.

biw f. *cattle.* 242, 5; *a standard of value.* teirbuw 211, 5.  
 blaen m. *point, top, end, front.* or b. in front, oe f. *before him, ym*  
 b. pawb *before any one else, yn ol ac ym b. behind and before.*  
 blaen-weð *highest state, summit.* 169, 21. RB. II. 41, 33.  
 blawð *tumult, commotion.* 235, 15.  
 bleið-ast f. *a she-wolf.*  
 blin *weary, wearisome.*  
 blinaw *to weary, molest, harass.*  
 blinder *weariness.*  
 blodeuaw *to flourish, prosper.* 186, 1.  
 blwch? 241, 10.  
 blwyðyn f. *a year*; pl. -eð.  
 blynghäu *to become angry, to frown.* 140, 7. 172, 23.  
 blyneð f. *years (after numerals).*  
 bo, see bod.  
 bocsach f. *a boasting, vaunting.* 174, 13.  
 boch, see bod.  
 bod *to be, state of being (verb subst. and copula)* § 152 ff.  
 boð *goodwill, pleasure.* oc eu b. of *their own free will.* 156, 6. 12.  
 boði *to drown.*  
 bogel f. *the navel.* 174, 25.  
 Bolwyn n. l. *Boulogne.* 184, 31.  
 bon *stem, root, stump*; pl. -eu.  
 boneð *lineage, noble birth.* 162, 1.  
 bonheðig *hereditary, innate* 180, 15;  
*noble*; pl. -yon; superl. bonheðickaf.  
 bore m. *morning.* y b. in the morning. 225, 3.  
 brad m. and f. *treachery, plot.*  
 bradwr m. *a traitor*; pl. bradwyr.  
 bran m. and f. *a raven*; pl. brain.  
 bras *stout, fat.* 241, 2. 227, 20.  
 Cf. Gnawd buan o vain, gnawd buan o vras MA. 845<sup>b</sup> 15.  
 brath m. *a stab, wound.* 188, 21.  
 brathu *to wound, stab, spur.* impf. ind. act. pl. 3 brethynt; impf. ind. pass. brethid; part. brathedig.  
 1. brawd f. *judgment, day of judgment.* 185, 16.  
 2. brawd m. *a brother*; pl. brodyr, broder.  
 brawd-le m. *a judgment seat.*  
 bre *hill, promontory*; 243, 7.  
 Redyn-nl.  
 breich m. and f. *an arm.* 230, 23.  
 breið *hardly, scarcely.* 241, 7.  
 breiðwyd f. *a dream, vision.* 173, 6; v. l. ib. 14.

breiniawl *privileged*. 219, 14.  
 breint (bryein, brein) m. *privilege, prerogative; state, condition*. 220, 22.  
 breisg *stout*. 233, 10.  
 brenhin, (breenhin, brennhin, brennin) a *king*; pl. -eð.  
 brenhinawl *kingly, royal*.  
 brenhines f. a *queen*.  
 brenhin-wisg *royal robe*; pl. -oed.  
 brenhinyaeth f. *kingdom*.  
 brethid, brethynt, see brathu.  
 breu *brittle*. 200, 1.  
 breuan f. a *handmill, quern*. 206, 31.  
 briwaw to *break in pieces, shatter, destroy*. past part. briwedig. 147, 3.  
 broder, brodyr, see brawd.  
 bron (bronn) *breast*; pl. bronnoed;  
 dwy-fron *breasts*. rac b. *before, in front of*; ger b. *before*; ym b. y dyð *towards day*; cf. ymron y gorffen Hg. II, 248, 17; dynyon ymron agheu, ib. 201, 34.  
 brwysg *strong, impetuous, swift*. 233, 10.  
 bry adv. *above*. 237, 15.  
 bryd *mind, thought*; o un f. *with one accord*. 175, 10.  
 bryn (brin) m. a *hill, mount*.  
 brys m. *haste*; ar f. *in haste*.  
 bryssyaw to *hasten*.  
 Brytaen f. *Britain*. B. Fechan *Brittany*. Brytanyeid *Britons*.  
 brythwch *tumult, storm* 229, 7; 241, 8. brythweh gaeaf MA. 189a<sup>46</sup>.  
 bu, see bod.  
 bual a *drinking-horn*.  
 buan *swift, rapid*. 151, 21. 225, 21.  
 buaned *swiftness, fleetness*. 158, 29.  
 bucheð f. *life, salvation*. 150, 15.  
 bucheðu to *live*. 165, 9.  
 buðugawl *victorious, gifted*. 164, 28.  
 buðugolyaeth f. *victory, triumph*; pl. -eu. 144, 5.  
 buðyn? 229, 3.  
 bugeil m. a *shepherd*. 238, 19.  
 bwlich a *gap*; pl. bylcheu *embrasures*. 164, 22.  
 Bwlwyn n. l. *Boulogne*. 162, 14.  
 bwrð m. a *table*; pl. byrðeu.  
 Bwrgwyn n. l. *Burgundy*.  
 bwrw to *throw, cast, strike, hit, overthrow*. impf. ind. act. sg. 3 byryei; pret. ind. sg. 3 byryawð.

bwyll-ig a *small hatchet*. 201, 21.  
 bwyd m. *meat, food*.  
 bwyta to *eat, act of eating*.  
 bwyttal *victuals*. 203, 2.  
 bychan *small*.  
 bychod a *trifle*. 227, 10.  
 1. byd m. *world*. gwyn y f. *happy* he! 170, 18. goreu yn y b. *best of all*; gwas yn y b. *any youth*.  
 2. byd, see bod.  
 bydawl *earthly*. 222, 11.  
 byðin f. a *troop, division of an army*; pl. -oed.  
 byðinaw to *array in troops, to draw up in battle array*.  
 byhud? 233, 9.  
 bylchan, see bwlich.  
 byrr (birr) *short, brief*.  
 byryei, see bwrw.  
 byth (fyth) *ever*.  
 byw (1) *alive*; (2) *life*.  
 bywyd *life*. 193, 9 v. 1.

cabil *reproof*. 240, 13.  
 cad f. (1) *battle, roði c. ar faes to give battle*; (2) *a battalion*.  
 cadarn *strong, firm, powerful*.  
 cadarnhau to *strengthen, fortify, confirm, ratify, affirm*.  
 cadeir f. a *chair, seat*.  
 Cadell n. pr. m.  
 cad-ffer *strong in battle*. 241, 5.  
 cad-lys f. a *fortified court*. 195, 5.  
 cadw to *keep, preserve, maintain*.  
 Cad-wallawn n. pr. m.  
 cadwent f. *battle, fight, contest*. 198, 20; 230, 6.  
 cad-wr m. a *warrior*; pl. cedwyr. 241, 15. 242, 2.—n. pr. m.  
 cadwyn a *chain*; pl. -awr. 228, 16.  
 cadyr *strong, firm*. 241, 22.  
 cae m. an *enclosure, fence*. 149, 6.  
 cael, see caffel.  
 caer f. a *citadel, fortress, city*. pl. ceiryð 156, 31. 193, 2. C. Alclud (Ir. Ail Clúaide) *Dumbarton*, C. Efrawg *York*, C. Faðon *Bath*, C. Fuðei *Silchester*, C. Geint *Canterbury*, C. Idor *Dorchester*, C. Lew Dinas *Dinlle*, C. Loyw *Gloucester*, C. Lyr *Leicester*, C. Lleon *Chester*, C. Llion ar Wysc *Caerleon*, C. Lwydcoed *Lincoln*<sup>2</sup>, C. Seon *Segontium*,<sup>3</sup> C.

<sup>1</sup> See Rhys, *Celtic Heathendom*, p. 406.

<sup>2</sup> According to Holder, *Alt-keltischer Sprachschatz* II, col. 192, Lētocētum is the old British name for Lichfield in Staffordshire.

<sup>3</sup> On p. 239, l. 13 *Caer Seon* is confused with *C. Sion* 'Zion'; hence the mention of Jews in l. 14. Cf. Rhys, l.c., p. 272.

**Weir Warwick, C. Wynt Winchester, C. Wyrangon Worcester.**

**caeth captive**; pl. **ceith**.

**caeu to shut, close.** fut. ind. pass.

**cayator.** 232, 1.

**Cafall the name of one of Arthur's hounds.** Cabal, Nennius ed. Momm-  
sen, p. 217.

**caffel (caffael, cael) to get, seize, obtain, succeed** 184, 15. pres. ind. sg. 2 **ceffy**, pl. 2 **ceffwch**, pret. pass.

**caffad (cahat), etc.** § 145.

**calaf (coll.) stalks, reeds**; 241, 9.

**calan m. Calends**; **c. Awst first of August**; **c. gaeaf All Saints' Day**;

**c. Mei May-day.**

**calaneð corpses**, pl. of **celein**. 188, 12.

**caled hard, severe**; pl. **-yon**.

**Caled-fwlch (Ir. calad-bolg) m. hard in making notches, the name of Arthur's sword.**

**calon (callon) heart**; pl. **-eu, -oeð**.

**cam crooked, wrong**; **wrong, in-justice**; **gan g. wrongfully, unjustly**.

**camgwl a fine, penalty.** 225, 3.

v. l. for **camlwrw** Leg. Wall. 40b<sup>2</sup>.

**camlwrw a fine, penalty for the lesser offences.**

**cam-ryfygu to act arrogantly.**

166, 10. Cp. Hg. I. 219, 28.

**cam-wed sin, iniquity.** 229, 28.

1. **can (gan) (voc.) prep. with, by.** §167. With pron. end. §53. **gellwng y eneit gan yr wybr spiritum in auras emisit** 159, 25; **yr yscymunedickaf vradwr gan Vedrawt that most accursed traitor of a Medrawd** 189, 15.

2. **can (gan) conj. since.** § 202.

3. **can**, see 1. **cant**.

**canal**, see **cynhal**.

**canfed hundredth, a hundredth part.** 230, 5.

**can-fod to perceive.** § 160.

**canhorthwy help, aid.** 178, 8. 10.

**canhorthwyaw to help.** 176, 8.

**canhwyf**, see **canu**.

**canhym-deith to accompany, keep up with.** 208, 28.

**cani**, see **cany**.

**can-lyn to follow.**

**can-llaw m. a supporter.** 212, 11; 213, 21; 214, 10.

**can-mawl to praise, commend.**

**canonwr m. a canon**; pl. **-wyr**.

**cans**, see **canys**.

1. **cant (can) (nas.) m. a hundred.**

2. **cant**, see **canu**.

**canu to sing, celebrate in song, recite, play**; pres. subj. act. sg. 1 **canwyf**; impf. ind. pl. 3 **cenynt**; pret. ind. sg. 3 **cant**.

**can-wlad a hundred countries.** 232, 3.

**can-wr a hundred men** 151, 25. 172, 15.

**cany (cani)**, before vowels **canyd**, conj. *since not*, § 202.

**canyad permission, consent.** 217, 13.

**canys (cans) i.e., can with the present of the copula, for, since.** § 202.

**caplan m. a chaplain.** 155, 3.

**car a friend, relative**; pl. **-ant**.

**Caranwys Carnotensis.** 179, 21.

**carchar m. a prison, gaol.**

**carcharawr m. a prisoner**; pl. **carcharoryon**.

**carcharu to imprison.** 242, 5.

**cardawd charity, alms.** 237, 7.

**carn a cairn.**

**carreg a rock**; pl. **cerrig**.

**caru-wyn having a white hilt.**

Hence **carnwennan f.**, the name of Arthur's knife. 207, 31.

**caru to love.** impf. ind. act. pl. 3

**cerynt**; past part. **caredig**.

**carw a stag.** 196, 29.

**caryad m. love, affection.** 233, 15.

**caryant** 140, 4, either miswritten for **caryat** or formed like **mol-yant**, **með-yant**, &c.

**cassau to hate.**

**casseg f. a mare.**

**castell m. a castle, fortress**; pl. **cestyll**.

**cathyl f. a song, lay, poem**; pl.

**cathleu.** 229, 17.

**Catynes n. l. Caithness.** 145, 11.

**Caw n. pr. m.** 201, 19.

**cawn m. (coll.) reed grass, stalks, coarse grass**; 241, 9; 12; sg. **conin**.

**cawr m. a giant, mighty man**; pl. **cewri**.

**cawssei**, see **caffel**.

**cayator**, see **caeu**.

**cedernid strength, force, security, violence.**

**cedig battlesome, boisterous.** 241, 10.

**cedwyr**, see **cadwr**.

**cedymdeith**, see **cydymdeith**.

**cefeis**, see **caffel**.

cefn (keuen) *back*; pl. cefneu; dangos eu cefneu *to flee, take to flight*. drachefyn *behind, back, again*; traefgefyn *behind him*; dyfod t. *to return* 213, 8; trach-eu-cefn 221, 21; drae-cefn wynteu *behind them*. 179, 26.

cefynderw *a cousin*. plant yr hen-vam a uyd keuyn-dyru BCh. 75, 28. cegin f. *a kitchen*.

Cei n. pr. m. *Caius*.

ceidwad m. *a witness*; pl. keidweid.

ceing f. *a branch*. 165, 21. 197, 3.

cein *beautiful, fair, delightful*.

Ceint (Cent) *Kent*. 189, 19.

ceissaw *to seek, fetch, endeavour*.

ceirch *oats*. 196, 4.

ceith, see caeth.

celfyd skilful, ingenious; an artist.

celfydyd f. *an art*; pl. celfydodeu.

celi *the heavens*. 231, 25. Celi God. 231, 24.

celu *to hide, conceal*.

celwrn m. *a piece?* 207, 32.

celwydawg *lying, false*. 190, 10.

Celydon: llwyn C. 148, 25 = coit Celidon, Nennius, p. 199.

Celli-wig f. *the name of Arthur's court in Cornwall, now Callington*.

cenedyd f. *a race, kind*.

cenedyd f. *a race, kind*; pl. cened-loed.

ceneu m. *a whelp*. 198, 32. 199, 4.

32. Ceneu n. pr. m. 162, 3.

cennad m. and f. *a messenger, emissary, embassy*; pl. -eu.

cennadwri f. *a message, tidings*.

cenfeint *a convent*; pl. cenveinoed.

cenwch, see l. can.

cerd *craft, art, song*; pl. cyrd.

cerdawr m. *a craftsman, minstrel, bard*; pl. cerdoryon.

cerded *to walk, travel, journey, go*.

cerdedyd *a course, motion*. 161, 11.

Ceredigyawn *Cardigan*. 205, 28.

cerenhyd *relationship*. 168, 20.

Cernyw *Cornwall*.

cerwyd *a stag*. 226, 1.

cerwyn f. *a caldron*. Cwm C., n. l. 204, 15.

cesseil *the armpit*. 194, 14.

cethr *a spike*; pl. -awd. 230, 29.

cethron *a spike*. 230, 27.

cewilyd *shame*. 141, 8. 142, 31.

cewssynt, see caffel.

ci m. *a hound*; coll. 205, 9; pl. cwn.

cicwr *a footsoldier*; coll. infantry. 202, 29.

cig m. *flesh*.

ciglef, see clybod.

cil *a recess, nook*.

Cil-gwri n.l.

cilyaw *to retreat, desert, fail*.

cilyd *a mate, fellow*. § 72.

ciwdawdwr m. *a citizen, inhabitant*.

cladu *to bury*.

claf sick. 143, 13. 149, 28.

cleddyf m. *a sword*; pl. -eu, per metathesis clefydeu.

clefyd m. *sickness, disease*. 161, 27.

clefydeu, see cleddyf.

cleigaw *to plunge, immerse*. 206, 21.

cleis *a stripe*. 194, 14. Cf. maen

cleis, *marble*. Lhwyt.—Porth Cleis n. l. 204, 1.

clid *a shelter*. 241, 2.

clod m. and f. *fame, renown*.

clod-fawr *famous, celebrated*.

clodfori *to make illustrious, render famous*. 165, 15.

cloff *lame*.

clomen (colomen) f. *a dove*. 163, 10.

clust m. *an ear*. 201, 29. 203, 26.

clwm *a tune*; pl. clymeu moduli 147, 14.

Clwyd *a river-name*. 204, 17.

clybod *to hear*. impf. ind. act. sg. 3. clywei; impf. pass. clywid; pret. ind. sg. 1. ciglef; sg. 3. ciglen. § 133 b. clybod ar *to hear of*.

clymeu, see clwm.

cnawd *flesh*. 238, 12.

cnes *skin*. 241, 14.

cneuen *a nut*. 196, 23.

cnithiaw *to pluck*. 200, 9.

coch *red*.

cochi *to redder, become red*. 173, 16.

cođyant m. *provocation, offence*. 166, 4.

coed (coyt) m. (coll.) *a wood, trees*;

baed c. *a wild boar*. pl. coedyd.

coeth *pure, fine*. eur c. *refined gold*.

cof *memory, recollection*.

coffau *to remember, to call to mind*.

cog *a cuckoo*; pl. -eu.

congyl f. *a corner, angle*. 204, 9.

colled m. *loss*; pl. -eu 175, 31.

collen *hazel*. c. derwen *an oak*

sapling. 197, 2.

colli *to lose, be lost*. 238, 13.

conin, see cawn.

corff *a body, corpse*.

corn *a horn, trumpet; a drinking horn.* pl. **cyrn, cirn.**  
 coron f. *a crown.*  
 coryf *pommel, saddle-bow; metaph. stay, support.* 233, 20; 234, 23. Arch. I, p. 487.  
 cosb *punishment, fine.* 217, 18.  
 craff *firm, steadfast.* 140, 5.  
 cras *hard, dry.* 225, 20.  
 crawn, see **croni.**  
 credu *to believe.* pres. subj. pl. 2  
**crettoch.**  
 crefyddus *devout; a religious person.* pl. -son. 155, 5.  
 crefyddwr m. *a religious person.* 144, 13 (miswritten for **crefftwyr** = *operarii* Geoffrey II, 14).  
 Creiðylad n. pr. f.  
 creir m. *a relic; pl. -eu.* 153, 26.  
 creirhäu *to cause to swear by relics.* 221, 2.  
 crettöch, see **credu.**  
 creü *to create.* 227, 19. 228, 18.  
 creu *gore, blood.*  
 creu-law'n *blood-thirsty, cruel; compar. creulonach.*  
 creulon-der *cruelty, tyranny, oppression.*  
 creu-lyd *blood-stained, gory; f. creuled.* 231, 20. 238, 16.  
 crib f. *a comb.* 203, 25.  
 crin *withered, brittle.* 241, 9.  
 Crist Christ.  
 cristawn *a Christian; pl. cristonog-yon.*  
 cristonogawl *Christian.*  
 crog f. *a cross.*  
 crogaw, crogi *to crucify, hang.*  
 croni *to hoard, amass, accumulate.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **crawn** 233, 12.  
 crwm bent. 225, 11.  
 crychyd *a shake (in music); pl. -eu.* 147, 14 v.l.  
 cryd *a trembling, tremor.* 231, 22.  
 cryfang *a talon; pl. -heu* 197, 28.  
 cryn *a trembling, quaking.* 228, 33.  
 cryno *suitable.* 156, 32. compar. -ach. 169, 2.  
 crynu *to tremble, quake.* 184, 22. past part. **crynedig** 152, 16.  
 cuan *an owl* 197, 8; 9; *a rock-owl, Lhwyl.*  
 cudyaw *to cover, hide.* 154, 13.  
 cul *lean, thin, emaciated.*  
 Culwyð *God.* 228, 24. 231, 25.  
 Custenhin n. pr. m. *Constantine.*

cwbwl (cwbyl) *entire, whole.*  
 cweiraw, see **cyweiryaw.**  
 cwfeint (cwfeint) f. *convent, assembly; pl. cwfenoeð.*  
 cwm m. *a valley.* 197, 12.  
 cwnsli m. *counsel.* 148, 2.  
 cwrr *an edge, corner.* C. y Fagyl n.l. 204, 4.  
 cwymmp m. *a fall.* 225, 22.  
 cwynaw *to lament.*  
 cwyn-fan f. *a lament, wailing.*  
 cychwyn, cychwynnu *to set out, move, start.* deil ar gychwyn = *dail yn syrthio* MA. 361 b, n. 8.  
 cyd (ced) conj. *though; § 205.*  
 cyd ac, y gyd ac *together with.*  
 y gyd yg cyd *together* 155, 2. § 171.  
 y gyd a hynny *likewise* 204, 26. 218, 20.  
 cyd-ðioðef *to suffer.* 142, 14. past. part. -edig (y) *suffering (with).*  
 cyd-ðiolch *to congratulate.* 180, 10.  
 cyd-farchawg m. *a knight-comrade.*  
 cyd-gynghor *joint counsel.* 155, 2.  
 cyd-synnedigaeth f. *consent.* 145, 4.  
 cyd-tywysawg m. *a joint leader.* 178, 1.  
 cyd-ym-deith m. *a companion, comrade; pl. -on.*  
 cydymdeithocâu *to accompany, associate with.* 146, 4.  
 cyf-agos *near.*  
 cyfan *whole, entire.* 183, 32.  
 cyfar *trouble, anger; § 230, 7. Cf. Rhyfedd ym fyw llyw llawged gan gyfar o gwyn gofid* MA. 301 a 17.  
 cyf-arch (kenarch) *to request, ask; c. gwell to greet; geir cyfarch a supplementary question asked after the trial, before the verdict is given.*  
 cyf-ar-fod *to meet, encounter, touch; § 160.*  
 cyfarth *to bark, bay; roði c. rendre les abois, to stand at bay. achub yr c. (sic leg.) to be first at the charge.*  
 cyf-arwyð m. *a guide.*  
 cyf-ar-wyneb (ac) *opposite (to)* 210, 5.  
 cyf-eilt m. *a friend.*  
 cyf-eir f. yn y gyfeir *straight before him, headlong.* 207, 6.  
 cyf-enw *a namesake.* yg kyuenw yr vn dyd ym phen y vlwydyn *that day a year.* 195, 19.  
 cyf-ergir m. and f. *a conflict, contest.* 240, 9.  
 cyf-ing *narrow, strait.* 175, 17.  
 cyf-law'n *full, complete.*

**cyflafan** f. *an outrage, slaughter.*  
**cyf-le** m. *an opportunity.* 159, 16.  
**cyflehäu** to *dispose, arrange, place.* 163, 27.  
**cyf-lym** sharp, quick, speedy.  
**cyf-newid** (O. W. **cyfnofud**) f. *coin, merchandise.* 223, 13. Cf. *ef a hollltir furyf y gyfnewit*; *haner crwn a vyd* RB. 2. 146, 19.  
**cyfodi** to *arise.*  
**cyf-oed** having the same age, so old. 141, 28.  
**cyf-oeth** m. *power, dominion, kingdom, wealth*; pl. -eu.  
**cyfoethawg** powerful, wealthy.  
**cyfoethogi** to *enrich.*  
**cyfranc** f. *an encounter, fight, combat.* 178, 12.  
**cyf-red** equally swift. 225, 6.  
**cyf-reith** f. *law, right*; pl. -eu.  
**cyfreithiawl** legal, lawful.  
**cyfreu** plumage? 225, 17. *action?* 229, 30.  
**cyf-rin** a *confidant.* 225, 5.  
**cyfrwch** a *meeting.* 147, 5 (v.l.).  
**cyfrwng** m. *mean, interval.* yg c. *in the midst of* 184, 9.  
**cyfrwys** trained, expert. 186, 19. 190, 9 v.l. 191, 21.  
**cyf-ryw** m. *the same kind.* 181, 27. *a kind* 161, 27. *similar, like, such.*  
**cyf-uch** of *equal height.* yn g. ac *on a level with.* 174, 30.  
**cyf-un-deb** unity, concord. 167, 23.  
**cyf-yawnhäu** to *adjust, arrange.* 163, 27 v.l.  
**cyf-yeith** having the same language. 196, 13.  
**cyf-yl** nearness, proximity. yn y *gyfyl* near him.  
**cyff** m. *stock, trunk, stem*; pl. -yon.  
**cyffelybu** to *compare, imitate.*  
**cyffredin** common. yn g. *in common* 185, 25. 223, 12.  
**cyffro** m. *excitement.* 164, 27. 176, 6.  
**cyffroi** (kefroy) to *excite, arouse, disturb*; c. **cyfreith** (hawt) to *institute a legal action (a claim).* past part. **cyffroedig.** 184, 10.  
**cyffur** occasion, opportunity. 147, 9.  
**cynghaws** m. *a counsel, advocate.*  
**cynghellawr** m. *a chancellor, the king's principal steward or reeve.*  
**cynghelloraeth** f. *chancellorship.*  
**cynghusaeth** f. *a pleading.*  
**cynghlodforussed** equally renowned. 186, 5.

**cynghor** (keghor) m. *counsel, advice*; **caffel yn y gyghor** to *decide.*  
**cynghorfynt** envy, malice. 156, 20. Cf. LA. 12, 19.  
**cynghori** to *advise.*  
**cynghreir** f. *a covenant, truce.* 159, 12.  
**cyngwastad** constant. 234, 6. 235, 27.  
**cyhoeð** public. 222, 12.  
**cy-hyd** having equal length. yn **gyhyd** ac as long as.  
**cyhydeð** equality, parity. 221, 6. 7.  
**cylch** m. *a circle.* yg c. *around, about, towards, concerning*; yn eu c. *about them, around them*; yg c. **hynny** about that.  
**cylchynu** to *surround, encompass, besiege.* 146, 17 v. l.  
**cyllell** f. *a knife, dagger.*  
**cyllell-bren** the wooden lath of a scabbard; pl. -eu 195, 14. *wooden tweezers* 200, 5.  
**cyllell-fawr** big-knived. 206, 19.  
**cymhell** to *compel, force, drive, exact.* c. y law to *force one to surrender.*  
**cymenn** wise; compar. **cymhennach.** 175, 28.  
**cymr**, see **cymryd.**  
**cymmteint** of equal size, as much, as many, so great, so many.  
**cymmwd** m. *a commote, a division of country.*  
**cymod** to *propitiate, make peace.* 197, 32. 201, 7.  
**cymodawg** a neighbour; pl. **cymodogion.**  
**cymod-loned** a concord, agreement.  
**cymrwd** mortar. 193, 2.  
**Cymry** (pl. of **Cymro** m. *a Welshman*) Wales. 154, 10. 203, 31. 222, 4.  
**cymryd** (kemyrit) to *take.* pret. ind. sg. 3. **cymrorth, cymirth.** c. **arnaw** to *feign*; c. **eu fforð** (hynt) to *set out*; c. **ffo** to *take to flight.*  
**cymyn** to *entrust.* 157, 10.  
**cymynediw** a command, injunction; pl. -eu; 150, 24; 166, 26.  
 1. **cyn** (cynn) prep. *before.* § 170.  
 2. **cyn** (gynn) conj. *sooner, before.* § 204. **gynn noe fyned** *before he goes.* 225, 3.  
 3. **cyn** a stump; pl. -yon. 197, 14.  
**cynadyl** a meeting, assembly. 171, 19.  
**cyn-deced** as fair. 163, 14.



**cyn-digrifed** as pleasant. 163, 14.  
**cyn-dosted** equally harsh. 198, 17.  
**Cyn-ðelig** n. pr. m. 162, 7.  
**Cyn-ðelw** n. pr. m.  
**Cyn-farch** n. pr. m.  
**cynefawd** custom, usage. 163, 24.  
 167, 1.  
**Cyn-felyn** n. pr. m.  
**cynhal, cynnal** (kanal) to sustain, support, maintain.  
**cynhebig** similar, like.  
**cynhebygu** to compare. 161, 2.  
**cynhelu** to support. 220, 30.  
**cynhen** contention, strife, contest;  
 pl. **cynhennu**.  
**cynhyrfu** to excite, move. 173, 27.  
**cynired** to come together, assemble;  
 bring together; a concourse. 162, 20.  
**Cyn-las** n. pr. m.  
**cynllwyn** an ambush, waylaying.  
 223, 1.  
**cyn-llyfan** a leash, a slip.  
**cynna** equally good, peer. 227, 9.  
**cynnal**, see **cynhal**.  
**cynnelw** pattern, example, model.  
 233, 16.  
**cynnifywr** (coll.) m. combatants,  
 warriors. 202, 27.  
**cynnig** to propose, proffer, suggest.  
**cynnullaw** to collect, call together.  
**cynnwys** to receive, admit, adopt.  
 238, 5. Ar sawl a oed dan geithiwet  
 heuyt ef ae kynnwyssawd ym  
 paradwys L.A. 1331<sup>2</sup>; Creawdyr celi  
 an kynnwys ni yn trugared,  
 F.B. 1996.  
 1. **cynnyð** m. a huntsman; pl.  
 -yon. 205, 4. 7.  
 2. **cynnyð** increase, prosperity.  
 237, 6. ef a doeth att Walehmei. Ac  
 a gyuarchawd gwell idaw. Duw a ro  
 kynnys arnat, heb y Gwalehmei  
 Hg. I. 223, 2.  
**cynnyðu** to increase. 180, 12.  
**cyn-ran** m. a first or chief part;  
 a leader. 231, 27.  
**cynt** adv. formerly, before. **yn g.**  
 sooner, rather 181, 8.  
**cyntaf** first; **yn gyntaf** first, at first.  
**cyntefin** (Ir. cêtemuin) the be-  
 ginning of summer. 225, 14.  
**Cyn-was** n. pr. m. 204, 4.  
**cyny** (kene) conj. though not. § 205.  
**cyrch** m. an attack, onset, raid.  
**cyrchaw** to fetch, bring. 231, 18.  
**cyrchu** to attack, set upon, march  
 upon, make for, approach.

**cyrn**, see **corn**.  
**cyrysawyðad** a quarrel, contention?  
 230, 9.  
**cysgawd** m. shade, shelter, sha-  
 dow. 241, 11.  
**cysgu** to sleep.  
**cystal** equally good, as good.  
**cy-war-sangu** to trample upon,  
 oppress, crush. 149, 26. 152, 16.  
 180, 32.  
**cy-weir** prepared, equipped, com-  
 plete. 158, 29. 179, 16.  
**cyweiryaw** to prepare, equip, lay  
 out.  
**cy-weithyð** a company. 194, 3.  
**cy-wir** true, just. 234, 6.  
 1. **cy-wlad** f. a neighbouring terri-  
 tory, borderland. 233, 18. Rybu Vran  
 vab Llŷr llu rwyndur mat ygkamp  
 ygkyulat ygkur M.A. 180 b 13.  
 2. **cy-wlad** m. a compatriot. 230, 10.  
**cywrein** skilful, cunning.  
**cy-wrisseð** contention, strife. 234,  
 23. 236, 11.  
**cy-wryð-ol-(y)aeth** f. harmony,  
 music; pl. -eu 163, 14. Used also  
 as sg. pa gywydolyaethew yw honn?  
 L.A. 82, 10.  
**chwaer** f. a sister; pl. **chwioryð**.  
**chware** to play; play; pl. **chwar-**  
**yeu**.  
**chwech, chwe** (whe) (spir.) six.  
**chwedyl** m. a story, tale, news,  
 tidings; pl. **chwedieu**.  
**chweg** sweet. 239, 21.  
**chwerthyn** to smile. **chwerðid**  
 (§ 129) 225, 22.  
**chwerw** bitter. 230, 7.  
**chwi** you. Emphatic **chwichwi**,  
 conjunctive **chwithen, chithen**. § 45.  
**Chwintus** n. pr. m. Quintus.  
  
**da** (1) good, profitable; (2) goods,  
 wealth, benefit.  
**dabre** come! § 141.  
**dad-ganu** to recapitulate, rehearse,  
 recite. 173, 6.  
**dadolwch** intercession, invocation.  
 235, 17.  
**dad-rithaw** to re-transform. 199, 8.  
**dadyl** m. and f. a meeting, dispute,  
 suit, judgment; pl. **dadieu** (used as  
 sg. masc. and pl.) a dispute.  
**dadyl-fa** a meeting-place, court.  
 O.W. **dadlma** 222, 13.  
**dafad** f. a sheep; pl. **defeid**.

**daffar** *provision.* 225, 19; cf. *gwnaeth Duw trvgar gardaud* FB. 15, 14.

**dangos** (*dankos*) *to shew, disclose, produce.* d. *cefneu to flee*; d. *bronnœd to face*; d. *deheuœd turn the right to, face*; d. *ysparduneu y to spur.*

**dala** (*daly*) *to hold, seize, retain, hold back, capture.* act. pret. ind. sg. 3 **delis** (*dellis*), past subj. pl. 3 **delhynt**, pluperf. pl. 3 **dalyassant**.

**dam-gylchu** *to surround*; past part. **damgylchedig**.

**dam-gylchynu** *to surround.* 142, 17. **damunaw** *to desire, wish, seek for*; part. **damunedig**.

**damwein** m. *accident, chance, fortune, event*; pl. -eu; o ð. *by chance.*

**damweinaw** (y) *to happen to, to befall.* 173, 11.

**danfon** *to send, dispatch.* 178, 7.

**dar** f. *an oak-tree.* 197, 2.

**dar-estwng** *to subdue, subjugate, yield*; past part. **darestyngedig**.

**dar-fod** *to cease, end, come to pass, happen.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **deryw**; fut. ind. sg. 3 **dervyð**; impf. ind. sg. 3 **darœd**; cond. sg. 3 **darffei**. § 160.

**dar-lleaw** *to read.* 231, 29.

**darmerth** *provision, preparation.* 162, 19.

**dar-o-gan** *prophecy, prognostication*; pl. **daroganneu**.

**darpar** (am) m. *preparation (for), provision, project.*

**darparu** *to prepare, intend.* 196, 7. **dar-ym-red** *to pass to and fro*; 210, 7.

**dathœdd**, see **dyfod**.

1. **daw** m. *a son-in-law*; pl. **dofyon**.

2. **daw**, see **dyfod**.

**dawn** *gift, mental endowment*; pl. **donyeu**.

**dayar** (*dayr, dair*) f. *earth, land, ground.*

**dayar-dy** *a subterranean vault.*

**dayar-gychwyn** *an earthquake*; 229, 1.

**dayoni** *goodness, virtue, valour.*

**dayrawl** *earthly, mundane, material.* 164, 9.

**de**, see **dy**.

**dechreu** *to begin, inaugurate*; *a beginning, origin.*

**dedwyð** *happy, blessed, virtuous.*

**dedwyðyd** *happiness, felicity.*

**defawd** f. *custom, practice, habit, ordinance*; pl. **defœdeu**.

**defnyð** m. *material, element, substance, cause*; pl. **defnyðeu, defnyðyeu** *witnesses, guarantors, etc. in a lawsuit.*

**deg, deng** (nas) *ten.* § 41.

**deheu** (1) *right (dexter), righteous*; (2) *the right hand or arm, the right side of the body, south, South-Wales*; pl. -œd.

**Deheu-barth** *South-Wales.*

**dehongyl** (*dehogyl*) *to interpret*; *interpretation.* 173, 8, 13.

**dehol** *to expel, banish.* 143, 21, 155, 7.

**deifaw** *to roast.* 199, 28.

**deil** (coll.) *leaves.*

**deissyfeid** (*deissyfyt, dissiuit*) *to demand, request, seek, merit.*

**deissyfyd** (*dysseifyd*) *sudden, unexpected.* 147, 3, 187, 23, 208, 17.

1. **delhynt**, see **dala**.

2. **delhynt**, see **dyfod**.

**delw** f. *image, form.*

**delwad** m. *creator.* 227, 1.

**delwyd**, see **dyfod**.

**deni**, see **1. tan.**

**derwen** f. *an oak-tree.* **collen d.** *a young oak.*

**dethol** *select, picked.* 202, 29.

**deu** m. *two*; f. **dwy** (*dui, du*). § 42 (a).

**deubi**, see **dyfod**.

**deu-ðeg** (nas.) *twelve.*

**deu-ðeg-mlwyð** *twelve years old.*

**deu-ðyblig** *double, two-fold.* 214, 29.

**deugeint** *forty.*

**deugeinfed** *fortieth*; *ar y d. with forty men.* § 165.

**Deu-gleðyf** *the name of a cantref in Pembroke.* 204, 5.

**deu-hanner** *divided in two equal halves.* 221, 7.

**deuth**, see **dyfod**.

**Dewi** n. pr. m. *David.*

**dewin** m. *a magician.* 225, 16.

**dewis** *to choose, prefer.*

**dewr** *brave.*

**dewred** *prowess, valour, prime of life.* 140, 6, 180, 10, 186, 1, 4. **warriors** 144, 1, (*omnem armatum militem*).

**Dews** (*Deus*) Lat. *Deus.* 227, 1, 20.

1. **di**, see **ti**.

2. **di** (**dy**) (voc.) O. W. = later **i, y**, prep. *to.* **diði** *to her.* § 195.

**di-aerfa** *without slaughter.* 170, 10 (sic leg.)

di-afael exempt from seizure. 223, 32.

di-angc to escape. pret. ind. act. sg. 3 diengis (dihegis).

di-al to avenge; vengeance.

di-am (O. W.) for. § 164.

di-amheu undoubted, certain, evident. 235, 18.

di-anaf flawless, whole. 202, 5.

di-annod without delay.

di-anrydeu to dishonour. 142, 6.

di-arfeu unarmed. 156, 1.

di-arfod unprepared. 177, 30.

di-arfu to disarm.

diawd drink. 170, 16.

did, see dodi.

di-drifwr m. a hermit. 165, 8.

di-dryf a solitary place, hermitage. 165, 9.

di-ðarbod to consider, care. heb ð. parum cogitans 184, 14. impf. ind. act. pl. 3 diðorynt 175, 26. § 147.

di-eithyr outside. § 172. yn y d. 222, 14.

diën buds. 241, 19. Arch I. p. 503.

dieu, dieuoeð, see dyð.

difa to destroy, annul. 197, 13.

di-fanw (O. W. dimanw) to disparage, slight. pres. subj. act. sg. 3 difanwo. 224, 7.

di-farnu I judge, decide against. 140, 9. 220, 13. 16. fut. sg. 3 diwarnawd 228, 20.

di-fei faultless, perfect. 238, 15.

di-fetha to destroy. 197, 31.

di-fryssio to hasten, speed. 242, 2.

di-funer exempt from allegiance to a lord. 223, 31.

di-fwlc without a notch. Cleðyf D. n. pr. m. 204, 12.

di-fwyn void, idle, unused, untouched (of a virgin). 201, 4.

di-fwynyant profitless. 211, 8.

diffeith waste.

diffeithaw to lay waste.

diffeithwch m. a waste, wilderness.

differei, see diffryd.

diffryd (rac) to defend, protect (from). past. subj. act. sg. 3 differei; pret. ind. sg. 3 diffyrth, diffirth. § 133a.

diffurn? 228, 11.

di-garyad unloving, unkind. 142, 4.

1. digawn (dygawn) m. a sufficiency; sufficient.

2. digawn to be able, to effect, do, accomplish; pres. ind. sg. 1 digonaf.

di-gribyaw (y) to attack. 205, 5. Cf. ym-gribiaw.

digrif pleasant, agreeable.

digrifwch pleasure, enjoyment.

di-gyfoethi to dispossess, deprive of territory. 191, 17.

diheu undoubted, certain. d.-porth firm support. 234, 14.

di-hewyd affection, inclination, desire. 175, 25. 180, 32. 182, 11.

dilëu to exterminate, annihilate,

dilid to pursue.

di-luyð exempt from hosting. 223, 31.

dillad (coll.) clothes, dress. 154, 8.

dim a thing, something; nothing, naught. dilëu hyd ar ðim to annihilate; dilid hyd ar ðim to pursue to extinction; adv. at all.

din a fortress. Din Tywi n. l. 205, 27.

Din-dagwl n. l. Tintagel.

dinas m. a city, citadel; pl. dinas-soeð.

di-obeithaw to despair. 190, 13.

di-od to take off, divest, extract,

di-oðef (O. W. diguadef) to suffer, undergo, withstand.

dioer verily, certainly. 176, 1.

di-o-gel safe, secure.

diogelwch safety, security.

diolch (i) to thank.

dipynwys, see dybynu.

dir necessary. 190, 10.

dir-fawr very great, huge, enormous

dirieid wicked. 225, 12.

dirwy f. a fine, mulct.

di-rybuð without warning. 158, 12.

disgyblu to study, imitate (like a disciple). 156, 22. Cf. Hg. I. 208, 5.

disgynnu to dismount, descend, alight, land, put up at.

dispeilaw to unsheathe. 199, 13.

dissifid, see deissyfyd.

distryw to destroy, demolish.

ditheu, see titheu.

dithwn (O. W.) this day. 208, 15. 16

di-wall careful, unceasing. 164, 5.

1. diwarnawd m. a day.

2. diwarnawd, see di-farnu.

diwedýð m. evening. 241, 13.

diwed end or d. at last.

di-weir chaste. 164, 15.

diweir-deb chastity. 190, 16.

diwethaf last. 154, 30.

di-wreid an uprooting. 233, 3.

di-wreidedig uprooted, demolished. 155, 4.

di-wyll cultivation. 167, 8.

**dodi** (**dody**) *to place, put, give, charge.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **did**; **dodi ar y gyfraith** *to appeal to the law*; **dodi ym mhen un** *to suggest, submit, entrust, hand over.*

**doðyw, doent**, see **dyfod**.

1. **doeth wise, sage.** 143, 3.

2. **doeth**, see **dyfod**.

**doeth-ineb wisdom.** 142, 32.

**Dofyð m.** *the Lord, God.*

**Dofyðad m.** *the Lord.* 231, 15.

**dofyon**, see 1. **daw**.

**dogygn portion, share.** 202, 14.

**doið**, see **dyfod**.

**dolur grief, anguish.** 144, 20.

**doluryaw to grieve.** 154, 25. 204, 20.

**domni**=Lat. Domini. 237, 2.

**donyawg gifted, endowed.** 235, 19.

**donyeu**, see **dawn**.

**dos**, see **myned**.

**dothuif, doy, doynt**, see **dyfod**.

**drachefyn**, see **trachefyn**.

**dragon, dreig f.** *a dragon*; 172, 29.

**a battle standard.** pl. **dreigeu**.

150, 26. 180, 2. 184, 3.

**drein** (coll.) *thorns.* 230, 32.

**dros**, see **tros**.

**drudbold, arrogant, wicked.** 186, 13.

232, 8.

**drudannaeth f.** *arrogance.* 165, 28 (*protervia*).

**Drud-wyn m.** *the name of a hound.*

204, 8.

**drwg bad, evil; mischief, harm.**

**drws door, entrance; pl. drysseu.**

**drwy**, see **trwy**.

**drycin** (i.e. dryg-hin) *foul weather.*

225, 6.

**drychafel to raise, lift; rise.**

**dryg-ðamwein misfortune, ill-luck.**

**dryll m.** *portion, fragment; pl. -eu.*

**dryllyaw to break in pieces, shatter.**

**dryssawr m.** *a doorkeeper.* 234, 8.

**drysseu**, see **drws**.

**du black.**

**duc m.** *a duke.*

**duch, dug**, see **dwyn**.

**du-hunaw to awake.** 173, 6.

**Du-las** (Ir. Dub-glas) *a river-name.*

146, 14.

**du-un accordant, agreeable.** 216, 23.

**duw (dyw): pob d.** *on every day.*

201, 5. **d. Sadwrn on Saturday.**

228, 21. 240, 10.

**Duw m.** *God.* pl. **dwyweu** 142, 21.

**dwfrein**, see **dwyrein**.

**dwfyr (dwfwr) m.** *water.*

**dwrn a fist, hand; pl. dirn.** 235, 2.

**dwyr**, see **deu**. **dwyweu**, see **Duw**.

**dwywawl divine.**

**dwylaw** (pl. of **llaw**) *hands.*

**dwyn to take, carry, bring, capture;** § 133 (b). **d. ar gof to call to mind.**

**d. ruthur to attack.** **d. yr**

**dygyn to affirm on oath.** pres.

ind. act. sg. 1 **dygaf**; fut. ind. pass.

**dygetawr** (§ 129. n.); imper. sg. 2

**dwg**; pres. subj. sg. 3 **duch** (§ 110

n. 2); pret. ind. sg. 3 **dug**.

**dwyrein (dwfrein, dwyfrein) the east.** 172, 1. 181, 17.

1. **dy**, see 2. **di**.

2. **dy (de)** (voc.) poss. adj. *thy.* § 57.

3. **dy (de)**, see **ti**.

**dy-borthi to carry, inflict.** 180, 26.

**dy-bryd ugly, foul, base.** 178, 6;

180, 19; 190, 26.

**dybynu to hang down.** 230, 18.

**dycco, dyccwy**, see **dwyn**.

**dychymyg m.** *invention, device;*

pl. -eu, -yon. 164, 26.

**dyð** (O.W. **did**) m. *day, daytime,*

*daylight, date;* pl. **dicu** (after

numerals), **dieuoed, dyðeu;** d. **brawd**

*Doomsday; hanner d. mid-day.*

**dyð-gweith on a certain day, one**

*day.* 199, 10.

**dy-ðwyn to bring.** 194, 13.

**Dyfed Demetia.**

**Dyfnarth n.** pr. m. 200, 28.

**Dyfnaint n.** l. *Devon.* 206, 5.

**dyfod (deuod, douot) to come.** § 141.

**dyfodedigaeth f.** *a coming, arrival.*

**dy-fryssyaw to hasten.** 242, 2.

**dyfuant, dyfyð**, see **dyfod**.

**dyfynnu to summon.** 201, 1. 205, 2.

**Dyfyndwal n.** pr. m.

**dyffo**, see **dyfod**.

**dyffryn m.** *a valley.* D. **Llychwr**

*the valley of Loughor.*

**dyffyggyaw to fail, lack.** 145, 24.

180, 11.

**dy-gaboli to belabour, beat soundly**

207, 21.

**dygaf, dygetawr**, see **dwyn**.

**dygonho**, see 2. **digawn**.

**dy-gryn terror.** 228, 33.

**dygrynnyaw to seize, clutch.**

206, 20.

**dy-grynöi to avail, profit.** 153, 10.

175, 30.

**dy-gwyðaw to fall, chance.**

**dygwyðedigaeth f.** *setting (of the*

*sun).* 151, 4.

**dygyn** *hard, severe; a test, proof.*  
See **dwyn**.

**dy-gyrchu** *to make for, set upon; draw.* 194, 23. 202, 12. 206, 24.

1. **dy-heð** *discordant, strange? piteous, a pity?* 194, 19.<sup>1</sup>

2. **dyheð?** 228, 27. Here MA. 73 b 6 has the variant *tuedd*, pl. of *tu* 'country-side, country.'

**dy-leith** *death.* 232, 1.

**dylyed f. due, claim, right, title.**

**dylyedawg** *high-born, noble; pl. dylyedogyon.* 140, 29. 155, 14. 156, 24.

**dylyedus due, proper. 182, 20.**

**dylyu (deleu)** *to have a right to, deserve, be due, owe.* 171, 26. 208, 20. 23. 217, 25. 237, 19.

**dyn m. and f. a human being, man; coll. men** 204, 5. pl. **-yon (deneon).**

**dy-nessäu** *to approach, draw near.*

**dyn-y-orn** (cf. Ir. *duin-organ*) *homicide, murder.* 222, 17.

**dyrchefynt**, see **drychafel**.

**dyrn-awd m. a blow; pl. dyrnnodeu.**

**dyrn-feð a handbreadth. 197, 24.**

**dy-roði to give.** pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **dere, dyry**; imperat. sg. 2 **dyro.**

**dyrys** (1) *difficult, intricate; (2) adversity.* 162, 20. 167, 16. 175, 18.

**dysg m. teaching, instruction, example, behaviour. 164, 12. 182, 19. 184, 23 (*hortamen*). 187, 7.**

**dysgu to teach, instruct.**

**dysseifyd**, see **deissyfyd**.

**dywad**, see **dywedud**.

**dywal fierce. 183, 13. 233, 4.**

**dywalhäu to harass. 185, 26.**

**dyfyð**, see **dyfod**.

**dyw**, see **duw**.

**dywedud to say.** § 133.

**dywygyad (di-) manner, fashion.** 164, 12.

1. **e**, see **yð**.

2. **e**, see 4. **y**.

**eb-rwyð swift, quick. 176, 11.**

**ebryn?** 228, 27.

**ech outside of, beyond? 228, 16. Cf. FB. 66, 8; 106, 30; 140, 31; MA. 208a 49.**

**Echel Achilles.**

**echenawg needy, destitute. 143, 5.**

**echwrys violent, fierce. 227, 22; Cf. FB. 159, 5; 199, 20. MA. 247, 24. 36.**

**ed**, see **yð**.

**ederyn**, see **adar**.

**edifar repentant, sorry.** 149, 17.

**edir**, see **adaw**.

**edirn (etyrn) sovereignty, supremacy. 235, 3. 236, 15.**

**edrych to look**, see. 164, 23. 220, 9.

**ed-rif descent, lineage. 212, 29. Cf. MA. 168a 51.**

**ed-ucher (= hyd ucher) till evening. 193, 1. 203, 5.**

**edyw**, see **ydyw**.

**edewis**, see **adaw**.

**ef (eff) he, it.** §§ 45; 47. **Emphatic efo (effo); conjunct. ynteu.** § 45 (b).

**efelly thus, so.** See **felly**.

**efo, effo**, see **ef**.

**Efyas n. l. a cantred in Herefordshire.** 206, 4.

**effeirad m. a priest; pl. effeiryeid.**

**eglur clear, bright, brilliant, renowned, famous. 167, 1. 169, 22.**

**eglur-der brightness, brilliance. 173, 1.**

**eglwys f. church; pl. eglwysseu.**

**egnad (O.W.), pl. egneyd**, see **ynad**.

**englyn m. a stanza of three or four lines. 200, 13.**

**englyon**, see **angel**.

**enghyrth (eghirith) terrible, painful. 238, 10. FB. 1772; MA. 351b 21.**

**ehang unrestricted, free. 173, 29.**

**ehawg m. a salmon. 197, 28.**

**ehedeg to fly. 172, 29.**

**ehofyn-der fearlessness, confidence, courage. 187, 4.**

**ehunan himself; pl. ehunein** § 60.

**ei**, see **myned**.

**eidaw his; eidunt theirs.** § 55.

**Eifft Egypt. yr E.** 172, 18.

**eigawn ocean, sea. 161, 18.**

**eingon f. an anvil. 196, 21.**

1. **eil second, next. eil hynaf eldest but one; eilweith a second time, again; bop eilwers alternately.**

2. **eil a son.** 200, 28; 205, 24, **eilenwi to fulfil, accomplish.**

152, 14. 169, 22.

**eillaw to shave, to cut (hair).**

**einym ours. 169, 14. § 55.**

**eirant they will arise. 229, 19; 20. See RC. VI, 27.**

**eirchad a suitor, suppliant. 234, 5.**

**eir-m-oed since my time. 198, 9. § 197 n.**

<sup>1</sup> For *oed dyhed kelu y ryw was hwnn* WB. 475, RB. 116 has *ys oed gryssyn kelu &c.*

eiry snow.  
 Eiryawn n. pr. m. 204, 30.  
 eiryf number. 172, 14.  
 eir-y-oed (eiroed) *ever, always*.  
 § 197 n. 140, 3.  
 eisseu *want, indigence*. 146, 2.  
 199, 19.  
 eissoes *yet, nevertheless*.  
 eissyfflad *hell*. 231, 13. v. l. issaf  
 wlad, MA. 74b 14. eissyflat, FB.  
 161<sup>34</sup>. v. l. Eissyf wlad MA. 27a<sup>56</sup>.  
 See FB. 302<sup>28</sup>.  
 eissyllud *progeny, followers*. 232, 9.  
 Cf. FB. 44, 2; 203, 24; MA. 143a 39.  
 169a, 35.  
 eisteð (eyste) *to sit*; e. wrth y gaer  
*to besiege the city*.  
 eisteð-fa f. *a seat, throne*; pl. -eu.  
 eithaf *end, extremity*; pl. -oed.  
 eithyr prep. *except*. § 172.  
 el, see myned.  
 el-chwyl *a second time, again*. 141,  
 22. 142, 22.  
 elhei, elhid, elhynt, eloch, see  
 myned.  
 Elen n. pr. f. *Helen*.  
 ell (ill, yll) *all*, see § 67.  
 ellwng *to dismiss, dispatch, let*;  
*shed (blood)*. past. subj. act. sg. 3  
 ellygei, pret. ind. sg. 3 ellygwys, etc.  
 past part. ellyngedig.  
 ellyn *a razor*. 203, 25.  
 em, see yn.  
 emelldigedig *accursed*.  
 Emrys n. pr. m. *Ambrose*.  
 Emyr n. pr. m.  
 en, ena, see yn, yna.  
 encil, encilyaw *to retreat*. 185, 1.  
 encyd *space of time*. 184, 8.  
 ene, see yny.  
 eneid (eneyt) m. *life, soul*; pl. -eu;  
 myned e. dros e. *to engage in a life-*  
*for-life struggle*.  
 enfyn, see anfon.  
 enguis (O. W.), see enwi.  
 enill *to gain, win*. 145, 18.  
 enneint *an ointment, a bath*. 143,  
 13. Cf. RB. 76, 11.  
 Enoc n. pr. m. *Enoch*.  
 ennynnu *to kindle, fire; be inflamed*.  
 enrydeð (anryded) m. *honour,*  
*dignity*. 142, 16. 144, 11. 145, 21.  
 enrydeðu (anrydedu) *to celebrate*.  
 154, 23. pres. subj. act. sg. 3  
 enrydeðocao.  
 enrydeðus *honourable, noble, vener-*  
*able, dignified*. 143, 24.

enteu (entheu, entehu) pers. pron.  
 sg. 3 m. §§ 45(c); 46(c).  
 enw (heno) m. *a name*.  
 enwi *to name*. pret. ind. act. sg. 3  
 enguis (O. W.) 218, 5.  
 eny, see yny.  
 enywed (ennuet) *damage, injury*.  
 Sew y turyw ac enwywet llosgy tey a  
 thorry aradyr BCh. 63, 8.  
 1. er, see l. yr.  
 2. er (yr) prep. *for*. §§ 53, 197.  
 3. er, see l. y.  
 er-byn *against*; yn erbyn *to meet,*  
*against, by*. § 173. yn awch e.  
*against you*. 180, 19.  
 erbynyaw *to receive; withstand*.  
 erbynyeid (erbyneid) *to receive*.  
 141, 16. 143, 25.  
 erchi (hercki) *to ask, request, bid*;  
 pres. ind. act. sg. 1 archaf.  
 eregthun, eregthunt, see rwng.  
 ereill, see arall.  
 ereint *silver*. 200, 24. 203, 19.  
 205, 5. Cf. Rhys, Celt. Heathendom,  
 p. 125.  
 erestyn m. *a juggler*. 147, 13. The  
 parallel passage in M.A. 531a 55 has:  
 ac en rith kroesan ac arwestdyn ac  
 gwareyt.  
 ereu 230, 1 = eireu MA. 73b<sup>46</sup>,  
 see geir.  
 er-gelu *to hide*. fut. ind. pass.  
 ergelawr 227, 28. ergelhawr ib. 29.  
 er-glybod *to listen to*. imper. sg. 2  
 erglyw 235, 10. 236, 22.  
 er-gryn *dread, fear*. 202, 31.  
 er-gyd m. *a stroke, blow, cast*; pl.  
 -eu.  
 er-hyl *hunt, chase*. 201, 18; 204, 8.  
 er-lid *to pursue*.  
 er-lysu *to reject, deny*. 229, 30.  
 ermid m. *a hermit*. pl. -wyr.  
 ermud? 232, 10.  
 ermy-n-wisc *a robe with border of*  
*ermine*. 161, 29.  
 eryf? 229, 4. 9.  
 eryr m. *an eagle*; pl. -od 154, 3.  
 metaph. *a leader*.  
 es, see §§ 94; 159 n. 2.  
 Esgeir Oerfel n. l. *Seiscenn Uar-*  
*beól in Ireland*. 201, 32. 203, 3.  
 esgob m. *a bishop*; pl. escyb.  
 esgobaeth f. *a bishopric*; pl. -eu.  
 esgobawd *a bishopric*.  
 esgolheig m. *a scholar, clerk*; pl.  
 -ion.  
 esgyll, see asgell.

esgyrn, see asgwrn.  
 esgyrnu *to ascend, mount, climb.*  
 esmwyth-der m. *ease, rest.*  
 estrawn *a stranger.* 225, 4.  
 estwng = gestwng *to let down.*  
 e. gantunt *incumbentes* 176, 30.  
 etifeð m. *an heir; coll. heirs.*  
 141, 1. pl. -yon 181, 26.  
 eto, see etwa.  
 etheuis, see ađaw.  
 ethol *to choose, select.*  
 ethynt, see myned.  
 etwa (eto) *yet, still.* ettwa 191, 7.  
 eu *their.* § 57. eu hun *themselves.*  
 eur m. *gold.*  
 eur-đwrn *golden-handed, liberal.*  
 pl. -đirn 235, 2. 236, 14.  
 eureid *golden, gilt, set with gold.*  
 184, 3 (*aureus*).  
 eur-gleđyf-ruð *golden-sword-red.*  
 233, 9.  
 euryr *golden.* 201, 11.  
 ewin f. *a nail, talon, claw.* 201, 9.  
 ewythy m. *an uncle (brother of one of parents, grand-parents, or great-grand-parents); pl. ewythreð*  
 206, 2.  
 eyl-weyth, see l. eil.  
 fal (mal) conj. *as.* § 216.  
 felly *thus.* yfelly 164, 30. 166, 20.  
 fi, ffi, see mi.  
 fry *above.*  
 fyhud? 231, 9.  
 fyn (nas.) *my.* §§ 57, 59.  
 ffalst *cunning.* 147, 16.  
 Ffichteid *Picts.*  
 fflam f. *a flame, fire.* 160, 4. 185, 4.  
 fflamychedig *inflamed, flaming.*  
 159, 20.  
 Fflandrys *Flanders.*  
 ffo *to flee.* ar ffo *in flight.*  
 fford f. *a road, way, passage, means;*  
 pl. fford.  
 fforest f. *a forest; pl. -i.*  
 Ffreinc f. *France.*  
 ffuruf f. *form, manner; pa ff. how?*  
 ffustaw *to strike, beat.* 175, 2.  
 ffwrn f. *a furnace.* 228, 22.  
 ffyð *faith.* 149, 31.  
 ffyð-lawr *faithful.* 181, 3.  
 ffynhawn f. *a fountain, spring.*  
 ffyrð, see fford.  
 gadael (gadaye) *to leave, allow.*  
 215, 29. See gadu.  
 gadaw *to leave.*

gadu *to leave, allow, permit.* pres.  
 ind. act. sg. 2 gedy; § sg. 3 gad  
 146, 2; pl. 2 gedwch; imper. pass.  
 gat-her.  
 gafael (gafayl) f. *a seizing, hold-*  
*ing; seizure.* 222, 15.  
 gafael-fawr *of mighty grip.*  
 Glewlwyd G., 204, 24.  
 galar *sorrow.* 229, 9.  
 galw *to call, summon, name.* pres  
 ind. pass. gelwir; imper. pl. 2  
 gelwch.  
 gallel, gallu *to be able; power,*  
*might.* pres. ind. act. sg. 2 gelly;  
 sg. 3 geill, etc.  
 gan, see can.  
 ganed, see geni.  
 garscon? 199, 12.  
 garth *a mountain ridge.* 205, 29.  
 garw *rough.*  
 gast f. *a bitch.*  
 gawr f. and m. *a shout, cry;*  
*battle.* 205, 10. 229, 23.  
 gayaf (gaeaf) m. *winter.* 156, 14.  
 gefeil *tongs, pincers.* geffeil 194, 14.  
 1. geir (geyr) m. *a word, request.*  
 pl. -eu; o un eir *with one accord.*  
 2. geir (gyr, ger) *near.* g. llaw  
*near, close by.* g. bronn *before,* § 168.  
 gelfin *a beak.* 196, 23.  
 gelyn m. *an enemy; pl. -yon.*  
 gelynwyl *hostile.*  
 gellwng *to loose, let loose, let,*  
*dismiss, deliver up, draw (a sword).*  
 pret. ind. act. pl. 3 gellygassant.  
 geneu m. *jaws, mouth.* 229, 31.  
 geni *to be born; pret. ind. pass.*  
 ganed. 227, 12.  
 genthi, genti, see can.  
 ger, see 2. geir.  
 Gereint n. pr. m. 203, 9. 211, 8.  
 Gillamor (Ir. Gilla mōr *Big Lad*)  
 n. pr. m. 192, 14.  
 Gllamwri (Ir. Gilla Muire *the serv-*  
*ant of Mary*) n. pr. m. 192, 13.  
 Gilpadrig (Ir. Gilla Pádraig *the*  
*servant of Patrick*) n. pr. m. 192, 13.  
 gilyð, see cilyð.  
 girad *lamentable, piteous, terrible.*  
 173, 3. 192, 9.  
 glan f. *a bank, shore; pl. glanneu.*  
 glanhau *to clean, polish.* 194, 16.  
 gleif m. and f. *a lance, spear.* Hg.  
 II. 91, 12 = paladyr onn CM. 87, 32.  
 gleis, see cleis.  
 glew *brave, stout; a brave man,*  
*hero.*—n. pr. m. 204, 20.

- glew-der *bravery, boldness, valour.*  
**Glew-lwyd** n. pr. m. 204, 24.  
 glin m. *a knee*; pl. -yeu.  
 gloew *bright, sparkling.* 235, 3.  
 glud *tenacious, fast, diligent.* 175, 5. MA. 285 a 1.  
 glyn (wrth) *an adhering (to), following close.* 195, 4.  
 glynn m. *a valley, glen.* 197, 12. 204, 14.  
**Glyth-myr** n. pr. m. 201, 12.  
**Glythfyr** ib.  
 glyw m. *a ruler.* 233, 3. 235, 4.  
 gnawd *customary, usual, common.*  
 gnotædig *accustomed, usual.* 142, 11. 145, 22.  
 gobeith *hope.*  
 go-bedr-or *the four-corners (of the world).* 228, 3. FB. 199, 20. 160, 19. MA. 236b 28.  
 go-ben-yð m. *a pillow*; pl. -eu.  
 go-byr m. *a fee, pay.* 221, 25.  
 go-chel *to avoid, ward off, shun, escape.* 148, 30. 150, 21. 159, 3. 169, 28.  
**Godlont** *Gothland.* 156, 11.  
 go-driccawr m. *a lingerer, sojourner.* 239, 8.  
 go-dwrð m. *a rumbling noise.* 172, 28.  
 go-ðef *to suffer, allow, permit.* 233, 8.  
 godeith m. *a heath.* 185, 5. 226, 4.  
 goðeu *purpose, design.* 239, 8.  
 yg g. gweith *Mynaw* FB. 187, 29.  
 gof m. *a smith.* 196, 21.  
 gofal m. *anxiety* 147, 6; pl. gofeilon 156, 30.  
 gofalus *anxious.* 149, 27. 160, 3.  
 gofud m. *affliction, injury.* 143, 6.  
 gofwy *to visit.* 142, 3.  
 gofyn (wrth) *to ask(of), seek.* 199, 2.  
 gofynnyad *an asking; demand.* 205, 20.  
**Gogigwr** n. pr. m. 204, 23.  
 go-gleð m. *the North.* 145, 12. 200, 32. 201, 15.  
 go-gof f. *a cave*; pl. -eu.  
 go-gyfarch *prominent, conspicuous.*  
 Read with Add. **gogyfurð** (*duodecim pares*), q. v. 162, 16; 171, 11.  
 go-gyf-urð *of equal rank, peer.* 171, 11, v.l.  
 go-hir *to delay; delay, respite.*  
 golchi *to wash, polish.* 194, 6.  
 go-leith *to dissolve.* 233, 7. FB. 58, 30.  
 goleuhâu *to light up, illumine,* 173, 1.  
 golud *wealth.* 198, 20. 233, 12.  
 go-luð *to hinder, obstruct.* 233, 12.  
 golwg f. *a look, glance.*  
 gor-alw *to cry or call aloud.* 184, 18.  
 pret. ind. act. sg. 3 **gorelwis.** 231, 24, FB. 283, 10. MA. 195 a 54.  
 gor-cheidwad m. *a guardian, custodian*; pl. **gwercheidweid** 208, 17.  
 gor-chyfygu *to overcome, conquer.* 155, 26.  
 gor-chymyn (**gorchymun**) *to command, commend, commit to; a command, injunction*; pl. -eu.  
 gorðerch-wraig f. *a concubine*; pl. -wraðeð 164, 12.  
 gorðeri m. *a shrieking, noise, disturbance.* 176, 19. 183, 22.  
 gor-ðifwng *very steady, steadfast.* 233, 1.  
 Gor-ðu n. pr. f. 207, 12.  
 gorðwy *oppression, violence.* 233, 2.  
 gor-ðyñeid *to experience, enjoy habitually.* 142, 14. FB. 28, 18; 44, 13; 88, 27; 258, 22.  
 gorelwis, see **gor-alw.**  
 gor-esgyn *to invade, overrun.*  
 1. goreu *best.*—n. pr. m. 195, 8.  
 2. goreu, see **gwneuthur.**  
 gor-fiwng *very severe, austere.* 233, 3.  
 gor-fod *to overcome, conquer.* **g. ar** 181, 4. pres. ind. sg. 3 **gor-yw** 230, 13. § 160.  
 gor-ffowys *to cease, rest.* 157, 25.  
 gor-hoffder m. *a boasting, vaunting.* 174, 34.  
 gor-hoffeð *a boasting, affectation.* 174, 13.  
 gor-llewin *the West.*  
 gormes f. *oppression, tyranny.*  
 gormod *excess*; 164, 6. yn o. too much, 176, 6.  
 gor-or m. *a border, side.* 242, 7.  
 gor-seð (**gworsseð**) f. *a seat, throne, court.* 234, 21. 240, 4.  
 gor-sefyll *to withstand, stand.*  
 pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **gorseiw** 234, 22.  
 pres. pass. **gorseur** 241, 7. Cf. MA. 160 b 2.  
 gor-uchel *very high or loud.* 150, 7. 241, 6.  
 gorug, see **gwneuthur.**  
 Gor-wen n. pr. f. 207, 12.  
 gorwyð m. *a steed, warhorse.* 242, 5.



\**gor-ysgelu* to overflow (*the bowl*).  
 pres. subj. sg. 3 *gorysgelho* 240, 2.  
 Ni ddodai eirif ar ra dillad  
 Na gwin grysgelo nac ysgarlad  
 MA. 222 b 18.  
 Cf. *gwin gorysgalawc* RB. 103, 18.  
*gorysgalauc* in large bowls E. Lh.  
*gosgorô* *retinue*. 141, 9.  
*go-sgubaw* to sweep. pres. ind.  
 act. sg. 3 *gosgupiô* 241, 21.  
*gosgymonn* (literally *fuel, food*)  
*occasion*. 174, 5. RB. 114, 4; Hg.  
 II. 34, 30; FB. 6, 8; 306, 16.  
*gossod* to put, establish, set, attack,  
 thrust. g. ar to attack; g. drwy  
 arrange. past part. -edig 148, 16.  
*gosteg* f. *silence, the proclaiming*  
*of silence in court*. 211, 3. 8. 234, 20.  
*gostegu* to proclaim *silence*. 234, 19.  
*gostegwr* m. a *silencer*. 234, 19.  
*grað* f. a *step*; pl. -eu. 166, 27.  
*grawn* m. *grain* (coll.) 225, 1.  
*Greid* n. pr. m. 198, 18.  
*Greidawl* n. pr. m. 199, 10.  
*grið-fan* to groan, a *groaning*.  
*Groeg* f. *Greece*.  
*Gruffud* n. pr. m. 162, 4. 235, 17.  
*Grugyn* n. pr. m. 203, 19.  
*grwm-seid* having a *dark-coloured*  
*haft*. 194, 15; MA. 954a 2. Cf.  
*gwrym-dudet* FB. 83, 19; *gweilch*  
*gwrym-de* 84, 4.  
*grym* force, strength, effort. 151, 13.  
 184, 24.  
*gwad* m. a *denial*. 231, 12.  
*gwadu* to deny, refuse; pres. subj.  
 pass. *gwatter* 239, 6.  
*gwae* woe! g. a. woe to him who..  
 225, 4. 10. g. wann woe to the weak!  
 226, 2.  
*gwaed* m. *blood*. 150, 10.  
*gwaed-lyd* bloody. 184, 9.  
*gwaed* an outcry, cry of distress;  
 pl. -eu.  
*gwaeth* worse; *gwaethaf* worst.  
*gwa-hanu* to separate. past. subj.  
 pass. *gwehenid* 183, 5. pass. part.  
*gwahanedig*.  
*gwa-hawô* to invite.  
*gwal* a *lair*. 202, 1; 203, 15.  
*gwala* f. a *fill, sufficiency*. 200, 3.  
*gwalch* a *hawk*; metaph. a *leader*;  
 pl. *gweilch*.  
*gwalch-lan* a *band of heroes?*  
 233, 23. MA. 150a, 40; 161 B 20.  
*Gwalchmei* n. pr. m. 173, 31.  
*gwal-par* strong-speared. 233, 24.

*gwalstawd* m. an *interpreter*.  
 MA. 128a, 42. Cf. Rhys, Celt.  
 Heathendom, p. 489.  
*gwallaw* to serve liquor. 235, 1.  
 Anc. Laws, I. 32. § viii.  
*gwallt* the hair of the head.  
 1. *gwan* to pierce; pret. ind. act.  
 sg. 3 *gwant*, § 133 a; past. ind. pass.  
*gwanpwyd*, § 134, (f).  
 2. *gwan* (*gwann*) feeble, weak.  
*gwanar* a chief, lord. 233, 24.  
 MA. 181 a 40; 203 b 19; 220 a 34;  
 221 a 45; b 37.  
*gwanas* a clasp, buckle. 239, 18.  
 FB. 250, 21. 18, 19; 23, 16; 59, 14;  
 MA. 144 b 26; 177 a 19; 205 b 4; 269a  
 29; 299 b 46; 48.  
*gwanhau* to weaken. 178, 6.  
*gwanwyn* m. spring. 155, 27.  
*gwaradwyð* m. *disgrace, shame*,  
*reproach*. 150, 12.  
*gwaradwyðus* disgraceful. 180, 29.  
*gwarafun* to forbid, refuse. 168, 25.  
*gwarandaw* to listen, hear.  
*gwarawd*, see *gwa-red*.  
*gwar-chadw* to guard, protect;  
 g. ar to besiege. 146, 18.  
*gwarchae* to besiege; m. a *siege*.  
*gwar-der* humanity, pity. 153, 33.  
*gware* to play; m. a *game, play*;  
 pl. *gwary-eu*. Cf. *chware*.  
*gware* n. pr. m.  
*gwa-red* to succour, help, rescue;  
 help, deliverance. pret. ind. act.  
 sg. 3 *gwarawd*.  
*gwar-eð* meekness. 238, 2. RB. II.  
 123.  
*gwarth* disgrace, shame. 233, 23.  
*gwarthaf* upper part, surface.  
 ar w. on the top of 241, 20.  
*gwartheg* kine, cattle.  
*Gwarthegyð* n. pr. m. 204, 9.  
*gwary-yð* m. a juggler. 147, 13.  
 Hg. II. 10, 15.  
*gwas* m. a youth, lad, servant; pl.  
*gweis*.  
*Gwasgwin* Gascony. 160, 4.  
*gwassanaeth* service, attendance.  
*gwassanaethu* to serve.  
*gwassanaethwr* m. a servant.  
*gwa-sgaru* (tr. and intr.) to disperse,  
 scatter. past part. *gwasgaredig*.  
*gwa-sgawd* shelter, protection.  
 148, 28; 156, 2.  
*gwasgu* to press, crush.  
*gwastad* level, even, constant,  
 temperate; yn w. constantly.

**gwastadawl** *constant*. 169, 4. v.l. (sic leg.)

**gwawr** *dawn*. 173, 15. metaph. 234, 8.

**gwayw** (gwaew) m. and f. *a lance, spear*; pl. **gwewyr**. 175, 2.

**gwdam**, **gwdost**, see **gwybod**.

**gwedi** prep., conj. *after*. § 174. 210

**gweð** f. *form, fashion*. **pa (py) weð** *how?*

**gweði** f. *a prayer*. 161, 28.

**gweðiaw** *to pray*. 215, 1.

**gweðu** *to befit, to submit*. 144, 6. 148, 11. 165, 5.

**gweðus** *fitting, meet, seemly*.

**Gweðw** n. pr. m. 201, 8.

**gweðw** *deserted, desolate, lonely*. 225, 9.

**gwehenid**, see **gwahanu**.

**gweilch**, see **gwalch**.

**gwein** f. *a sheath, scabbard*.

**gweir-glawð** f. *a meadow*; pl. **-gloðyeu**.

**gweis**, see **gwas**.

1. **gweith** m. *work, task*. **yg g.** *at work*. 226, 5.

2. **gweith** f. *a turn, time*; **dyð-g.** *once*; **weithon (weithyon)** *this time, now*; pl. **-eu** *sometimes*. **-eu . . . -eu** *ereill now . . . again*. 187, 18.

**gweith-red** m. *an action, deed*; **pan del ar weithred cum ad actum accedit** 167, 21. RB, II 846.

**gweled** *to see, provide, arrange*.

**gweledigaeth** f. *a vision, dream*.

**gweli** f. *a wound*; pl. **-eu, -oeð**.

**gwely** m. *a bed*. 241, 11.

**gwell** *better*; 204, 26. **cyfarch g.** *to greet*.

**gwellân** *to improve, amend*. 214, 12.

**gwelleu** *shears, scissors*. 203, 25.

**gwellig** leg. **gwellig?** *to distribute?* 235, 2. FB. 45, 15. MA. 172b15; 181 b 39 v.l., 140 b 12.

**gwellt (gwell)** *grass*. 223, 12. Cf. Peredur, ed. K. Meyer, § 80, 16.

**gwen** *a smile*. 225, 22.

**gwen-gan** *white and fair*. 227, 26.

**Gwen-hwyfar** (Ir. Find-abair) n. pr. f. 172, 20.

**gwenith** m. *wheat*. 196, 3.

**gwenn**, see **gwynn**.

**Gwenn** f. *the name of Arthur's shield*.

**gwen-wlad** f. *a happy land*. 234, 8. = *Heaven*, MA. 173 b 24; 177 a 42; 189 b 20; 222 b 38.

**gwenwyn** m. *poison*. 202, 4.

**Gwenwynwyn** n. pr. m. 233, 24.

**gwer-**, see **gor-**

**gwerin-dawd** f. *virginity*. 238, 3. LA. 17, 4; 65, 21.

**gwern** (coll.) *alder-trees*. **G. Abwy** n. l.

**gwerns** f. *a while, space of time*. 197, 29. 194, 6. **pob eil-w.** *alternately, in succession*. **gwerns . . g.** **arall** 175, 29.

**gwernsyll** *a camp*; pl. **-eu**.

**gwerth** m. *price, reward*.

**gwerth-fawr** *valuable*. comp.

**gwerthfawrogach** 169, 1.

**gweryð** f. *a virgin*. 161, 5; pl. **-on**.

**gwestei** m. *a guest*. 193, 9.

**gwewyr**, see **gwayw**.

**gwiðon** f. *a witch*.

**gwin** m. *wine*.

**gwir** (1) *true, truly*. **g.-aberth** 150, 17. **g. gwell** *truly better*. 226, 3. (2) *justice, right*. 223, 27.

**gwirawd** *a beverage, drink*; pl.

**gwirodeu**. 164, 2. 235, 1.

**gwisg** f. *dress, clothing*; pl. **-oeð**.

**gwisgaw** *to put on, wear*; part. **gwisgedig** *dressed, clad*.

**gwlad** f. *a kingdom, country*; pl.

**-oeð, gwledi**; **g.** *present the present world*. **G. yr Haf** n. l. 202, 29.

**gwledig** m. *a ruler*.

**gwledychu** *to rule, reign*.

**gweð** f. *a feast, banquet*. 238, 1.

**Gwndy** n. l. 223, 10.

**gwnel**, see **gwnethur**.

**gwnethur** *to make, do, form*. § 142.

**gwnn**, see **gwybod**.

**gwor-saf** *support, bulwark*. 236, 9.

**gworsseð**, see **gorseð**.

**gwosparth** *support* 233, 23. Cf. **gosparth Brython** MA. 124 b 38.

**gwr** m. *a man, husband, vassal*; **y gwr** *he who* 239, 10; (applied to God) 203, 17. pl. **gwyr** *men, soldiers* 179, 11.

**gwrach** f. *a hag, witch*.

**gwraged**, see **gwreig**.

**gwrawl** *manly, brave, stout*; pl. **gwrolygon**. 139, 3.

**Gwrbothu** n. pr. m. 206, 3.

**gwr-da** m. *a noble*. pl. **gwyrdä**; **gwyrdä** *seint holy men*; MA. 142a.

**gwrð** *strong, vehement*. 233, 1. 235, 13; **g.-fleid** *a fierce wolf* 233, 3.

**gwreig** f. *a woman, wife*; pl. **gwraged**.

**gwreigawl** *womanish, cowardly*;  
pl. **gwreigolygon.** 186, 17.

**Gwr-gi** (Ir. Fer-chū) n. pr. m.

**Gwr-gwst** (Ir. Fer-gus) n. pr. m.

**gwrhâu** to pay homage.

**gwr-hyd** *manliness, valour, bravery, strength.*

**Gwrhyr** n. pr. m.

**gwrteith** to dress, mend, temper;  
a dressing; 195, 10. Cf. Hg. 38, 37.

pl. **-yeu.**

**gwrth** (wrth) voc. (1) prep. *against, towards, for, for the purpose of*; **wrth hynny** because of that, therefore;  
**y-wrth** from, of; in comparison with.  
§§ 53, 194. (2) conj. because. § 231.

**gwrth-dir** borderland. 207, 12.

**gwrth-eb** to answer, reply.

**gwrth-gasseð** rebellion, dissension.  
174, 4. Hg. 276, 2. LA. 15, 26;  
CM. 110, 28.

**gwrth-od** to give back, reject,  
renounce 165, 7. pres. ind. act. sg. 3  
**gwrthyd** 154, 14.

**gwr-thrwm** very heavy. 149, 28.  
172, 26.

**gwrthryn** resistance, opposition.  
233, 23.

**gwrth-wyneb** opposite, adverse;  
**yg g. y mynyð** facing the mountain;  
**talun yn y g.** to pay in return.  
142, 23.

**gwrth-wynebu** (y) to oppose, resist.

**gwrthyd**, see **gwrth-od**.

**gwrych** (coll.) bristles. **G. Ereint**  
n. pr. m. 203, 19.

**gwrys** strife, hostility. 197, 31.  
FB. 63, 25; 85, 12; 159, 5; 193, 6;  
199, 20; 200, 9.

**gwrysg** (coll.) the smaller branches  
of a tree. 225, 11.

**Gwy the Wye.** **Aber G.** 206, 17.

**Gwyar** n. pr. m. 173, 31.

**gwybod** to know, recognize; know-  
ledge, courtesy. § 143.

**gwybyðiad** m. an eye-witness;  
pl. **gwybyðeid.**

**gwychy** stout, resolute, bold;  
superb. **gwychraf.** 183, 13; 191, 4;  
192, 10.

**Gwydre** n. pr. m. 204, 19.

1. **gwyð** m. (coll.) wood, trees  
241, 13. 21. mast of a ship 242, 8.

2. **gwyð** presence; **yny vyð, hyny vyð** lo! behold! thereupon; 193, 1;  
198, 13. 199, 27. **yn eu g.** at once  
202, 24.

**gwyðad, gwyðyad**, see **gwybod.**

**gwyð-bwyll** some game like chess;  
164, 24; 167, 3. See RB. 153, 5.

**Gwyðel** an Irishman; pl. **Gwyðyl.**

**gwyl-fa** f. festival, watch, ward;  
pl. **-eu.**

**gwyliad** m. a guardian.

**gwyllt** wild; aeth **yg g.** he became  
mad. RB. 100, 6, 8. **Cyledyr W.**

**gwyneb** (wyneb) face. 209, 23.  
216, 27.

**Gwyned** Venedotia, North Wales.  
161, 22.

**gwynn** m., **gwenn** f. white, blessed;  
pl. **-ion.** **gwyn y fyd** happy he!

170, 18. **Gwynn** n. pr. m. 200, 25.  
**Avon Wenn** 173, 23.

**gwyn-seid** having a white haft.  
194, 15. Cf. Laws I. 586, 726.  
II. 866, cvii.

**gwynnyeith** pain, torture. 231, 32.  
FB. 185, 5. FB. 303, 3; MA. 193 a 13.

**gwynt** m. wind, favourable wind.  
**gwyr**, see **gwybod.**

**Gwyr** n. l. Gower. 205, 24.

**gwyrd** green, fresh, vigorous.  
236, 25.

**gwyrd-hân** to incline, bend. 241, 13.  
FB. 241, 8.

1. **gwys** f. a summons, command.

2. **gwys**, see **gwybod.**

3. **gwys** a sow. 205, 17.

**gwyssyaw** to summon. 198, 24.

**gwystylm** a hostage; pl. **gwyystlon.**  
**gwyystyn** m. a withered stump.  
197, 4.

**Gwythyr** n. pr. m. Victor.  
**gynn**, see **cyn.**

**gynt**, see **cynt.**

**gyr**, see 2. **geir.**

**gyrru** to send, despatch, drive,  
hasten 199, 6; **ry-yrro** (reherru) 213, 4.

**gyt**, see **cyt.**

1. **ha**, see 2. **ac.**

2. **ha** interj. § 243.

**hac**, see 2. **ac.**

**haedu** to deserve, claim, merit.

**hael** generous, liberal; pl. **-on.**

**haelder** m. generosity. 145, 17.

**hael-foned** one of noble descent.  
234, 21.

**haf** summer. **Gwlad yr H.** 202, 29.

**haf-ðyð** a summer's day. 242, 6.

**hafod** a summer dwelling. 225, 9.

Cf. RB. II. 277, 5.

**Hafren** f. the Severn.

**hagen** however, yet, indeed.

**han-bwyllaw** to consider, remember 190, 27. RB. 120; 17315.

**handit**, see **hanfod**.

**han-δenu** to have leisure, linger. 190, 27 v. l.

**han-fod** to arise, issue; proceed from, descend. § 160.

**hanner** (hanher) m. a half, middle. 140, 20. 179, 20. **h.dyδ** midday; **h. nos** midnight; **h. gwr** a coward 170, 24: 180, 32.

**harδ** fair, beautiful, comely.

**hawdit**, see **haf-δyδ**.

**hawδ** easy, pleasant; compar. **haws**.

1. **hawf** f. a claim.

2. **hawf**, see **holy**.

**hawlwyr** m. a claimant.

**haws**, see **hawδ**.

**hayach** wellnigh, almost. 167, 6. 192, 15.

**hayachen** almost. 207, 23.

**hayarn** iron, sword. 160, 4.

1. **heb**, **hebyr** says. § 151.

2. **heb** (voc.) prep. without, besides. §§ 16 (i); 53; 175.

**hebrwng** to conduct, escort.

**hebyr**, see 1. **heb**.

**heδiwr** to-day.

**heδwch** peace.

**heδychu** to make peace, pacify.

**hefyd** also, in addition.

**hegarwch** m. kindness. 226, 3.

**heibaw** adv. past, by. 156, 14. 204, 3.

**heint** m. a sickness, disease. 149, 28.

**hela** to hunt, chase.

**helw** possession; **ar y h.** in his possession. 152, 11; 204, 25.

**helym** f. a helmet. 159, 22.

**hen** old; an old man. superl. **hynaf**.

**hen-dad** m. an ancestor; pl. -eu.

**heneint** (henein) old age. 139, 9.

1. **heno**, see **enw**.

2. **heno** to-night.

**henw**, see **enw**.

**herw** a plundering, pillaging. 235, 15. Cp. **Gwynfyd herwr ywr hirnos** MA. 361 a17.

**herwyδ** according to, by; **yn h.** according to; **yn h. y nerth** with all his might. **h. fal** 165, 2.

**hestawr**, a corn measure of about two bushels. 199, 17.

**heul** f. and m. the sun.

**heussawr** m. a herdsman. 195, 3. FB. 174, 1.

**hi she, her.** Emphatic **hihi**, conjunct. **hithen**. § 45.

**hin** weather. 209, 22.

**hir long, tall; drwy h. o amser** for a long time 141, 5. Compar. **hwyr**.

**Hir** n. pr. m. 206, 1.

**hir-flawδ** a long tumult. 235, 15.

**Hir-las** n. pr. m. 178, 16. 184, 10.

**hithen**, see **hi**.

**hob**: **dan eu hwrb ac eu h.** pushing and kicking them. 207, 22.

**hoedel** lifetime, life. 152, 18.

**hoff-der** m. a boasting. 174, 34. LA. 143, 22.

**holy** (holi) to claim, ask, search, demand; imper. sg. 2 **hawf**.

**holl**, see **oill**.

**hollawl** whole, entire; **yn h.** completely, altogether.

**hollti** to split, cleave.

**honni** to proclaim. 159, 25.

**honno**, see **hwnnw**.

**Howel** (Hywel) n. pr. m.

**Humyr** the Humber. 145, 11.

**Huandaw** n. pr. m. 204, 23.

1. **hun** sleep. 172, 26.

2. **hun**, pl. **hunein** self. § 60.

**hwrb**, see **hob**.

**hwch** m. and f. a pig. 203, 11.

**hwynn** m., **honn** f., **hynn** n. this.

pl. **hynn**. §§ 61; 62.

**hwnt** yonder; **h. ac yman** (yma) here and there. 185, 25.

**hwnnw** m., **honno** f., **hynny** n. that. pl. **hynny**. §§ 61, 62.

1. **hwyr** (wy), **hwynt** they, them. Emphatic (h)wyntwy, conjunct. (h)wynteu. § 45.

2. **hwyr**, see **hir**.

**hwyl** f. a sail; pl. -eu.

**hwylaw** to sail. 157, 28.

**hwynt**, see 1. **hwyr**.

**hwyred** slowness, tardiness. 151, 19. **hy bold**. 239, 19.

1. **hyd** f. length; prep. as far as, up to, § 177; conj. as long as, as far as, § 214; **h. na** so that not § 214; until almost 154, 13; **h. pan** until, so that § 225; **h. trawhile**. § 230. **ba h.** whither?

**hy-dwf** well-grown, tall. 158, 18.

**hyδ** a stag; pl. -od. 241, 12.

**Hy-gwyδ** n. pr. m. 202, 19.

**hynaf**, see **hen**.

**hynafiδ** m. an elder. 210, 3.

**hynn**, see **hwnnw**.

**hynny**, see **hwnnw**.

hynt f. *a course, path, journey.*  
 ar h. *immediately.* 174, 16. 175, 6.  
 hyny vyð, see 2. gwyð.

1. i (voc.) prep., see 1. y.  
 2. i, see mi.  
 3. i, see yð.  
 iach *sound, whole.* 200, 16.  
 iachau *to heal.*  
 iad *the upper part of the head.*  
 230, 32.  
 iaen *ice, a sheet of ice.* 241, 12.  
 iarll (jarll) m. *an earl*; pl. ieirll.  
 iawn (yaun, jaun) (1) *right, just*;  
 ymlað yn i. *to fight in reality.* superl.  
 -haf, -af 198, 30. 31. (2) *a recompense,*  
*satisfaction.* 166, 15. 18.  
 iawnder m. *right.*  
 iðaw, iði, see 1. y.  
 Iðew *a Jew*; pl. -on.  
 iechid *health, salvation.* 158, 21.  
 ieith f. *language*; pl. -oed, -eu.  
 Iessu *Jesus.*  
 ieuanc *young*; superl. jeuaf.  
 ieuenctid *early manhood*; *youth.*  
 Ieuan n. pr. m. *John.* 231, 26.  
 in, see yn. ima, ina, see yma, yna.  
 inheu, inneu, see mi.  
 ir-lloned m. and f. *wrath.* 159, 20.  
 is *below, beneath.* §§ 53, 178.  
 Iscawyn n. pr. m. 204, 20.  
 Islont *Iceland.*  
 issod *below.* 199, 5.  
 Iwerðon f. *Ireland.* 155, 28.

llad (Ir. laith) *liquor, drink.* Sic  
 leg. 230, 31? Cf. FB. 204, 22; 23.  
 lladrad *robbery.* 222, 17.  
 llað *to strike, slay, cut, cut off, kill.*  
 impf. ind. pl. 3 lleðynt; impf. pass.  
 lleið; pret. pass. llas. p. part.  
 llaðedig. § 134(a).  
 Llaesgenym n. pr. m. 204, 25.  
 llaessäu *to relax, abate, moderate.*  
 llafur m. *labour, exertion, toil,*  
*effort.*  
 llafuryaw *to labour, endeavour,*  
*attempt.* 140, 13. 159, 15. 166, 21.  
 180, 32. 186, 9.  
 llafuryus (llafurus) *laborious.*  
 191, 27.  
 llafyn *a blade*; pl. llafneu, llafnawr.  
 y llall *the other*; pl. y lleill. § 70.  
 Llamrei *the name of Arthur's*  
*mare.* 201, 20.  
 llann *an enclosure, land.* 223, 5;  
 Ll. daf n. l. *Llandaff.*

llanw (1) *to fill.* 175, 7. (2) *tide.*  
 198, 7. 209, 4. 216, 11.  
 llary *generous, gracious, gentle.* 233,  
 31. MA. 249b 48; 247a 48; 241b 42.  
 llas, see llað.  
 llathru *to glitter, glisten.*  
 llaw f. *a hand*; pl. dwy-law.  
 cymhell y l. *to force to surrender*;  
 152, 23; rag ll. *at hand, imminent.*  
 llawch *protection.* 233, 6. MA.  
 192b 8; 247b 6.  
 llawen *glad, gay, merry.* ll. yw  
 genyf gaudeo 170, 13.  
 llawer *many, much.*  
 llawhethan 227, 28 = llywethan<sup>1</sup>  
 MA. 73a 18 v.l. *one of the constella-*  
*tions.* Cf. Barddas I., 404.  
 llaw-hir *long-handed.*  
 llawn *full.*  
 llawr m. *the ground*; *the earth*;  
 239, 19. 234, 10. 239, 9. yr ll. *to the*  
*ground*; y lawr *down.*  
 lle m. *place*; pl. -oed. *where* 225, 13.  
 yn lle *instead of, for* 180, 2; yn y lle  
*immediately*; yssid le iðaw gwynaw  
*he has reason to lament*; pa le *where?*  
 with subjunctive clause, *where.*  
 225, 13.  
 llechu *to lurk, hide.* 177, 22.  
 lled m. *breadth.* 154, 7.  
 Lledewig, see Llywedig.  
 lled-lwm *half-bare, half-naked.*  
 Gwrgwst Ll. n. pr. m. 200, 28.  
 llefaru *to speak.* 229, 31.  
 llef m. *voice, sound.*  
 llefein *to shout, cry*; m. *a shout-*  
*ing.*  
 lleferyð *to say*; *speech, utterance.*  
 139, 22. 202, 16. 220, 4.  
 lleng *a legion.*  
 Llengrys n. l. *Lengriae.* 179, 6.  
 llei *less, inferior.* 162, 1.  
 lleidyrr m. *a thief*; pl. lladron.  
 1. lleill, see llall.  
 2. lleill; y ll. *one of two.* 194, 17. § 71.  
 lleis *voice.* 153, 4.  
 lleissawn *generous, liberal.* 235, 11.  
 MA. 154b 11; 159b 8.  
 lleith *death.* 232, 2. 233, 7.  
 llemenig *striding, bounding.*  
 Cadwr Ll. n. pr. m. 161, 23.  
 llenwi *to fill.* 206, 22.  
 Lles n. pr. m. *Lucius.* 157, 31.  
 llesg *feeble, faint.* 191, 20.  
 llesgeð f. *feebleness, sloth, coward-*  
*dice.* 166, 30; 167, 5. 9. 180, 23.  
 letty m. *a lodging*; pl. -eu. 195, 9.

<sup>1</sup> A popular etymology for Leviathan.

lletty-wr m. *a host*. 195, 9.  
 Lleu n. pr. m.  
 lleufer f. and m. *light*; pl. -eu.  
 llew m. *a lion*. 186, 30. 235, 11.  
 llewenyð *joy*.  
 llewychu *to shine*. llewychi 232, 7,  
 leg. llewychei? MA. 243<sup>b</sup> 9.  
 lleyg m. *a lay-man*; pl. -yon.  
 lliaws m. *a multitude, host*.  
 llicrið, see llygru.  
 llid m. *anger, indignation*.  
 lliðyaw *to become angry*.  
 llin, see l. llynn.  
 llinad (llin-had) coll. m. *linseed*,  
 sg. llin-hedyn. 199, 18. 20.  
 lithraw *to slip, glide along, pass*  
*by*. ll. at *to flock to*. 145, 23.  
 lithrei 203, 20 leg. llathrei *glistered*;  
 cf. RB. 2, 2.  
 1. lliw (llyw) m. *colour, hue*. 164, 13.  
 241, 16. 2. lliw, see l. llyw.  
 llof-ruð (lit. *red-handed*) *a slayer*  
*of men*. 233, 10.  
 llong f. *ship*; pl. -eu.  
 lloneid *fill, the full of anything*.  
 llosg *arson*. 223, 1.  
 llosgi *to burn, set on fire*.  
 llu m. *a host, army*; pl. -oed.  
 lluched *lightning*. 227, 25. pl.  
 lluched. 185, 27.  
 Lluð n. pr. m. 198, 18. See Rhÿs,  
 Celt. Heath. p. 125.  
 lluded *fatigue*. 207, 9.  
 lludyas *to hinder*. 208, 21.  
 lluest *a camp*; pl. -eu.  
 Llundein *London*.  
 llunyaethu *to arrange, dispose,*  
*array*. 146, 5. 165, 19. 182, 14.  
 llunyeithaw *to arrange, put in*  
*order*. 178, 2.  
 lluosog-rwyð *a multitude*. 141, 28.  
 llurug f. *a coat of mail*. 150, 25.  
 llu-yð m. *a hosting, military ex-*  
*pedition*. 222, 14; 223, 32.  
 llw m. *an oath*. 221, 4.  
 llwch *a lake*. 229, 5. 241, 8. Ll.  
 Tawy 205, 25.  
 llwdyn m. *the young of animals*;  
 pl. llydyn. 203, 4.  
 llwyfyr m. *a coward*. 242, 9.  
 llwgyr *harm, damage, disad-*  
*vantage*. 218, 25.  
 llwm *bare, poor*. 226, 4. 241, 1.  
 242, 8.  
 llwrw (Ir. *lorg track*): yn ll. *as*  
*regards?* 198, 17. *loco, vice*, Davies.  
 llwyd grey.

Llwyðawg n. pr. m. 205, 6.  
 Llwyðeu n. pr. m. 202, 25.  
 llwyn (lluhyn) m. *a wood, grove,*  
*bush*; pl. -eu.  
 llwyr *complete*; yn ll. *wholly, com-*  
*pletely*.  
 llwyth m. *a tribe, people*. 227, 27.  
 Llychlyn *Norway*. 157, 9:  
 Llychlyn-wr m. *a Norseman*.  
 157, 11.  
 Llychwyr n. l. *Loughor*. 205, 5.  
 llydan *broad, extensive*.  
 Llydaw *Armorica, Brittany*.  
 Llydewig *Armorican, Breton*.  
 Glythmyr Ll. 201, 12.  
 llydw *a host, household, com-*  
*munity*; 223, 10; 13. See MA. 308 b 28,  
 249 a 14, 343 a 51.  
 llyfyr m. *a book*.  
 llyfyr-der m. *cowardice*. 233, 7.  
 llygad m. *an eye*. taraw l. *in the*  
*twinkling of an eye, immediately*.  
 Llygad-ruð n. pr. m. *Red-eye*.  
 206, 2.  
 llygru *to corrupt, mar, spoil,*  
*violate*. 167, 4. 189, 3. 195, 13; *to*  
*become foul* 241, 3.  
 llyngcu *to swallow*.  
 llynghes f. *a fleet*. 145, 9.  
 llym *keen, sharp*. 241, 1.  
 llyma *to here!* 169, 17 (en). § 244.  
 llyna *to there!* 169, 16 (en). § 244.  
 1. llynn (llin) f. *a lake, pool*; pl.  
 llynneu. Ll. Lliwan 206, 17 = Linn  
 Llan, Nennius ed. Mommsen,  
 p. 214.  
 2. llynn *a drink*. 193, 15.  
 llynnwyn m. *a pool*. 225, 1. Leg.  
 Wall. 480 b 4.  
 Llyr n. pr. m. 139, 1. 206, 19.  
 llys f. *a court, palace*; pl. llyssoeð.  
 llyssu *to reject*. 218, 7.  
 llythyr m. *an epistle, letter*; pl. -eu.  
 1. llyw (lliw) m. *a leader*. 235, 11.  
 236, 23.  
 2. llyw, see l. lliw.  
 Llywelyn n. pr. m.  
 llywodraeth f. *management*.  
 llywodyr m. *a leader, commander*;  
 pl. llywodron.  
 llywyaw (llywaw) *to rule, direct*.

ma, see mae.

mab m. *a son*; pl. meib, meibon.

Mabon n. pr. m. 195, 24. See  
 Rhÿs, Celt. Heath., p. 21.

**mach** m. *a surety, guarantor*; pl. **meicheu, meychyeu.** 210, 20; 21; 217, 14; 221, 25.

**Madawg** n. pr. m. 204, 29.

**maëu** to *forgive; forgiveness.* 231, 4

**maëueint** *forgiveness, remission.* 150, 20.

**mae (may)** is; pl. **maent.** *what is?* 219, 7. §§ 152. 154 (a).

**maëdu** to *beat, strike, pound.* 159, 24. 183, 23.

**maen** m. *stone*; pl. **mein**; m. **freuan** *quern-stone.* m. **-dy** m. *a stone house.* 198, 15.

**maer (mair)** m. *a steward, reeve*; pl. **meirri.** 202, 7. 219, 9.

**maerony** f. *stewardship.* 221, 18.

**maes (mays)** m. *an open field, open court, battlefield*; **roði cad ar f.** to *give battle*; **cawssant y m.** *they won the day.*

**maestawd** *majesty*; **maes** m. *field of judgment* 229, 13. MA. 165 a 22; 171 b 51; 195 a 9.

**magu** to *rear, bring up, to produce, engender, conceive.* pres. ind. sg. 3 **meccið** 242, 9. FB. 244, 21. MA. 363 a 21; 33.

**magwyr** f. *a wall.* 198, 12.

**mal (fal)** conj. *as; when.* § 216.

**malpei (malphei)** *as if.* y m. 195, 11.

**mam** f. *mother.*

**man** *fine, small, insignificant.* 184, 18; 196, 10.

**manach** m. *a monk*; pl. **meneich.**

**manachlawg** f. *a monastery, convent*; 188, 22. m. **gwraðeð** 190, 15. pl. **-logoeð** 165, 4.

**Manawyðan** n. pr. m. 206, 19.

**march** m. *a horse*; coll. *horsemen.* 202, 30. pl. **meirch, meirych.** 143, 15. 162, 20. **ar feirych** *on horseback* 174, 18.

**marchawg** m. *a knight*; pl. **marchogyon.**

**marchogaeth** *horsemanship, riding.*

1. **marw** *dead*; pl. **meirw.**

2. **marw** to *die.* 145, 1. 149, 9.

**marwawr** (pl.) *cinders.* 228, 6.

**marwolyaeth (marwolaeth)** f. *death.* 145, 7.

**mawl**, see **moli.**

**mawr** *great, big*; compar. **mwyr**; super. **mwryhaf, mwryaf.**

**mawr-fuð** *great gain or advantage*; 233, 11.

**Maxen** n. pr. m. *Maximus.*

**meccið**, see **magu.**

**með** *mead.*

**með-gell** f. *a mead-cellar, cellar.* 164, 2. 204, 27

**með-gorn** m. *a mead-horn*; pl. **-girn** 235, 1.

**með-gwyn** *a mead-banquet.* 235, 1. 236, 13.

**meðu** to *possess.* 181, 5.

**meðwl** m. *thought, purpose, mind.*

**meðyant** m. *possession, power, authority.*

**meðylyaw** to *think, consider, meditate.*

**mefyl** f. and m. *disgrace, shame, insult.* 225, 10.

**meglyd (yn)** to *grip, grasp, cling to.* 176, 14; 202, 20. FB. 51, 12; 141, 29; 183, 24; 247, 7.

**megys** conj. *as, like, as it were.* § 217: m. **na** *as if not*; with subj. so that 145, 23. 180, 3.

**mehyn** *place, country?* 229, 2. FB. 123, 28; 133, 25; 169, 1; 190, 29; 202, 8; 210, 10.

**Mei May.** 208, 5.

**meicheu**, see **mach.**

**mein**, see **maen.**

**meint** f. *size, number, quantity, length; such.* **pa** f. *how much.*

**Meir Mary (the Virgin).**

**meirw**, see **marw.**

**melyn** *yellow.*

**melys** *sweet.* 170, 18.

**Mellt** n. pr. m. 201, 11.

**menegi** to *make known, declare.*

**meneich**, see **manach.**

**Menw** n. pr. m. 201, 28.

**merch** f. *a daughter*; pl. **-ed.**

**Merchyr: dyw** M. *on Wednesday.* 240, 10.

**meredig** *irrational, foolish.* 193, 5. RB. 115, 18. Laws I., 260.

**merthyr** m. *a martyr.* 161, 4.

**messur** m. *a measure, impression.* 202, 26.

**messuredig** *measured, according to measure.* 199, 19.

**meu mine**; § 55.

**Meugant** n. pr. m.

**Meuruc** n. pr. m. *Mauricius.*

**meycheu**, see **mach.**

**mi (fi, fy, i)** *I, me.* Emphatic **mifi**, conjunctive **minheu, inneu.** § 45.

1. **mil** f. *a thousand*; pl. **-yoeð.**

2. **mil** m. *an animal*; coll. 204, 5. pl. **-eid.**

mil-wr m. *a warrior*.  
 milwryaeth f. *prowess, warfare*.  
 164, 15; 175, 25; 177, 8; 185, 30.  
 mill-dir f. *a mile*.  
 minheu, minneu, see mi.  
 mis m. *a month*.  
 moch (coll.) *swine*.  
 mod m. *manner*. 191, 30.  
 modrwy f. *a ring*; pl. -eu.  
 moes *custom*. 193, 7. RB. II. 300, 1.  
 molawd *praise*. 237, 4.  
 moli *to praise, commend*. pres.  
 ind. sg. 3 mawl. 233, 11.  
 molyant *praise, fame*. 146, 2. 4  
 (*probitas*); 156, 21; 181, 19; 185, 17.  
 1. mor (voc.) with adjectives, *how*,  
*so, as*.  
 2. mor m. *sea*; pl. -oeð.  
 morðwyd m. *a thigh*. 205, 23.  
 Morgannwg *Glamorgan*.  
 mor-gerwyn f. *a maelstrom, whirl-*  
*pool*. 154, 13.  
 mor-gymlawð *the raging of the sea*.  
 235, 13. MA. 173a<sup>31</sup>; 193b<sup>7</sup>; 254a<sup>44</sup>;  
 266a<sup>29</sup>.  
 mor-grug (lit. *anthill*), *ants*; sg.  
 -yn m. 199, 20.  
 Moruð n. pr. m.  
 morwyn f. *a maiden*; pl. morynyon.  
 mud *dumb, mute*.  
 mul m. *a mule*; pl. -yoeð.  
 muner m. *a lord, king*.  
 mur m. *a wall, rampart*; pl. -oeð.  
 y Mureif *Murray*. 152, 28.  
 murmur *a growling*. 172, 27.  
 mwg m. *smoke*. 199, 23.  
 mwy, mwylhaf, see mawr.  
 mwyalch f. *a blackbird*. 196, 17. 20.  
 mwylhau *to increase, augment*.  
 mwylhau (muenhau) *to use, employ*,  
*enjoy, profit*. 199, 33; 216, 4; 217, 26;  
 218, 1.  
 Myg-ðwnn *smoke-dun*, or for  
 Myng-ðwn *dusky-maned, the name*  
*of a horse*. 201, 8. Gwynn m. 206, 15.  
 myhun *I myself*. § 57.  
 myn (in oaths) *by*. 203, 1. 206, 7.  
 mynaches m. *a nun*; pl. mynach-  
 essen.  
 myned *to go*; m. dros *to break*  
*through, penetrate*; § 140.  
 mynnu (mennu) *to desire, wish*,  
*seek, endeavour*.  
 mynwent f. *a graveyard*, 188, 17.  
 L.A. 84, 8.  
 mynwgyl *neck*. 176, 14.  
 mynych *frequent*.

mynyched m. *frequency*. y m.  
 hwnnw *so often*. 191, 1. v. l.  
 mynyð m. *a mountain*; pl. -eð.  
 y fynyd *upward, up*.  
 Mynyw *Menevia, St. David's*,  
 mysg *midst*.  
 y mywn (mewn) *within, in*; o f.  
*inside, within*. § 181.  
 1. na (spir.), before vowels nad *not*.  
 § 236.  
 2. na (voc.), before vowels nag *not*.  
 § 237.  
 3. na (spir.), before vowels nac *nor*.  
 § 238. na . . na *either . . or* 168, 2.  
 naccäu *to refuse*.  
 nachaf lo, *behold!* 187, 21. (voc.)  
 153, 16. 189, 3. 193, 2.  
 1. nad (nat), see 1. na.  
 2. nad *is not* (dependent). § 155 (ε).  
 Nadolig *Christmas*. 154, 23.  
 Naf m. *the Lord*. 235, 16. 236, 28.  
 1. nag *a refusal*. 202, 10. 16.  
 2. nag, see 2. 3. na.  
 nam, see 1. 3. na.  
 namyn, namwyn conj. *except*;  
 after a negative, *but*. § 219.  
 nant *a valley*; pl. nanheu 229, 32.  
 1. nar = na + def. art.  
 2. nar = ra + ry. 184, 1. § 95 N.  
 naw (nas.) *nine*.  
 nawð m. *protection, sanctuary*.  
 nawfed *ninth*. 208, 5.  
 neb *any; any one, someone*. y  
 neb *a who*. § 64.  
 nef m. *heaven*; pl. -oeð.  
 neges f. *a business, affair, quest*.  
 nei m. *a nephew*; pl. nyeint.  
 neill *one (of two)*; ar neill-du *on*  
*one side*. § 69; 71  
 neill-du-edig *apart, aside*.  
 neirthyad m. *a strengthener, stay*.  
 227, 2; FB. 241, 21; MA. 193b, 1.  
 neithawr *a wedding feast*; pl.  
 neithoreu, -yeu 189, 9.  
 ner m. *a lord*. 233, 5.  
 nerth m. and f. *support, help*,  
*strength, power*; pl. -oeð.  
 nerth-fawr *mighty*. 233, 5.  
 1. nes prep. *until*. § 182.  
 2. nes, nessaf, see agos.  
 nessäu *to draw near*. 147, 16.  
 nessed *nearness*. yr n. *however*  
*near*. 154, 20.  
 Nethawg n. pr. m.  
 1. neu (voc.) *or, nor*. § 220.  
 2. neu *now*, before vowels neud;  
 with ry, neur. § 221.



**newidyaw** to exchange (blows). 186, 8; 191, 24. *tra newitywn an deheuoed quando dextras conferemus.* 170, 19.

**newyð** *new.* **o n.** *anew, again, recently.* 178, 28. 179, 4. 195, 15 v. l. **newyn** *m. hunger.* 149, 5; 186, 30. **ni (ny)** *we, us.* Emphatic **nini**, conjunct. **ninheu, ninneu.** §§ 45 (a). **nifer** *m. a number, host, retinue;* pl. **-oed.**

**no** (spir.), **nog**, with def. art. **nor**, conj. *than.* § 222.

**nodi** to mark, notify, specify. 199, 18. **pluperf.** pass. sg. **3 ry nodyðoed.** 205, 10.

**noði** to protect, preserve; *pres.* subj. sg. **3 notho (nodho)** 193, 8.

**noe**, see **no**.

**noeth** naked, bare, unprotected, unarmed; pl. **-on.**

**noethi** to bare, to unsheathe.

**Normanyeid** Normans.

**nos** *f. night.*

**nottau** to mark, specify. 201, 24.

**Nuð** *n. pr. m.* 200, 25.

**Nwython** *n. pr. m.*

1. **ny** (spir.) before vowels **nyd**, *not.* § 235.

2. **ny**, see **ni**.

1. **nyd**, see 1. **ny**.

2. **nyd** is *not.* § 155 (ð).

**nyeint**, see **nei**.

**Nyfer** the river *Nevers.* 204, 12.

**nym, nys**, see 1. **ny**.

1. **nyth** *m. a nest;* pl. **-od.** 154, 3.

2. **nyth**, see 1. **ny**.

**nyw**, see § 49 (c). 233, 2. 8. 12.

1. **o** (a) (voc.) prep. *of, from, with, for;* with passive verb, *by.* **o gyfreith** according to law 211, 17. § 183. with def. art. **or** (ar).

2. **o** (spir.), before vowels **od, or, os** conj. *if;* neg. **ony, onyd**; with the pres. of copula **os, neg. onyd.** § 224.

**obry** below.

1. **oc** prep. = 1. **o** before pronouns beginning with a vowel. § 183.

2. **oc**? 230, 16.

**och** *ah! alas!* **o. fi** *ah me!* 142, 21.

**odi** to snow. 241 *passim.*

**odid** scarcely, hardly, rarely. 226, 6. 232, 11; 13.

**odolygyssant**, see **adolwyn.**

**odieithyr** outside 158, 26; 164, 19;

**o. hynny** besides. 161, 34, 162, 21.

**oðyma** hence.

**oðyna** thence, from that time.

**oðyno** from there.

**oðy-rwng** from between. 196, 19.

**oðy-uchtaw** above it.

**oe**, see 1. **o.** **oed, oedynt**, see **bod.**

**oed (oyd)** *m. age;* appointed time, respite, delay. 208, 20.

**oer** cold; dire, cruel, deadly.

**o.-grynedig** fearfully trembling. 152, 16.

1. **oes** *f. life, lifetime, age, generation;* pl. **oessoed.**

2. **oes (oys)** there is. §§ 152, 154 β.

**oestru**? 230, 33.

**ofn-awg** timorous. 184, 21.

**ofyn** *m. fear.* 148, 22. 187, 31.

**ofynhau** to fear. 142, 4. 167, 26.

**offeren** mass; pl. **-eu.** 162, 29.

**ohan-, ohon-**, see §§ 53, 183.

**oia** interjection. § 243.

**ol** track; **yn ol** after, behind. **a oed yn ol** or **dyð** what remained of the day.

**olyf-wyð (oliwyð)** *m. coll. olive-wood.* 165, 21.

**oll, holl, all.** § 67.

**onaðunt** of them. § 53.

**oni, onyt**, see **ny**.

**or**, see 1. 2. **o.**

**Orc, Orch** the Orkneys. 156, 12. 162, 11.

**organ** *f. a musical instrument, organ.* 163, 6. 15.

**orig** (dimin. of **awr**) a short hour. 230, 13.

**os**, see 2. **o.**

**osid** if there is. 213, 22, 28. §§ 152, 154

**osp** *m. a stranger, guest.* 193, 7.

**ottid**, see **odi.**

**Owein** *n. pr. m.*

**pa, ba** (voc.) what? § 80.

**pab** *m. a pope.* pl. **-eu** 220, 8.

**Pabo** *n. pr. m.*

**pader** *f. the Paternoster.* 215, 4. 5.

**pagan** a pagan, heathen; pl. **-yeid.**

**paladyr** *m. a spear-shaft.* 194, 23.

**pullu** to fail. 180, 11.

**pan (pann)** (1) whence, § 225.

(2) (voc.) when, § 226. (3) that; **pan**

**yw** 155a (β); **hyd pan** until, so that.

**yr pan** since. 170, 5.

**parabyl** *m. a speech.* 170, 4.

**paradwys** *f. Paradise.* 238, 4.

**parattöi** to prepare. 148, 7.

**parawd** prepared, ready, easy.

144, 3. 158, 24. 30.

**parchell** *m. a young pig.* 203, 10.

pared m. *a wall, partition.* 196, 20.  
 parhau *to remain, continue.* 180, 15.  
 parth m. and f. *part, direction;*  
 149, 2. 201, 5. p. ac *towards.* 139, 9.  
 Parth *Parthia.* 172, 6.  
 parth-gleð *left-hand side;* sic leg.  
 229, 29. MA. 274a 25.  
 pawb *everyone, everybody.*  
 pebyll m. *a tent;* pl. -eu.  
 pebyllaw *to pitch a tent or tents,*  
*encamp.* 173, 24.  
 pechawd m. *sin;* pl. pechodeu.  
 pedeir, see pedwar.  
 pedr-ongyl *square.* 154, 7. RB. II.  
 12, 31.  
 pedwar m. pedeir f. *four.*  
 pedwryð m. pedwareð f. *fourth.*  
 peðyd *infantry.*  
 peðydganta *troop of infantry.* 171, 5.  
 Pedyr *Peter.* 228, 19.  
 pei *if he were.* 200, 16. conj. *if.* § 227.  
 peidaw (peidyaw) (ac) *to cease*  
*(from).* 140, 4. 179, 3. 190, 21;  
 p. o 167, 3 v. l.; p. yn 178, 24.  
 RB. II. 253, 10.  
 peir m. *a cauldron.* 202, 7. 14.  
 peiss-awg *coated.* Hir P. n. pr.  
 m. 206, 1.  
 pell *far, distant;* ym p. *far off;*  
 o b. *from afar.* comp. bellach *further.*  
 193, 16 v. l.  
 pellenhig *a stranger.* 193, 7.  
 penn *a head, top, point, end;* mouth.  
 225, 12. pl. -eu. am b. *against* 146, 26.  
 uch b. *over, above;* ym p. *at the end.*  
 Penn n. pr. m.  
 pennaf (penhaf) *foremost, chief.*  
 Penn-beið *chief of boars.* 201, 16.  
 penn-cawr *chief giant.*  
 Penn-dragon *chief leader.*  
 penn-ffestin *a helmet.* 150, 25;  
 159, 17. RB. II. 55, 19; 155, 7; 162, 14.  
 penn-saer m. *a chief craftsman.*  
 204, 27.  
 penn-swyðwr m. *a chief steward.*  
 160, 13.  
 penn-trullyad m. *a chief butler.*  
 160, 12.  
 penyd *penance.* 150, 20. 238, 8.  
 Peredur n. pr. m.  
 perfeð *middle, centre.* 176, 26.  
 183, 3. 29. 210, 10.  
 perffeith *perfect.* 237, 12.  
 peri *to cause, make, create.* 190, 19.  
 234, 10.  
 perigyl m. and f. *a danger;* pl.  
 perigleu. 151, 30. 153, 30.

perthcled, see parth-gleð.  
 1. perthyn (at) *to belong (to).* 155,  
 21.  
 2. perthyn *appropriate, pertinent.*  
 234, 18. 235, 8. MA. 191a, 26; 228a, 26.  
 peryf m. *the Creator.* 234, 9. MA.  
 228 a 18.  
 petrus m. *a doubt.* 150, 4 v. l.  
 167, 4.  
 pettrussaw *to doubt.* 169, 7.  
 petruder *hesitation, doubt.* 147, 28.  
 150, 4.  
 peth *a thing, something, somewhat.*  
 peth, beth = pa beth *what?* §§ 74. 79.  
 203, 11.  
 peunyð adv. *daily, everyday.*  
 beunyð 239, 10.  
 peunyð-yawl *daily.* 190, 9.  
 phellas: ara phellas 239, 17. "*which*  
*I have set apart,"* Skene, FB. I., 289;  
 Pughe s.v. gwanas has: a ryfullias  
 "*which I have prepared.*"  
 pieu *whose is?* 193, 5. 6. *to whom*  
*it belongs,* 16, 7. §§ 83, 161.  
 pigo *to peck at.* 197, 23.  
 pimp, see pump.  
 plant (coll.) *children.*  
 pleid f. *a side, party;* o b. *on the*  
*side of.*  
 plith: o blith *from among;* trwy  
 blith *through the midst of;* ym plith  
*among.*  
 plwyw *people.* 227, 12. LA. 106,  
 19; 22. RB. II. 270, 24.  
 pob *each, every;* bob un, bob deu  
*in ones and twos;* pob eilwers *alter-*  
*nately;* § 43. pobmynnig *any place.*  
 223, 8.  
 pobyl f. *people;* pl. pobloeð.  
 poen f. *pain;* pl. -eu. 142, 13.  
 poened *pain, torment.* 230, 21.  
 pony, before vowels and with pres.  
 of cop. ponyd, interrog. part. = Lat.  
 nonne? § 240.  
 1. porth m. *a gate, gateway;* pl.  
 pirth. 193, 11. 194, 3. 234, 12.  
 2. porth f. *help, assistance, sup-*  
*port.* 175, 6. 176, 18. 196, 8.  
 208, 20. 25.  
 3. porth *a port, harbour.* P. Cerðin  
 n. l.  
 porthawr m. *a doorkeeper.*  
 193, 12. 17. 234, 12.  
 porth-fa f. *a port.* 172, 21.  
 post *a post, pillar.* Pabo p.  
 Prydein 162, 3.  
 pren m. *a tree, cross.* 230, 17.

Presseleu n.l. 204, 6.  
 pressennawl *pertaining to this world*. 198, 20. LA. 130, 31; 142, 4.  
 pressent *present*. gwlad p. *this world*, 230, 5; 232, 10. MA. 272a, 16; 281, 36.  
 priawd *own*. 181, 18.  
 prif-gerd a *panegyric*. 235, 5.  
 prif-glod *loud praise, eulogy*. 235, 6.  
 priodas f. *marriage*. 141, 2.  
 priodawr m. *a proprietor, land-owner*. 212, 24. 27; 213, 8; 220, 28. 31.  
 priodol-der m. *proprietary right*. 212, 28; 213, 1. 20. RB. II. 341, 21.  
 processio (procesiwn) *procession*.  
 profi *to try, test, tempt*. 139, 11.  
 237, 17. p. part. profedig 146, 1; 164, 15; 206, 13.  
 1. pryd *aspect, beauty*. 140, 22; 155, 25.  
 2. pryd m. *time*; pa bryd *when?*  
 p. pan *when* 229, 25. p. na *since not*. § 228.  
 prydū *to sing, compose poetry*. 235, 5.  
 pryder *care, anxiety*; pl. -eu.  
 pryderus *anxious*. 190, 29.  
 Prydein f. *Britain*.  
 Pryd-wenn f. (*fair-shaped*) *the name of Arthur's ship*. 199, 6; 202, 12.  
 prynu *to buy, redeem*. 238, 14.  
 Pumlumon n.l. *Plimlimon*. 199, 22.  
 pump (nas.) *five*.  
 pur *pure, perfect*. 238, 5.  
 pur-đu *jet black*. 225, 21.  
 pur-ffawd *pure, perfect happiness*. 237, 13. MA. 315<sup>b14</sup>.  
 pur-wynn m. -wenn f. *pure-white*.  
 pwll m. *a pit, hole*. 200, 6.  
 pwy *who? which?* 139, 11. 194, 14. *who*; p. bynhac *whoever*. § 81.  
 pwys *a weight, burden*. 238, 6.  
 pwystyr *why?* 193, 14.  
 py (voc.) *what?* § 185; pyr *why?* § 229. py diw (O.W.) *to whom*. 146, 1. § 80 n. 4.  
 pyd m. *a pitfall, snare*. 177, 25. MA. 231<sup>b4</sup>; RB. II. 76, 10.  
 pylu *to make blunt*. 159, 17. RB II. 106, 31; 56, 33; 71, 19; 161, 1.  
 pym, see pump.  
 pymhed *fifth*.  
 pymtheg (nos.) *fifteen*.  
 -pynhag *-soever*. § 81.  
 pyr, see py.

pysg m. *a fish*; pl. -awd. 154, 8. 198, 26. 241, 11.  
 pythew-nos *a fortnight*. 209, 6. 216, 13. 16.  
 racco (racko) *yonder*. § 63.  
 rad f. *grace, favour, blessing*. 140, 5. 12. 145, 13.  
 raff *a rope*; pl. -eu. 147, 4.  
 rag prep. *before, for, from*. §§ 52, 186. yn r. 195. 28. p yr. *wherefore?* 193, 13 v.l. r. wyneb *following, next*.  
 rag-đywedud *to foretell*. 176, 15. p. part. rag-đywededig *aforsaid*. 173, 3.  
 rag-feđyl yaw *to consider, provide*. 167, 18. 20; 169, 4.  
 rag-flaenu *to excel*, 164, 8. RB. II. 293,<sup>29</sup> 350,<sup>11</sup> r. y fford iter *prae-cedere*. 179, 7.  
 ragod (rachod) *to waylay; an amb-bush*. 147, 1; 177, 16; 206, 12; 223, 6.  
 rag-weled *to foresee, provide*. 167, 20. 169, 4. part. weledig 169, 2 v.l.  
 rag-ynys f. *an adjacent island*. 202, 28.  
 ranc: r, bođ *content, satisfaction*. 195, 12.  
 ranghei, see rengi.  
 rann f. *a division, part, portion, share*. ran 228, 7. pl. -eđ. 227, 6.  
 rannu *to divide*. 141, 5. 179, 14.  
 redeg (rydec) *to run, race, pass by*.  
 redyn fern. Redyn-fre n, l. (*Fern-hill*) 196, 29.  
 Reged f., n. l. 152, 29. 155, 16.  
 reges *ebb-tide; adversity*. 228, 11. CZ. V, p. 566.  
 rengi bođ *to satisfy, please*. pres. ind. sg. 3 reinc 194, 18; past subj. sg. 3 ranghei 195, 11. RB. II. 329, 18. MA. 321b, 31.  
 rei (rey) *some, few*. y rei *those, such*; pob rei *both sides* § 66; rei . . rei (ereill) *some . . some* § 75.  
 reid (wrth) *need (of), necessity, trouble*.  
 reiđ (reit) *a shaft, antler*. 197, 1. MA. 148<sup>b58</sup>.  
 Reidown n. pr. m. 204, 17.  
 reinc, see rengi.  
 Rein n. pr. m. *Regin*.  
 reolawdyr *regular*. 161, 8. RB. II. 171,<sup>16</sup> CM. 14,<sup>15</sup>.  
 restru *to range*. 204, 11.  
 rew *frost, ice*. 241, 20.  
 rewi *to freeze*. pres. ind. act. sg. 3 rewhiđ 241, 3. 19. § 129.

**rewinyaw** to cause to perish, destroy, ruin. 3 sg. pret. ind. act. **rewinywys** 229, 22. cp. MA. 140a, 33; FB. 146, 6.  
**rid**, see **ryd**.  
**riein-gadeir** f. a queen's throne. 189, 8.  
**rieni** pl. ancestors. 168, 13; 170, 12.  
**22.**  
**rif** number. 171, 16.  
**ringhyll** (ringyll) m. an apparitor, a beadle. 210, 12, 18; 214, 21.  
**riheð** ? 228, 30. FB. 11, 10; 174, 2.  
**rihyð** splendour, splendid ? 227, 4.  
**MA.** 195a, 12; 229, 21; FB. 6, 24; 8, 5; 110, 12; 112, 3; 211, 15; 212, 17; 305, 7.  
**rin** a secret. 225, 7.  
**rith** form, guise.  
**rithaw** to shape, create, transform. 196, 27; 197, 7.  
**riw** a slope. 242, 4.  
**ro** prep. between. § 53.  
**rod** f. a wheel. **gelliwng cleðyf ar y r.** to brandish a sword in circle. 202, 21. MA. 286a, 35. L. Glyn Cothi 92, 10.  
**roð** m. and f. a gift; pl. -yon.  
**rofi**, see **ro**.  
**roði** (roy, rohi) to give, put, place, grant, surrender.  
**Ron** the name of Arthur's lance.  
**ruð** red, ruddy. 228, 15.  
**Ruð-fyw** n. pr. m. 205, 31.  
**Rufein** f. Rome. 181, 4.  
**Rufeinaawl** Roman.  
**Run** n. pr. m.  
**ruthur** (rythur) f. a rush, onset. 151, 21. 24. 176, 12. 24. 178, 21. 182, 6. 8.  
**Ruthyn** n. l.  
**rwng** (yrwng) prep. between. §§ 53, 187.  
**rwyyð** easy, free, prosperous, favourable; 172, 24. **arr.** in prosperity; **glew-r.** 235, 11.  
**rwym** m. a ruler, leader. 236, 23. 25.  
**rwygaw** to rend, break. 198, 27.  
**r.** (y) **mor** to plough the sea 149, 16. 172, 25.  
**rwymaw** to bind, gird. 150, 29. 188, 5. p. part. **rwymedig** bound, attached. 162, 25. 158, 6.  
**rwysg** sway. 227, 4. 235, 13.  
**ry** verbal particle. §§ 95, 96, 97.  
**ry-** intensive prefix, very, too.  
**ry-fawr** 241, 19. **ry-hir** 162, 8.  
**rych** a furrow. 226, 5.

**ryd** a ford. 241, 3. **R. Ychen** Oxford 161, 34.  
**rydec**, see **redeg**.  
**ryð** free. 198, 29. 237, 24.  
**ryðaw**, see **ro**.  
**ryðhau** to free, liberate.  
**ryðidf.** freedom, franchise, privilege. 186, 23. 221, 19.  
**ryðynt**, see **ro**.  
**ry-feð** a wonder; wonderful. 162, 23. compar. -ach, 154, 5.  
**ryfeðu** to wonder. 149, 23. 154, 4.  
**ryfel** m. war. 167, 25.  
**ry-gosswy, ry-gossys** ? 231, 31.  
**Rymhi** n. l.  
**rynawd** awhile. 142, 1.  
**ryodres** magnificence, pomp. 156, 21. 161, 2.  
**ryrys** ? 231, 30.  
**Rys** n. pr. m. 205, 31. 235, 17.  
**rysswr** m. a warrior, champion. 199, 26; 29; 204, 16; 206, 18. CM. 1, 25; 2, 3.  
**rythur**, see **ruthur**.  
**ryw** m. kind, sort; such; 167, 7. 174, 33. 186, 2. **neb ryw** any. 140, 10.

**Sadwrn** : **duw S.** on Saturday. 228, 21.  
**saer** m. a craftsman, wright.  
**Saesneg** f. the English language.  
**Saeson**, see **Seys**.  
**saeth** an arrow; pl. -eu. 176, 23.  
**saethu** to shoot with arrows. 164, 24.  
**safant**, see **sefyll**.  
**safedig** (p. part. of **sefyll**) established, fixed, valid. 218, 11.  
**Salsbri** n. l. Salisbury.  
**salwen** vain, needless. 201, 29.  
**Samsun** n. pr. m. Samson.  
**sant** m. a saint; pl. **seint**. 202, 32.  
**sarff** a serpent; pl. **seirff**.  
**sarhaed** f. an insult, affront; pl. -eu. 166, 1. 223, 21.  
**sawdl** a heel; pl. **sodleu**. 159, 24. 183, 23.  
**sawl** a many, multitude; **y s.** those. § 77.  
**sef** that is, this is. § 47.  
**sefir**, see **sefyll**.  
**sefyll** (trans. and intrans.) to stand, to stop, stand fast, fix. pres. ind. sg 3 **seif**, pass. **sefir**, pl. 1 **safwn**, pl. 3 **safant** (sauahant), pret. sg. 3 **safawð** **segur** disengaged, idle. 241, 18.  
**seguryd** m. ease. 167, 7. 180, 13.  
**seif**, see **sefyll**.

**seilaw** to found, establish; remain?  
perf. sg. 3 **ry seilas**. 232, 3.

**sein** a sound. 183, 8.

**seint**, see **sant**.

**seith** seven. **s.-lydyn** seven young ones. 203, 4. 15.

**Seith Pedyr Saint Peter**. 228, 19.

**Cf. Rhys**, Lect. p. 371.

**sened** f. a senate. 166, 4. 15.

**senedwr** m. a senator. 172, 11.

**ser**, see **syr**.

**serch** love.

**Seys** m. a Saxon, Englishman;  
pl. **Saeson**. 146, 12.

**Sibli** f. the Sibyl. 169, 17.

**sodlau**, see **sawdl**.

**son** f. a sound, noise. 183, 22.

**sorri** to be angry, frown. 141, 19,  
142, 32. pres. ind. sg. 3 **syr**. 226, 2.

**sugnaw** to suck. imperf. ind. sg. 3  
**sucknei** 154, 19.

**Sul-gwyn** m. Whitsunday. 160, 19.

**swllt** m. money, treasure. 149, 12,  
202, 24.

**swyð** an office. 202, 19.

**syberw** stately, noble. 143, 15.

**syberwyd** pride, arrogance. 180, 17.

**syched** m. thirst. 170, 15.

**syllu** to gaze, look. 154, 1; 199, 26.

**symudaw** to change. 143, 14.

**syr** (coll.) stars. 161, 11. 197, 23,  
227, 29.

**syr**, see **sorri**.

**syrthaw** to fall. 159, 10. pret.

pl. 3 **syrthassant** 185, 21; 187, 25.

**tad** m. a father; pl. -eu; **hen-dad**  
an ancestor.

**tafaw** ? 230, 19 sqq.

**tafawd** a tongue; pl. **tafodeu**.

**tafawd-leferyð** spoken word, verbal  
evidence. 139, 22; 220, 4.

**tangnefed** peace. 201, 2.

**tangnefedu** to make peace, pacify,  
appease.

**tangnefedus** peaceful. 144, 16.

1. **tal** m. forehead. 159, 16.

2. **tal** payment, value. **tu a thal** an  
equivalent? 221, 12.

**talawr**, pl. of **tal**? 228, 13.

**Taliessin** n. pr. m.

**talu** to pay, give in return, requite,  
give, forfeit; reckon. 209, 12.

**talym** m. a while, period. **ar dalym**  
for a time 146, 2.

1. **tan**, **dan** (voc.) prep. under;  
**deni** under her. § 188,

2. **tan** m. fire.

**tanawl** fiery. 173, 4.

**tannu** to stretch. t. **pebylleu ten-**  
**toria** *figere*. 173, 17 v. 1.

**taplas** f. tables, backgammon.  
164, 25; 167, 4.

**taraw** to strike. t. **lygad** in the  
twinkling of an eye. 203, 32.

**tarðu** to flee, run away, start,  
pres. ind. sg. 3 **terðið**; pres. subj. sg. 3  
**tardho** 228, 13; 14. FB. 93, 18;  
94, 27; 104, 29; 125, 6; 151, 5; 163, 16;  
198, 21.

**tarren** f. a plot of uncultivated  
land. 196, 3.

1. **taryan** f. a shield; pl. **eu**.

2. **taryan** thunder. 227, 25; 229, 7.  
FB. 171<sup>22</sup>; MA. 287<sup>b 11</sup>.

**taryanawg** m. a shield-bearer; pl.  
-ogion. 234, 15. 236, 7.

**taryf**, leg. **toryf**? 233, 17. 236, 7.

**tawl**, see **toli**.

**tebig** similar, like. 239, 11.

**tebygu** to deem, think, suppose.

**teccäu** to adorn, decorate.

**tecced** beauty. 140, 26.

**teg** fair, pleasant.

**tegwch** m. beauty, 140, 22. 155, 25.

**Teilaw** n. pr. m.

**teilwng** (y) worthy of, meet, fit for,  
deserving, acceptable. 150, 17.

**teilyng-dawd** f. dignity. 155, 22.  
164, 7.

**teir-gweith** three times.

**Teir-gwaeð** "Three-shouter" n. pr.  
m. 201, 28.

**teir-nossig** three nights old.

**teithyawg** moving, in motion.

229, 8. **mal ton teithiawc llwyfenyd**  
FB. 192, 26.

**Teithyon** n. pr. m. 204, 29.

**telediaw** handsome, fair. 140, 29.

**telediwed** fairness. 140, 27 v. 1.

**telyn** a harp. 147, 12.

**telynawr** a harper. 147, 15.

**temyl** (temhyl) f. a temple; pl.  
**temleu**. 144, 10. 12; 152, 27.

**Temys** the Thames. 189, 27.

**terfyn** m. an end, limit, boundary,  
term; pl. -eu, -heu. 166, 16. 20.

**terfynu** to end, finish. 168, 27.  
183, 24; p. part. **terfynedig** ap-  
pointed. 171, 28.

**terfysg** m. trouble, conflict, uproar.  
141, 18; 167, 29; 225, 12; 233, 20.

**terfysgu** to disturb. 141, 12.

**tes** heat, hot weather, sunshine.  
241, 16.

1. *teu thine.* § 55.  
 2. *teu silent?* 231, 2.  
*teu-lu a household, retainers, community; pl. -oeð.*  
*tew thick, dense.* 151, 22; 241, 21.  
*tewhäu to thicken, to close up the ranks.* 151, 26; 176, 24; 187, 24.  
*teyrn (teörn, teörn) a king, ruler; pl. teerneð; t.-fab m. a king's son; t.-walch m. a royal hawk, hero; t.-wialen f. a sceptre.*  
*teyrnas m. and f. a kingdom; 144, 9.* 162, 31. *pl. -ssoeð.*  
*teyrn-ged f. tribute.* 166, 6.  
*ti (di) thou, thee; emphat. tydi, conjunct. titheu.* § 45 (a)  
*tino a valley, vale.* 240, 1. *FB.* 157, 7; 210, 8.  
*tir m. land; pl. -eð.*  
*tir-diwollawdr a husbandman; pl. -odron.* 149, 20.  
*tireð, see tir and twr.*  
*tithen, see ti.*  
*tlws m. a jewel; pl. tlyssu.*  
*toði to melt.* 228, 26.  
*töi to cover; pres. ind. sg. 3 töið, tohið* 241, 5; 242, 1. *FB.* 157, 4.  
*toli to curtail, diminish; pres. ind. sg. 3 tawl* 233, 12.  
*ton f. a wave.* 229, 6. 241, 5.  
*tor belly; ar eu t. against them.* 181, 14. *RB.* II. 48, 12; 97, 30; 157, 23.  
*torrito break, violate.* 183, 12. 223, 4  
*torf multitude, host; pl. torfoeð.* 151, 26. 233, 20. 234, 16. 23.  
*tost hard, severe.*  
*Totneis n. l. Totness.*  
 1. *tra (spir.) prep. beyond, across, over.* § 189.  
 2. *tra (voc.) conj. while.* § 230.  
*tra-chefyn backwards, back, behind, again.* § 189 N. See *cefyn*.  
*Trach-myr n. pr. m.* 204, 8.  
*traeth m. a shore, coast; pl. -eu.*  
*traethu to utter, declare.* 168, 29. 170, 7.  
*trafferth trouble.* 207, 27. 28.  
*tragywyð eternal.* 232, 13.  
*tragywyðawl eternal.* 150, 11.  
*trallawd f. persecution, trial.* 237, 18. *LA.* 19, 27; 21, 27; 28, 25.  
*tra-mor over-sea.* 156, 28.  
*trannoeth (lit. over night) next day.*  
*traws transverse. ar t. across.* 149, 3 v. l.  
*traws-brenneu pl. lateral branches of a tree.* 149, 3. Cf. *trauskeyg*, *Anc. Laws I.* 290, 3.

*trayan (traean) m. a third.* 139, 17; 157, 5; 201, 31.  
*trebelid swift, dexterous.* 201, 22. *RB.* II. 56, 27. *MA.* 279a<sup>35</sup>  
*trechaf (superl. of tren) strongest.* 187, 19. § 37 (b).  
*tref f. a dwelling-place, home.*  
*tref-tadawg m. an inheritor.* 218, 18.  
*tref-tadawl inherited.* 146, 8.  
*trei ebb.* 209, 4; 216, 11.  
*treiaw to ebb.* 154, 14.  
*treiglaw to travel; pres. ind. sg. 3 treigyl.* 197, 18.  
*treigyl m. a course, journey.* 197, 26.  
*treis f. violence, rapine, rape.* 200, 28. 222, 17.  
*tremygu to despise.* 140, 8. 166, 9.  
*treth f. a tribute.* 188, 9.  
*trethawl tributary.* 168, 2. 186, 23.  
*treulaw to spend, consume, wear.*  
*tri (spir.) m. teir f. three.*  
*tri-dieu three days.* 149, 8. 164, 29. 209, 1.  
*triganeð a trumpet blast?* 228, 29.  
*A thriganed kyrn a gwerin trygar* *FB.* 2117; Cf. 68; *MA.* 124b<sup>46</sup>.  
*triglaw to dwell, remain.* 162, 22. 240, 10. 13.  
*trindawd f. the Trinity.*  
*trist sad.* 179, 2.  
*tristäu to become sad, grieve.* 142, 2.  
*tristaw to become sad, grieve.* 141, 21.  
*tristyd m. grief.* 147, 6.  
*Tro Troy.* 163, 24.  
*troed m. a foot; pl. traed. ar traed on foot.* 174, 18.  
*troed-noeth bare-foot; pl. -on.* 153, 27.  
*troed-feð m. a foot (measure).* 154, 6.  
*tröi to turn (tr. and intr.).*  
*tros, dros (voc.) prep. across, over; myned dros to break through; eneid dros eneid a life for life struggle.* §§ 53; 190.  
*trossi to turn, move (tr. and intr.)* 149, 18. 151, 4. 199, 24.  
*tru sad, wretched.* 230, 20.  
*truan miserable, wretched; a wretch.*  
*trueni m. wretchedness, misery.*  
*tru-gar merciful.* 225, 19.  
*trugareð f. mercy.* 227, 7.  
*trugarhäu (wrth) to commiserate.*  
*trugeint (trugein) (nas.) sixty.*  
*trwch cut, broken.* 241, 9.  
*trwm m., trom f. heavy, sad.*  
*trws 227, 21 = trwst noise?* Cf. *yna byð mawrdrwst* *MA.* 73a.

trwssyad (trwssad) m. *one who arranges, or disposes.* 234, 7; 235, 28.  
 Cf. trwssyaw, trwssa, Hg. I., 214, 37.  
 trwy (drwy) (voc.) prep. *through.*  
 § 191. drwy y hun *in his sleep* 172, 27.  
 trwyðed *to visit, pass, sojourn.*  
 237, 18. FB. 59, 12. MA. 844a, 21.  
 try-chan (nas.) *three hundred.*  
 trychu *to cut down.* 149, 1.  
 trydyð m. tredeð f. *third, one of three*; ar y d. *with two others.* 142, 9.  
 § 165.  
 try-fer *a trident.* 197, 33. MA. 317b 13.  
 trym-der m. *gravity, seriousness.* 166, 14.  
 try-wyr *three men.* 174, 7. 193, 3.  
 tu m. *side, region, part*; or tu yn eu hol *from behind them*; tu ac towards; pa du *where?* 198, 32.  
 tud *people, country.* 231, 9.  
 twng, see tyngu.  
 twll *perforated, pierced.* 205, 23.  
 twr m. *a tower*; pl. tyreu. 156, 32; 166, 25. 27. tireð 181, 6.  
 twrch m. *a boar.*  
 twrwf m. *a host, multitude.* 234, 15.  
 twyll m. and f. *deception, treachery.* 178, 9.  
 twyllwr m. *a traitor.*  
 twynpath m. *a mound.* 199, 14.  
 1. ty, see ti.  
 2. ty m. *a house*; pl. tei.  
 tybygu, see tebygu.  
 tybyaw *to suspect.* 177, 27.  
 tyfu *to grow.*  
 tyngghedfen f. *fate, fortune*; pl. -nneu. 142, 10.  
 tyngu *to swear, take an oath.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3. twng 220, 27. 233, 4.  
 tyllu *to pierce, make a breach.* 183, 15.  
 tyllweð (tellweð) f. *stillness.* 211, 2.  
 tynnu *to pull, drag, draw, retreat*; 147, 18. 162, 25. 228, 9. t. pebylleu *to pitch tents.* 173, 17.  
 tyreu, see twr.  
 tyrnged, see teyrn-ged.  
 tyst *a witness*; pl. -on, -ion.  
 tywyð *a tempest, storm.* 228, 25.  
 tywyll *darkness.* 229, 33.  
 tywyssawg m. *a leader, prince, chief*; pl. -ogion.  
 tywyssogaeth *leadership, dominion.*  
 uch (voc.) prep. *above*; uch ben *above, over.* § 193,

uched *height.* 197, 24.  
 uchel *high, tall, loud.* 150, 32; 186, 16; 234, 3.  
 ucher *evening.* 196, 23. 197, 24.  
 uchod adv. *above.* 187, 22; 198, 8.  
 uð (uut, wut) m. *a lord, king, the Lord.* 235, 16; 236, 28.  
 uðunt *to them*, see 1. y.  
 ufuð-häu *to obey.* 150, 23. 189, 22.  
 ufull-dawd *humility, lowliness.* 237, 22.  
 uffern *hell.*  
 ugeint (ugein) m. *twenty.* deg ar hu. *thirty.*  
 Ugnach n. pr. m.  
 Ul-Cessar *Julius Caesar.*  
 un *one*; same. 163, 29. 221, 13. any. 164, 14. § 164 (4).  
 un-ben m. *a chieftain.*  
 un-fam *having the same mother.* 202, 18.  
 un-ryw *of the same kind, similar.*  
 un-tu: ar u. *at a stretch.* 156, 17. RB. II. 308, 33.  
 urðas m. *a rank, order, dignity*; pl. urðasseu, urðassoeð.  
 urðasseið *dignified.* 161, 6.  
 urðaw *to ordain.*  
 urðawl *ordained.*  
 Uryen n. pr. m. *Urbigenus.*  
 Uthur n. pr. m.  
 weithon, weithyon, see gweith.  
 wrth, see gwrth.  
 wut, see uð.  
 wy (hwy) *they, them*; emphat. wyntwy, conjunct. wynteu.  
 wybyr *sky, heaven.* 159, 25. See 1. can.  
 wyf, see bod.  
 wyneb *face*; rac w. *following, next.* 151, 9. 153, 6. 155, 27. w. yn w. *face to face.* 216, 27.  
 wyth *eight.*  
 whe, see chwech.  
 whedleu, see chwedyl.  
 whioryð, see chwaer.  
 1. y (voc.) prep. (1) *to*, (2) *from*, of. § 195.  
 2. y def. art., see 1. yr.  
 3. y verb. particle, see yð.  
 4. y (voc.) *his*, (spir.) *her, their.* § 57.  
 y-am (voc.) (1) *from off*; (2) *including.* § 164.  
 y-ar (1) *from*; (2) *upon.* § 165.  
 1. ych m. *an ox*; pl. -en.  
 2. ych *your.* §§ 57, 58.

**ychedig** *some, a little, a few.*  
**y-dan** (voc.) prep. *under.* § 188.  
**ydy's, ydyw**, see **bod**.  
**yð** verb. particle, before consonants  
**y.** § 91.  
**yfed** *to drink.* 202, 14.  
**yfelly**, see **felly**.  
**y-gan** (voc.) prep. *from.* § 167.  
**yng** *a strait, difficulty, distress.*  
 150, 29.  
**ynghyd** (ac) *together (with).*  
**yll** (ill, ell) before numerals, *all.*  
 § 67.  
 1. **ym**, see **yn**.  
 2. **ym**, see **bod**.  
**yma** *here, hither.*  
**ym-adaw** (ac) *to part with, leave,*  
*desert; past subj. pl. 3 ymedewynt.*  
**ym-adrawð** m. *to speak; speech,*  
*discourse; pl. ymadroðyon.* 142, 10.  
**ym-aðassu** (ac) *to adapt oneself.* **y.**  
**ar ðayar** *to measure one's length on*  
*the ground.* 174, 26.  
**ym-afael** (yn) *to take hold of,*  
*grasp.* 202, 17. 206, 21. 207, 17. 19.  
**yman** *here.* **hwnt ac y.** *nunc hac*  
*nunc illac* 185, 25.  
**ym-ar-ðisgwyl** *to watch.* 199, 27.  
**ym-ar-ðyrchafel** *to exalt oneself.*  
 157, 4.  
**ym-baratöi** *to prepare oneself.*  
 171, 19.  
**ym-ben-tyr(r)-yaw** *to rush together.*  
 176, 17; 186, 10; Hg. II. 163, 1.  
**ym-choelud** (-chaelud) *to return,*  
*turn.* 189, 11. 206, 12. 229, 27. 29.  
**y. ar** *to turn upon, set upon.* 174, 29.  
 207, 20. **y. y arfeu yn y Gwyðyl** *to*  
*attack the Irishmen.* pret. ind. sg. 3  
**ymhoeles.** 160, 17.  
**ym-da**, see **ym-deith**.  
**ymdan** (voc.) prep. *about.* § 164.  
**ym-daraw** (ac) *to contend (with).*  
 201, 29.  
**ym-deith** *to go about, to go, go away.*  
 141, 14. pres. ind. sg. 3 **ym-da** 199, 4.  
**ym-dynnu** (o) *to retreat (from).*  
 174, 17.  
**ym-ðianc** *to escape.* 154, 18. 197, 30.  
**ym-ðïan** *to converse.* 147, 9.  
 203, 18.  
**ym-ðifad** (o) *bereft (of); pl. -ðifeid.*  
 176, 28.  
**ym-ðifedi** *destitution.* 145, 14.  
**ym-ðiffyn**, see **am-ðiffyn**.  
**ym-ðired** *to trust.* **y. y** 225, 4.  
**y. yn** 151, 7. 158, 20.  
**ym-ðwyn** *to carry about.* 202, 20.

**ym-ðywedyd** *to discuss, argue.*  
 211, 16.  
**ymeith** (o) *out (of), away (from).*  
 174, 8.  
**ym-encinaw** *to anoint oneself.*  
 207, 9.  
**ym-erbynyeid** *to encounter, combat.*  
 186, 6.  
**ym-ffust** m. *a conflict, struggle.*  
 187, 20; R.B. II. 84, 24; 90, 31;  
 162, 10.  
**ym-gaffel** (ac) *to get hold of,*  
*engage in battle.* 185, 19. 186, 2.  
**ym-garu** (o) *to caress one another.*  
 147, 19. 148, 12.  
**ym-geffelybu** (ac) *to imitate.* 156, 25.  
 Hg. II. 89, 14; 102, 2; LA. 44, 8;  
 R.B. II. 80, 12.  
**ym-geis** (ac) *to seek.* 202, 31.  
**ym-gelu** (rag) *to hide (from).*  
 146, 27.  
**ym-golli** (ac) *to lose sight (of).*  
 205, 1.  
**ym-gribyaw** (ac) *to wrangle (with).*  
 207, 25.  
**ym-gyf-ar-fod** *to encounter.* 146, 14.  
 169, 15. 170, 14. 174, 6.  
**ym-gyffelybu** (ac) *to compare one-*  
*self, vie (with).* 156, 25.  
**ym-gynghor** (ac) *to consult.* 148, 1.  
**ym-gym-mysgu** *to engage each*  
*other.* 183, 20. Hg. I. 55, 26; 282, 19.  
 R.B. II. 28, 12.  
**ym-gynhal** *to resist.* 151, 17. 192, 8.  
**ym-gynull** *to gather together.*  
 148, 25.  
**ym-gynullaw** *to flock together.*  
 145, 1. 152, 20. 173, 20. 192, 7.  
**ym-gyrchu** *to attack.* 173, 2.  
**ym-gyweiraw** (o) *to equip oneself*  
*(with).* 172, 16.  
**ymhoeles**, see **ym-choelud**.  
**ym-lað** m. *to fight; a fight; pl. -eu.*  
**ym-lid** *to pursue.* 148, 24. 188, 2.  
 fut. sg. 1 **ymlydyaf** 206, 9.  
**ym-lynu** *to follow, pursue.* 152,  
 7. 22. 191, 1.  
**ym-o-glyd** (rag) *to guard against.*  
 176, 3; R.B. II. 46, 34; Hg. I. 28, 5.  
**ym-orðiwes** (ac) *to overtake, come*  
*up with, touch.* 174, 20. 28. 202, 4.  
 204, 3. 28. 207, 3.  
**ym-rithaw** *to transform oneself.*  
 201, 33.  
**ym-roði** *to give oneself up, surrender,*  
*devote oneself.* 145, 22. 149, 5.  
 150, 12. 156, 6. pres. ind. sg. 3  
**ymryð** 150, 17.



**ym-ryðhäu** (o) *to free oneself (from).* 147, 22.

**ym-tynnu**, see **ym-dynnu**.

**ym-wasgu** (ac) *to rejoin.* 174, 34; L.A. 100, 6; Hg II. 272, 29.

**ym-weled** *to see one another*; **y. ac** *to visit.* 147, 20. 203, 32. 205, 12.

**ym-wneuthur** *to effect mutually.* 164, 16 v. l.

**ym-yrru** (gyt ac) *to concern oneself (with), help.* 200, 20. R.B. II. 19, 8; C.M. 77, 17.

**ym-ysgydyaw** *to shake oneself.* 202, 4.

1. **yn** (nas.) prep. *in, into, upon.* 173, 5. § 196.

2. **yn** (voc.) forming adverbs and with predicative noun and adjective. § 16 (d).

3. **yn** (an) *our.* § 57.

**yna** *then, there, thither.*

**ynad** (O.W. *egnāt*) m. *a judge.* 209, 24; pl. *yneid.* 210, 5.

**ynfyd** *foolish.* 231, 33.

**ynni** *vigour.* 174, 19. 27. 186, 1.

**yno** *there, thither.*

**ynt**, see **bod**. **ynteu**, see **ef**.

**yny** (hynny) conj. *until.* § 234. For **yny vyð** see 2. **gwyð**.

**ynyal** *desert, wild.* 228, 7.

**ynys** f. *an island*; pl. **ynysseð**. **Ynys Daned Thanet.**

**Ypolit** *Hippolytus.*

1. **yr**, before consonants **y** (voc. before fem.) def. art. *the.*

2. **yr** prep. *for the sake of; for; since.* §§ 53; 197. **yr na** *since not, though not.* § 234. **yr hynny** *nevertheless*; **yr pan** *since*; **pyr** (py yr) *why?* 193, 13.

**yrof**, see **ro**.

**y-ryngtunt**, see **rwng**.

1. **ys** *is.* §§ 152; 155; 159 N2.

2. **ys**: **ys** pump *mlyneð* *since five years.* **ys gwers** *for some time.* 194, 6.

**yr ys pell o amser** *long ago.* 197, 22.

**ysgar** (ac) *to leave, part with.* 205, 25.

**Ysgawd** n. pr. m. 204, 20.

**ysgawn** *light, slight, easy.* 180, 31. 202, 11.

**ysgithyr** *a fang, tusk.* 201, 23.

**Y-wynn** *white-tusked.* 201, 16.

**ysglyfyaw** *to snatch.* 202, 2; R.B. II. 151, 8; Hg. I. 296, 22.

**ysgol** *a school.* 161, 10.

**ysgolheig** m. *a scholar, clerk, priest*; pl. **-on.** 147, 29. 153, 25. 160, 9.

**ysgrifenu** *to write.* 164, 6.

**ysgrybul** (coll.) *cattle.* 199, 4.

**ysgwyd** *a shield.* 241, 18. 22.

**ysgwyð** f. *a shoulder.* 174, 31. 198, 10. 241, 18. 22.

**ysgymun** (**ysgymyn**) *accursed.* 191, 16.

**ysgymun-dawd** *villany.* 149, 24.

**ysgymunedig** *accursed*; pl. **-yon.**

**ysgythredig** *chased, engraved.* 150, 26. C.M. 34, 32; 104, 19.

**yslipanu** *to burnish, polish.* 194, 5. 12.

**yslipanwr** m. *a burnisher.* 193, 18.

**yspardun** f. *a spur*; pl. **-eu.**

**yspeid** f. *a while, a space of time, respite.*

**Yspaðaden** (*Hawthorn*) n. pr. m. 199, 18. Cf. Rhys, *Celt. H.*, p. 373.

**Ysphaen Spain.** yr Y. 182, 23.

**yspeil** *spoil*; pl. **-eu** 177, 3.

**yspeilaw** *to despoil.* 176, 31. 188, 3.

**yssid** *there is.* 198, 15. 233, 5. pl.

**yssydint.** 194, 2. § 154 (a); ib. n. l.

**yssidgaw** *to shatter.* 147, 4.

**yssu** *to eat, consume.* 200, 3. 31.

**yssyð** (**yssy**) *who, which is.* §§ 152. 154 (β); 155 (κ).

**ystondard** *a battle standard.* 183, 20.

**ystorya** *history, story.* 164, 7.

**ystrad** *a vale, valley.* 205, 32. 242, 1.

**ystryw** *device, stratagem.* 147, 22.

**ystwng** *to lower, overcome.* 233, 2.

**ystynu** *to extend, prolong.* 188, 7.

**ystyr** *story; meaning, import, reason.* 203, 11. **pwystyr** (py y.) *why?* 193, 14.

**yswein** m. *esquire.* 143, 10.

**ysym** *there is to me, I have.* 233, 1. § 155 B, note 1.

1. **yw**, see **bod**.

2. **yw** *yew trees.* **Ystrad Yw** 205, 32.

3. **yw**, see 1. **y**.

1. **ywch**, see **bod**.

2. **ywch**, see 1. **y**.

## APPENDIX

---

### Additional Variants to "Lear and his Daughters" from MSS. at Peniarth.

P<sup>1</sup>, P<sup>2</sup>, P<sup>3</sup>, P<sup>4</sup>=MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, 46.

---

Ch. 1.—l. 2, thrugein mlyned : dev vgeŷn P<sup>2</sup>—l. 3, ef a adeilvs P<sup>2</sup>—a thri ugein mlyned y gŵledichŷs (gŵledychŷs P<sup>3</sup>) ef yn ŵraŵl ac yd adeilŷs (adeilŷs P<sup>3</sup>) dinas P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 4, leŷrcester P<sup>2</sup>.

Ch. 2.—l. 2, yd adaŵhei P<sup>4</sup>.

Ch. 3.—l. 4, leueryd *om.* P<sup>2</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 5, adaŵ y rodi hitheu yr gŵr P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 4.—l. 3, y rygaru : yr caru P<sup>3</sup>—l. 11, nas rodi hi P<sup>3</sup>—l. 12, damweinhei P<sup>4</sup>.

Ch. 5.—l. 2, yr Alban : e gogled P<sup>2</sup>—l. 8, y rodei . . . genti : ŷ rodeŷ heb tŷr na daŷar na ssvllt P<sup>2</sup>—l. 15, kadarnhawyt : gŵnaethpŷyt P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 6.—l. 12, ellvng er reŷ ereŷll ŷ emdeŷth P<sup>2</sup>.

Ch. 8.—l. 5, gellygassei y ŵrthaŵ P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 9.—l. 1, ydoed P<sup>3</sup>—l. 3, Or\* tŷghetven lŷtŷavc ep ef pa brŷd edav dŷd e gallwŷf ŷ talu vdvnt wŷ hŷn P<sup>2</sup>. O chwichwi yr tŷghetueneu P<sup>3</sup>. Oiar teghetueneu py le, &c. P<sup>4</sup>—l. 4, pa achos y kyffroassoch uiui yar &c. P<sup>3</sup>—l. 7, gytdiodef P<sup>3</sup>—l. 14, traet P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—ib. Owi P<sup>3</sup>—l. 16, talu yny gŵrthŷneb yr gŷyr hyny P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 21, vy rodyon : vyn da P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 25, yn gam P<sup>3</sup>.

\* Strachan says : "I can't read the second letter except as r."

Ch. 10.—l. 1, aghyfnernth : trueni P<sup>3</sup>—l. 2, ef a doeth, &c. : dýnessav parth ar dýnas edoed ý ver (*sic*) endav P<sup>2</sup>—ib., ym Paris : ýg cariz P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 4, ar gyuaroed P<sup>3</sup>—l. 5, namýn vn marchavc ac essweýn P<sup>2</sup>; namyn ef ae yswein P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 7, mynet ae that, &c. : dwýn ý that hýt en dýnas arall ac eno dywedwýt ý vot en glaf P<sup>2</sup>—l. 16, wedy yr dehol P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 11.—l. 11, a ónaeth : re gwnathoed P<sup>2</sup>—a wnathoed P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 12, anryded Bifrontisiani : anrýded ýr devforvavl ianus P<sup>2</sup>—l. 13, delhei P<sup>4</sup>—ib. ac ena ed emkýnvlleý holl seýrý a chreffdwýr e dýnas P<sup>2</sup>—gredyfwyr (*sic*) P<sup>3</sup>—crefuydóyr P<sup>4</sup>.

# Index



## INDEX

The references are to paragraphs. n.=note.

- ā*, causing vowel-change 7 (a).
- a*, rel. part. 82-83; with infixed pron. 49 (b), 50 (a); usage 83 (a); expressing subj. or obj. 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); without antecedent 87 (b).
- a*, infixing part. 50 (c); 94; 159 n. 2; superseded by *yd* 85 n.
- a*, interrog. part. 239; lenat. after 18 (g).
- a*, *ac*, conj. 198; mutat. after, 21 (d).
- a*, *ac*, prep. 162; after adj. 34 (b); mutat. after, 21 (c).
- a*, prep.=o 183.
- a*, *ha*, interj. 243.
- absolute ending *-sit* 132 n.
- accent, 4; 11 n. 1; shifting of 8; vowel variation due to 8; secondary acc. 11 n. 1.
- accusative 26; traces of 25; in poetry 26; of relative 51.
- ach*, prep. 163
- achaws*, conj. 199.
- adjective, 30-39; lenat. of 16; lenat. after positive 16 (c) (a); after compar. 16 n. 4; endings of 27 (c); gender in 30; stems in *-i-*, *-o-*, *-u-*, 30 note; plur. forms 31; attributive 32; predicative 32; number in 33; inflected adj. 34 (a); order in sentence 34 (a); foll. by prep. *o*, *a* 34 (b); concord 35; predicative adj. with *yn* 35; adj. phrases 36; comparison 37; construction of compar. and superl. 38; equative 39; with *mor* 39 n. 2; adv. use 40; poss. adj. 57: poss. adj. with prep. 58 (a), with conj. 58 (a), with *y* 58 (b), anticipating genit. 59 n.
- abnabot*, paradigm of 144.
- adverb 40; lenat. 16 (h); adv. phrases 16 (h); with demons. force 63.
- adwy*, verbal in 117.
- ae*, interrog. of copula 155 (a)( $\eta$ )
- ae*, interrog. part. 239 (c).
- agent, expression of with verb noun, 122
- am*, prep. 164; lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; *yam* 164.
- am* (*na*), conj. 200.
- amal*, conj. 216.
- analogy, in verb. conjugation 7 n. 1; in mutat. 12; 16 n. 7; 39 n. 1; in plural formations 27 (d); in pronouns 45 n. 2; in formation of subjunctive 110 n. 1.
- answers, 241.
- apodosis, imperfect in 107 (d)( $\beta$ )( $\gamma$ ).
- apposition, lenation in 16 n. 4; 17 (b).
- ar*, prep. 166; lenat. after 16(i); with pron. end. 53; or *a*, *ar ny*, 87 (a); *yar*, 165.
- arall*, use of 68.
- arganvot*, paradigm of 160.
- article, 23; lenat. after 16; fused with conj. or prep. 23; syntax of 24.
- as*, *as* (*ys*) *oed* 159 n. 2.
- at*, ending of imperf. ind. 3 sg. 131 (b).
- att*, prep. 166; lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53.
- attributive adj. 32; 33.
- awr*, *yr awr* conj. 201.
- awr*, *-iawr*, plur. suff. 28 B. (a).
- awt*, plur. suff. 28 B. (b).
- behet*, prep. 177 n.
- bot*, lenation after, 16(g)( $\beta$ ); paradigm of 152; usages of 153; *bydwn*, etc. 107 n. 3; special fut. form 152 n. 2; *bit*, consuetudinal 152 n. 3; *bydaf*, use of 156 (a); *bydwn*, use of 157; *bewn*, 158; past subj. 158; compounds of 160; *boet*, after *kyt* 205 n.

- caffael*, *cael*, paradigm of 145.  
*can*, *gan*, prep., lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun 126 (c); use of 167; *y gan* 167.  
*can*, conj. 202; not foll. by *yd* 93 (l).  
*canvot*, paradigm of 160.  
*canys*, copula 155 (a)(a); 202 n.  
*canys*, conj. 202 n.  
cardinals, see numerals.  
*caru*, paradigm of 127.  
case, 25; traces of lost case-endings 25; syntax of cases 26; expression of case in relative 86.  
*cer*, *ger*, prep. 168.  
clauses, subjunct. in main clauses 113; in subord. cl. 114; concessive cl. 114 (c); conditional cl. 114 (d); cl. of comparison 114 (e); temporal cl. 114 (f); final cl. 114 (g); relat. cl. 114 (h).  
*cllybot*, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.  
collective nouns, 29.  
*com-*, Celt. prep. 39 n. 1.  
*command*, subjunct. in 113 (b); in indirect speech 113 (b)(β).  
comparison of adj. 37; lenat. after 16 n. 5; no plural 33; construction of compar. 38; foll. by *no* (c) 38 (a); clauses of comparison 114 (e).  
composition, lenation in 16 n. 6.  
concessive clauses, 114 (c).  
concord, of vb. and subject 101; 103; of adj. with noun 32, 33; of adj. after *yn* 35.  
conditional of *bot* 107 n. 3; impf. in conditional sentence 107 (d); plupf. in condit. 109 (b); subj. in condit. cl. 114 (d); impf. condit. 131.  
conjugation of verb 98 sq.; analogy in 7 note 1.  
conjunctions, 198-234; lenation after 16 (l); lenation of init. cons. 16 n. 13; spirant mutat. after 21 (d); with poss. adj. 58 (a).  
consonants, classification of 3; graphic representation of 3 n.; orthog. variation 3 n.; consonantal changes 11; infl. of accent on cons. changes 11 n. 1; mediae > tenues 11 (g)(a); mutation of cons. 12; consonants vowel-flanked 12; table of cons. mutations 13.  
consonantal stems, 27 (d).  
consuetudinal present, 106 (b).  
copula, 155; *yttiww* etc. 154 n. 4; *nat* 155 (a)(ε); *nytt* 155 (a)(δ); position of 159; preceding pred. 159 n. 2; with *neu* 221; *os*, *onytt* ....  
customary action in past time, 107 (c).  
*cwt*, *cw*, conj. 203; mutat. aft. 21 n. 1.  
*cyvarvot*, paradigm of 160.  
*cyvrwng*, prep. 169.  
*cyn-*, in equative 39;  
*cyn*, conj. 204; not foll. by *yd* 93.  
*cyn*, prep. 170.  
*cyt*, *cyn*, conj. 205; not foll. by *yd* 93 (l).  
*cyt ac*, prep. 171; *y gyt ac*, conj. 206.  
*chwech*, nas. mutation after 20 (c).  
*darvot*, paradigm of 160.  
dative, traces of 25; expressed by infixed pron. 51.  
declension, in Old Celtic 25.  
*deng*, usage of 41 n.  
*delw*, nom. conj. 207.  
denominative vb. 128 (b).  
deponent, 99.  
*di*, O.W. prep. 195; and n.  
*diam*, O.W. prep. 164.  
*diar*, O.W. prep. 165.  
*dieithyr*, prep. 172.  
*dim*, used as pron. 73.  
diphthongs, 1 and n.  
distributives, 43.  
*diuch*, prep. 193.  
*do*, in answers, 242.

- dual, 25; 42 (a); lenation of adj. after dual noun, 16 (b)(a); lenat. of genit. after dual 16 (b)( $\beta$ ); traces of dual inflection 25.
- duch*, 110 n. 2; 138 n.
- dy-* before infixd pron. 50 f.
- dyvot*, paradigm of 141.
- dylyu*, with vb. noun 121.
- e- infixd pron. 48; use of 49 (b).
- edic part. end. 116.
- ed, pl. suffix 28 B (d).
- einom* etc. 55.
- eint, 3, plur. end. impf. ind. 131.
- eiissoes*, conj. 208.
- eit, -ieit, plur. suff. 28 B (e).
- eithyr*, prep. 172.
- eithyr na*, conj. 209.
- ell*, *ill*, *yll*, 67.
- emphatic pronoun 45.
- endings of verb, 3 sg. of simple vb. 129; 3 sg. conjunct. 129; 3 pl. primary ending 129; see imperat. indicat. subjunct. vb. noun.
- epenthetic vowel 10.
- equative in comparison of adj. 39.
- e:byn*, prep. 173.
- et*, in *nocet* etc. 222 and n.
- et, pl. suffix. 28 B (c).
- final clauses, 114 (g).
- future 105; exp. by pres. tense 106 (e); special future endings 130.
- futurity, subj. of 113 (c).
- gallu*, to express passive with vb. noun 121.
- gender, in nouns 25; in adjs. 30; 32; genitive, lenation of noun in gen. 16 (b)( $\beta$ ); traces of gen. case 25; syntax of gen. in prose 26; in poetry 26; gen. of rel. pron. 88.
- ger*, see *cer*.
- gilyd*, 72 and n.
- gorvot*, paradigm of 160.
- guar*, prep. 165 n. 3.
- gwares*, 110 n. 2; 138 n.
- gwedy*, *wedy*, prep. 174; with preverb. *yd* 93 n. 3; with vb. noun=perf. part. 126 (b).
- gwedy*, conj. 210.
- gwelet*, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.
- gweith*, with card. numbers 44.
- gwneuthur*, with vb. noun 123; paradigm of 142.
- gwrth*, O.W. prep. 194, see *wrth*.
- gwybot*, paradigm of 143.
- gyt*, see *cyt ac*.
- h*, sign of subjunctive 110; history of *h* in subj. 110 n. 2.
- h*, in sentence constr. 22; after infix. pron. and possess. *m* 22 (a); after infix. pron. *e* 22 (b); after 3 sg. f. poss. *y* 22 (c); after 1 pl. poss. *an* 22 (d); after *eu* 22 (e); after *ar* bef. *ugeint* 22 (f).
- ha*, interj. 243.
- hagen*, conj. 211.
- hanvot*, paradigm of 160.
- hau*, denom. vb. end. 1 28 (b); spreading as -*a* to other vbs. 137.
- haw*, 3 sg. fut. end. 130 (b).
- hawr*, ending of fut. pass. 130.
- hawd*, -*hawt*, fut. end. 3 sg. 130.
- hawnt*, fut. end. 3 pl. 130.
- heb*, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 175.
- heb*, verb 151.
- hevyt*, conj. 213.
- herwyd*, prep., usage of 176.
- herwyd*, conj., usage of 213.
- historic infinitive, 125.
- historic present, 106 (d).
- hollre*, 67 note.
- hun*, *hunan*, 60.



*hwde*, 149.

*hwnn*, etc. dem. pron. 61; usage of 62; *yr hwnn*, foll. by rel. clause, 62 (c).

*hwnt*, 63.

*hwnnw*, *hynny*, 61; usage 62.

*hyt*, prep., lenat. after 16 (i); usage 177; *hyt pan* 226 2 (a).

*hyt*, nominal conj. 214.

*i*, causing vowel infect. 6; 7 n. 2; 11 (b); 131; in pl. 27 (a); in pron. prep. 52 (b); infection due to lost *i* 7 b.

-*i* pl. suffix 28 B (f).

-*i* stem in adj. 30 n.

-*i* ending of 3 sg. impf. 131 (a).

*ie*, *ieu*, in answers 242 and n.

*igridu*, 53 n.

*ill*, *ell*, *yll*, 67.

imperat. mood, 115; pass. of 115; negat. of 115; endings of 137; infl. of denom. vbs. in *-hau* spreads to other verbs 137.

imperf. tense, indic. 105; use of 107; in indirect speech 107 (b); of repeated action 107 (c); as sec. fut. or condit. 107 (d); as sec. tense to a fut. 107 (d)(a); in apod. of fut. or condit. clause 107(d)(β); in apod. of past clause 107(d)(γ); with negat. 107 n. 1; use of impf. of *clybot* 107 n. 2; use of impf. of *gwelet* 107 n. 2; endings of impf. 131.

indicative mood, with *ry* 96 A; pres. ind. with *ry* 97 (c) 1; use of 105-109; pres. 106; plupf. 109 (a); influence of ind. upon subjunct. form 110 n. 1; indic. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; plup. ind. replacing past subj. 111 and n.; ind. in consec. cl. 114 n. 4; end. of pres. and fut. 128; end. of plupf. 135; past ind. of *bot* used as subj. 152 n. 7; ind. with conj. *hyt* 214; ind. of

consequence with *hyt na* 214 2 (a); ind. with *mal* 216; ind. of consequence with *mal na* 216 3 (a).

indirect speech, impf. in 107 (b); pret. in 108 (b); command in 113 (b)(β).

inflecting vowel, see *a*, *i*.

infection of vowel, 6; 7 (b); 7 n. 2; 11 (b); 27 (a); 52 (b).

infinitive, in Welsh 104; usage, 120; historic inf. 125; see verbal noun.

infix pron. lenat. after 18 (a); forms of 48; use of 49-51; after *yny* 49 (b). after rel. *a* 50 (a); with preverbal *yo* 50 (b); 93 n. 2; after infixing part. *c* 50 (c); after *ry-* 50 (d); 93 n. 3; after *neu* 50 (e); after *dy-* of cpd. vbs 50 (f); after *na*, *ny*, 50 (g); after *tra* 50 (h); expr. accus. of relat. 51; infix pron. with pass. vb. 102; with non rel. vb. 102 n.; meaningless 159 n. 2 with *o* 224 n. 5.

inflected adj., position of 34 a.

inflection, noun 25.

interjection, lenat. after 16 (m). forms of 243-4.

interrogative, lenat. after interrog. pron. 18 (c); interrog. part. *a* 18 (g); interrog. pron., forms of 79; *pwyl* 79; *peth*, *beth* 79; *pa*, *py* 80; and n. 1; *pa*, *py*, in earlier lit. 80 n. 2; *pathawr*, *pythawr* 80 n. 2; *pa*, *py* foll. by prep. 80 n. 3; *padiw*, *pydiw* 80 n. 4; *pwyl bynnac*, *pa-*, *py-* *bynnac* 81; indirect interrogation 114 B (b).

*is*, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 178.

*issem*, *ysef* 47.

-*it*, imperat. end. 3 sg. 137.

*ithr*, prep. 179.

lenation, = vocalic mutation 12; table of 13; lenat. of *g*, 13 n. 1; of *d* 13 n. 2; exceptions to rules 15; usage 14-18;

noun and adj. after *yr*, 16 (a); noun or adj. after noun, 16 (b); after dual 16 (b)(a); of noun in genit. 16 (b)(β); after prop. nouns 16 (b)(γ); of vb.-noun in genit. 16 (b)(δ); of noun aft. compar. adj. 16 (c)(a); of adj. repeated 16 (c)(β); after adv. *yn* 16 (d); aft. numerals 16 (e); aft. pron. 16 (f); after vb. 16 (g); after parts of *bot* 16 (g) (β); of adverbs 16 (h); aft. preps. 16 (i); after negat. 16 (k); after *mor*, *neu* 16 (l); aft. interj. 16 (m); of vocative 16 (m) (a); aft. superl. adj. 16 n. 5; in composit. 16 n. 6; of noun after adj. 16 n. 5; of noun prec. by depend. genit. 16 n. 7; in poetry 16 n. 7; post-verbal 16 n. 12; of prep. 16 n. 13; of pron. 17; after infixed pron. 18 a; after rel. part. *a* 18 (b); after interrog. 18 (c); of predicate after copula 18 (d); after *yt*, *yd* 18 (e); 91 n. 2; after *ry*-, 18 (f); after interrog. *a* 18 (g); after conj. 18 (h); after negat. 18 (i) and n.; in dual, 25; analogical lenat. 39 n. 1; after *ny*, relat 21 n. 2.

*llall*, pl. *lleill*, 70.

*llas*, 134 (a).

*lle*, nominal conj. 215.

*y lleill*, 71.

*llyma*, *llyna*, 244.

-*m*-, infixed pron. 48.

*m*, final, > *n* in Celtic 20 n.

*mad*, not foll. by *yd* 93 (i).

*mae*, use of 154 (a); copula 155 (a)(λ)

*mal*, *val*, conj. 216.

*med*, 'says,' form and use 150.

*megys*, conj. 217.

*meu*, etc. poss. pron. 55.

*mi*, etc. simple pron. 45.

*minheu*, etc. conj. pron. 45.

*mivi*, etc. emph. pron. 45.

*moch*, not foll. by *yd* 93 (k).

*moes*, imperat. 148.

moods, 104; indic. 105-110; subj. 110-114; imperat. 115; see indicative, subjunct., imperat., infinitive.

*mor*, lenat. after 16 (l); *mor* - - *a* expr. equality with adjs. 39 n. 2.

multiplicatives, 44.

mutation of cons., table of 13; vocalic mut. see lenation; nasal mut. in Mid. W. MSS. 19; after *vyn* 20 (a); after *yn* 20 (b); origin of, after numerals 20 (c); spirant mut. 21; after numerals 21 (a); after 3 sg. f. poss. adj. 21 (b); after prep. 21 (c); after *a(c)* *no(c)* 21 (d); after *ny*, *na* 21 (e) after *kwt* 21 n. 1.

*myn*, conj. 218.

*mynet*, paradigm of 140.

*mynn*, nominal prep. 180.

*mywn*, nominal prep. 181.

'*n*, poss. adj. 57.

*n*, neut. stems in 27 (d).

-*n*- infix. pron. 48.

*na(c)*, mutat. after 21 (e); with infixed pron. 50 (g); with imperat. 115; with infixed pron., use of 237; disjunctive particle 238; in answers 241; *nac ef*, in answers 241 n.

*na*, *nat*, negat. part., use of 236; in condit. sent. 236 n. 1; with infixed pron. 237.

*nachaf*, interj. 244.

*nado*, 242 and n.

*nage*, 241.

*namyn*, *namwyn*, 219.

narrative tense, 108.

nasal mutation, see mutation.

*nat*, dependent neg. of copula 155 (a) (ε).

*neb*, use of 64.

- negative particles, 235-238; special vb. form with negat. 130 (b).  
*y neill*, use of 69; *y neill* - *y lleill*, 71.  
*nem*, prep. with pron. end. 53.  
*nes*, prep., use of 182.  
*neu*, lenat. after 16 (l); with infixed pron. 50 (e); with vb. part. *ry* 95 n.; conj. 220.  
*neur*, 95 n.; 221.  
*neut*, not foll. by *yd*, 93 (h); as copula 155 (a)(*l*); conj. 221.  
*neuter*, lost in Welsh 25; neuter -*n* stems 27 (d); of demons. pron. 61.  
*ni* etc. pers. pron. 45.  
*nini* etc. pers. pron. 45.  
*ninneu* etc. pers. pron. 45.  
*no*, *noc*, mutat. after 21 (d); after compar. adj. 38 (a); use as conj. 222.  
*nocet*, *nogyt* 222.  
*nominative*, old nominat. 25; syntax of nom. 26.  
*nouns*, lenat. of init. cons. 16; lenat. after proper nouns 16(b)(*γ*); art. with prop. nouns 24; cases of 25; formation of pl. 27-28; collective nouns 29 (c); noun predic. with *yn* 35; plurals with cardinal nos. 42 (a); see also verbal nouns.  
*nu*, conj. 223.  
*number*, in nouns, 25; in adjs. 33; in vb. 100; express. of number in passive vb. 100; number of vb. in rel. clause 103.  
*numerals*, lenat. after 16(e); nasal mutat. after 20(c); spirant mutat. after 21(a); cardinals 41; ordinals 41; syntax of 42; distributives with *pob* 43; multipl. with *gweith* 44.  
*nvy*, 49 (c).  
*ny*, mutation after 21 (e); mutat. aft. non-relative *ny* 21 n. 2; mutat. aft. relat. *ny* 21 n. 2; infixed pron. after non-rel. *ny* 49 c; special relat. form of *ny* 49 c; with infix. pron. 50 (g); in negat. of relat. 82; 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); rel. *ny* without antec. 87 (b); usage 235.  
*nyr*=*ny ry* 95 n.  
*nys*, in later Mid. W. 50 n.  
*nytt*, negat. of copula 155 (a)(*δ*); (a)(*κ*).  
*nyw*, 49 c.  
*o*, prep., lenat. aft. 16(i); aft. adjs. 34 (b); aft. superl. adjs. 38 (b); with pron. end. 53; aft. vb. noun, 122; =of 183; with art. 183.  
*o*, conj., mutat. aft. 21 (d); with infixed pron. 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); use of 224.  
*-o-*, old pl. stems in, 27 n. 1; adj. stems in 30 n.  
*-o* subjunct. end. 138.  
*object*, position of 85.  
*oblique cases*, traces of, 25.  
*oc*, prep. 183.  
*och*, interj. 243.  
*odieithyr*, prep. 172.  
*oduch*, prep. 193.  
*oed*, impf. of *bot*, use of 107 n. 3; 154 (b).  
*-oed*, pl. suffix 28 B (h).  
*oet*, in *eirmoet*, *eiryoet* 197 n.  
*oes*, use of 154 (a)(*β*).  
*oia*, interj. 243.  
*oian a*, interj. 243.  
*oll*, use of 67; with numerals 67.  
*-on* pl. term. in adj. 31 (b).  
*ony*, *onytt*, conj. 224; 224 n. 2.  
*or*, conj. 224; 224 n. 4.  
*or a* 87 (a); *or ny* 87 (a); *or y*, 87 (a); *or pan* 226; 2 (b).  
*order of words*, dependent genit. 26; adj. 34 (a); noun 34 (a); adverb 40; numerals 41; copula 159.  
*ordinals*, see number.  
*orthography of Early W.* 12 n.  
*os*, conj. 224 and n. 5.

*os*, (*bot*) 152; copula 155 (a)(ξ)  
*osit*, *ossit*, 152; use of 154 (a)(β); 154 n. 1.  
*ot*, conj. 224.  
*-ot*, pl. suffix 28 B (g).  
*pa*, *py*, with *peth* 79; used adj. 80; meaning of, 80 n. 1; without noun following 80 n. 2; followed by prep. 80 n. 3; *pa* - *bynnac*, 81.  
*padiw*, *pydiw*, 80 n. 4.  
*paham*, 80 n. 3.  
*pahar*, 80 n. 3.  
*pan*, with infix. pron. 49 (b); foll. by *yd* 93 (l); with *yw* 154 (a)(β); *pan* = whence, 225; =when 226; *hyt pan* 226. 2 (a); *or pan* 226. 2 (b); *yr pan* 226. 2 (c).  
particles, preverbal 91-97; negat. 235 sqq.; disjunct. 238; interrog. 239; responsive 241.  
participle, passive 104; part. in *-edic* 116; pres. part. equiv. 126 (a); perf. part. equiv. 126 (b).  
*parth* (*ac*), prep. 184.  
passive, numb. exp. in pass. voice 100; pers. in pass. 102; 103; pass. part. 104; imperat. pass. 115; part. pass. in *-edic*, 116; old pass. end. 129; 130; pret. and perf. 134; periphr. pass. of plupf. 136 (b).  
*pawb*, use of 66.  
*pei*, conj. not foll. by *yd* 93 (l); uses of 227; origin of 227 n.  
periphrasis, verbal noun with *gwneuthur* 123; periphrastic plupf. with *-oed*, active 136 (a); passive 136 (b).  
perfect. indic. with *ry*. 96 A (a); perfect part. equiv. 126 (b); use of 105; v. preterite.  
person in verb, 102-103; in passive 102; in 1 and 2 pers. of pass. 102.  
personal pron. see pronoun.

*pettwn*, 158.  
*peth*, as pron. 74; interrog. 79.  
*peun-*, old accus. 25.  
*pieu*, in rel. clause 83 (a)(β); paradigm 161; use of 161.  
pluperfect, with *ry* 96 A (b); use of 105, 109; plupf. indic. replacing subj. 109 c; types of plupf. ind. 135; periphr. plupf. act. and pass. 136 (a)(b).  
plural, old Celtic, 27; pl. of nouns 27; vowel change in pl. 27 (a); pl. endings *-eu*, *-ieu*, 27 (b); *-on*, *-ion*, 27 (c); old consonantal pls. 27 (d); pl. suffixes 28; pl. in adjs. 31; 33; pl. of nouns with card. numerals 42 (a); 3 pl. end. of impf. 131.  
*pob*, in distributives 43; used as adj. 66; *pob un* 66; *pob rei* 66.  
*pony*, interrog. 240.  
*ponyt*, copula 155 (a)(θ).  
possessive, pronouns 55, 56; adjs. table of 57; prec. by prep. or conj. 58 (a).  
predicate, lenation of, after copula 18 (d); pred. before copula 159; after copula 159.  
predicative adj. 32; plural of 33; after *yn* 35; pred. noun with *yn* 35.  
preposition, lenat. after 16 (i); lenat. of 16 n. 13; nasal mut. after 20 (b); spirant mut. after 21 (c); with poss. adj. 58 (a); suffixed to *pa*, *py* 80 n. 3; forms and usage 162-197.  
present indic. 105; actual pres. 106 (a); as fut. 106 (e); pres. subj. endings 110.  
preterite with *ry*- 97 (a); use of 105; 108; in indir. speech 108 (b); =perfect 108 (c); endings of 132; absolute end. in 132 n.; s- pret. 133; t- pret. 133 (a); reduplic. in 133 (b); pret. pass. 134.  
pronoun, lenation of 17; lenat. after interrog. 18 (c); tables of 45-90; *mi*,

etc. 45; *mivi* etc. 45; *minheu* etc. 45; weakening of, after vb. 45; construct. of indep. prons. 46; infixed pron. 48-51; after *pan* 49 (b); with *ry* 49 (c); with *ny* 49 (c); anticipat. obj. 49 n.; express dat. 51; with prepos. 52-53; simple pron. with pron.-prep. 54; conjunct. pron. with pron.-prep. 54; *meu*, etc. 55; poss. pron. syntax of 56; demonstr. pr. 61; syntax of 62; pronominal use of *dim* 73; *peth* 74; *rei* 75; *ryw*; *sawl* 77; *un* 78; interrog. 79; relat. 82, 84.

prothetic vowel, 9.

*pryt* (na), conj. 228.

*pwyl*, 79; *pwyl* with noun, 79 n.

*pwyl gilyd* 185.

*py*, see *pa*; prep. 185; with poss. pron. 185; *pyr* 229.

*pynhac*, *pynnac* 81.

*pyr*, 229.

*rac*, with pron. end. 53; usage 186;  
*y rac* 186.

reduction of cons. 12; of prons. 45.

reduplication 133 (b).

*rei* 62 (b); *y rei*, foll. by rel. 62 (c); *pob rei* 66; as pron. 75.

relative, *ny* relat. and non-relat. 21 n. 2; express. of inflected rel. 62 (c); rel. pron. 82-84; rel. *a* with *yd* 84; expr. of genit. of rel. 88; Welsh equiv. to Eng. rel. gov. by prep. 89; substitutes for 90; verb in rel. clauses 103; subjunct. in rel. cl. 114 (h).

repeated action, 107 (c).

responsive particles, 241.

*ro*, prep. with pron. end. 53.

*rodi*, *roi*, paradigm of 146.

*rwng*, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 187; *odyrwng* 187; *yrgwng* 187.

*ryw*, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).

*ry*, verbal part. lenat. after 18 (f); with infix. pron. 49 (c); 50 (d); in rel. clause 83 (a)(*γ*); reduced to *r*, 95 n.; *y + ry* 95 n.; with indic. 96 A; with perf. indic. 96 A (a); with plupf. 96 A (b); with subj. 96 B; with pres. subj. 96 B (a); with past subj. 96 B (b); with vb. noun 96 C; in early W. poetry 97; with pret. indic. 97 (a); with subj. 97 (d); with fut. 97 (d); in later poetry 97 (d); with pres. indic. 97 C 1; in subord. cl. 97 C 2; with pres. and impf. of *darvot* 97 C n.; not found after neg.; *mad*; interrog. and rel. *a* 97.1; with infix. pron. 97.3; with subj. of wish 97.3 (b); with vb. noun 120 (b); with conj. *o* 224 n. 5.

*rydhau*, paradigm of 127.

*ryw*, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).

*ryw*, pron. usage of 76.

-*s*, infixed pron. anticipating object 159 n. 2.

-*s* preterite 133.

-*s* stems in, 27 (d).

-*s* subjunctive 110 n. 2.

*sawl* used as pron. 77.

secondary tense, impf. as, 107 (d) (a).

*sef*, *ssef*, 47.

semivowels 3.

sentence, sound changes within 12.

singular formed from collect. nouns 29 c.

-*sit*, pret. and perf. end. 132 n.

spirant mutat. 21, see mutation.

stems in -*s* 27 (d); neut -*n*- 27 (d); in -*o*- 27 n. 1; in -*u*- 27 n. 1; -*n*- 27 n. 5;

adj. stems in -*i*- 30 n.; in -*u*- 30 n.

subject, position when emph. 85.

subjunctive, with *ry* 96 B; pres. subj.

with *ry* 96 B (a); past subj. with *ry* 96 B (b); subj. of wish with *ry* 97

3 (b); replaced by plupf. indic. 109 c.; ending of pres. subj. 110; formation of, 110; *h* as sign of, 110; new formation in Mid. W. 110 n. 1; subj. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; stem of subj. and indic. 110 n. 1; influence of indic. upon 110 n. 1; confusion of subj. with indic. 110 n. 1; subj. in *h* 110 n. 1; history of subj. in *h* 110 n. 2; *s*-subj. 110 n. 2; early history of 110 n. 2; tenses of subj. 111; pres. 111; impf. 111; past 111; past subj. in later Mid. W. 111; replaced by plupf. ind. 111 and *n*; perf. in subj. 111; plupf. in subj. 111; subj. replaced by indicat. 111 n.; usage 112–114; in main clauses 113 A; of wish 113 A (a); of command 113 A (b); express futurity 113 (c); after vbs. of *thinking*, *swearing*, etc. 114 (a); in subord. cl. 114 B; in indirect interrog. 114 B (b); in concessive cl. 114 (c); in condit. cl. 114 (d); in cl. of comparison 114 (e); in temporal cl. 114 (f); after vbs. of *effecting*, *commanding*, *desiring* 114 (g); in final cl. 114 (g); in relat. cl. 114 (h); endings of pres. subj. 138; of pass. subj. 139; form of past subj. 139; subj. with *hyt* 214 (b); of purpose with *hyt na* 214. 2 (b); after *mal* 216. 1 (b); of purpose after *mal na* 216. 3 (b).

substantive verb, forms and usage 154. suffixes, pl. 28; of comparat. 37 (a); of verbal noun 119.

superlative adj., lenat. after 16 n. 5; no pl. forms 33; form of 37; foll. by prep. *o* 38 (b); construction 38.

syllable, loss of final syll. 30 n.

syntax, of the art. 24; of cases 26; of genit. in prose and poetry 26; of numerals 42; *o* poss. pron. 56.

*tan*, *dan*, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126 (c); usage 188; *ymdan* 164; *adan*, *ydan*, 188.

*tawr*, *dawr*, paradigm of 147.

temporal clauses, 114 (f).

tenses, see present etc.

*-tor*, verbal ending 129.

*tra*, conj. with infix. pron. 50 (h); foll. by *yd* 93 (l); usage 230.

*tra*, *trag*, prep., mutation after 21 (c); usage 189.

*tri*, mutation after 21 (a).

*tras*, *dros*, *trus*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 190.

*trwy*, *drwy*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 191.

*tu* (*ac*), prep. 192.

*-u*, 3 pl. end. of pron.-prep. 52 (b).

*-u*- stems in 27 n. 3; 30 n.

*ub* interj. 243.

*uch*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage, 193.

*-ud*, 3 pl. end. of pron. prep. 52 (b).

*un*, as pron. 78.

verb, end. 3 sg. pres. ind. act. 7 n. 1; 98; lenat. after, 16 (g) (a); lenat. of, 18; posit. in Celt. sent. 85; conjugation, 98–161; classes of, 98; dependent, 99; voice, 99; number, 100; concord with subj. 101; 103; person, 102; mood, 104; verbs of *thinking*, *swearing*, etc., 114 (a); verbs of *effecting*, *commanding*, etc., 114 (g); paradigm of reg. vb. 127; vowel infection in obj. 128 (a); denominative vb. 128 (b); verbs in *-hau* 128 (b); ending of 3 pl. 129; irreg. vb. 140–152; see indic. etc.

verbal noun, lenat. of, 16 (b) (δ); with *ry*, 96 C; 120; formation, 118; suffixes, 119; usage, 120; voice in, 121;

- agent with, 122; with *gwneuthur*, 123; continuing finite vb. 124; as historic infin. 125; special use after *yn*, 126; with *gwedy*, 126 (b); with *tan*, 126 (c); with *can*, 126 (c).
- vocative, lenation in, 16 (m)(a).
- voice, in vb. noun, 121; see number, passive.
- vowels, vowel system, 1; orthog. variat. 1 n; quantity, 2; long, 2 (a); half-long 2 (b); accented, 2 A; unaccented 2 B; short, 2 B; changes, 5; infecting, 5; infecting vowel preserved, 6; lost, 7; vowel-infection in 3 sg. pr. ind. act. 7 n 1; variation of, due to accent, 8; weakening, 8; prothetic 9; epenthetic, 10; change in adj. 31 (a); infection in vb. 128 (a); irregular vowel infection, 128 n.
- wely dy*, interj. 244.
- wish, subjunctive of, 113 A (a).
- word groups, mutation of cons. in, 12.
- wrth*, prep., with pron. end. 53; usage 194.
- wrth*, conj. 231.
- wy*, usage of, 45 n 2; becoming *wynt*, 45 n 2.
- wyf*, etc., as copula, 155 (a)(μ).
- wynt*, usage, 45 n 2; history of, 45 n 2.
- wynteu*, usage, 46 n.
- y*, semi-vowel, 3 n (g).
- y*, prep. lenat. after, 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with poss. adj. 58; after vb. noun, 122; usage, 195.
- y* 'her,' mutat. aft. 21 b.
- yd*, *yt*, *yr*, *y*, verb. part., lenation after 18 (e); with infix. pron. 49 b; 50 (b); 93 n 2; with rel. *a* 84; superseding *a* 85 note; after *or* 87 (a); *yr* 91; *yr* for *yd* 91 n 2; *yt* 91 n 2; *y* not lenating 91 n 2; origin of non-lenat. *y* 91 n 2; *yt* lenat. 91 n 2; usage 92; 93; after *gwedy* 93 n 3; before *ry* 93 n 4; *yd*, use of in RB; in WB; and in later Mid. W, 94; infixing pron. 94.
- yd* pl. ending 28 B (i)
- ydoed*, etc., 154 n 3; usage, 154 (b).
- ydyw*, use of, 154, and n 3.
- yll*, see *ell*.
- yma*, adv. 63.
- yn*, prep. with vb. noun, 16 n 8; lenat. 16 n 8; *yn* predic. 16 n 8; nasal mut. after, 20 (b); with predic. noun and adj. 35; with adj. 40; with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126; usage, 196.
- yn*, conj., usage, 232.
- ynt*, copula, 155 (a)(γ).
- ynteu*, usage, 46 n.
- yny*, conj. with infix. pron. 49 (b); 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); usage, 233.
- yon*, pl. ending 31 (c).
- yr*, see article.
- yr*, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage, 187; *yr pan*, 226 c; *yr na*, 234.
- yr* for *y+yr*, 87 note.
- yr for y+ry*, 91 n 3; 95 n.
- ys*, *ydys* 152
- ys*, copula, 155 (a)(α); *ys oed* 159 n 2.
- ysyd*, *syd*, in relat. cl. 83 (a)(α); usage, 154 (a)(β); 155 (a)(κ).
- yssit*, *yssydynt*, usage, 154 (a) n 1.
- yttod*, usage, 154 (b).
- yttiwi*, usage, 154 (a)(α); copula, 154 n 4.
- yw*, copula, 155 (a)(β); *pan yw*, 155 (a)(β)

## CORRIGENDA

- P. 7, l. 15, *for* mynwgl *read* mwnwgl
- P. 20, l. 34, *for* Aften *read* After
- P. 37, l. 20, *for* thee *read* me
- P. 110, l. 21, *for* **on** *read* on
- P. 123, l. 31, *for* **as** *read* as
- P. 140, l. 28, *for* 19,707 *read* 19,709
- P. 141, l. 32, *for* 12 dianot *read* 13 dianot  
     ib., *for* 13 y rydunt *read* 14 y rydunt
- P. 145, l. 27, *for* 19,707 *read* 19,709  
     ib., l. 29, *for* dywyasavc *read* dywyssavc
- P. 151, l. 25, *for* can wr *read* canwr
- P. 152, l. 19, *for* ordiwed *read* or diwed
- P. 153, l. 27, *for* troet noethon *read* troetnoethon
- P. 154, l. 5, *for* yny *read* yn y
- P. 155, l. 2, *for* gyt gyghor *read* gytgyghor
- P. 162, l. 11, *add comma after* Gotlont  
     ib., *for* Gŷynw *read* Gŷynw[as]  
     ib., *for* Gerein *read* Gerein[t]
- P. 166, l. 28, *for* kadŵr *read* Kadŵr
- P. 167, l. 19, *add full stop after* hynn
- P. 169, l. 16, *for* vrytanyeit *read* Vrytanyeit
- P. 182, l. 21, *delete the full stop after* Les
- P. 184, l. 20, *for* ge ynyon *read* gelynyon  
     ib., l. 33, *read* a[c] Vryen
- P. 192, l. 18, *for* vililioed (*sic* MS.) *read* vilioed
- P. 195, l. 1, *for* allan. Dýuot *read* allan dýuot
- P. 198, l. 11, *for* ehaŵc. *read* ehaŵc,
- P. 199, l. 31, *for* Uarruaŵc (*sic* MS.) *read* Uaruaŵc
- P. 201, l. 20, *for* kyfuarch (*sic* MS.) *read* kyfarth  
     ib., l. 24, *for* Yspaden *read* Yspad[ad]en
- P. 202, l. 2, *for* yn *read* ny



- P. 210<sup>b</sup>, l. 4, *for* idau *read* idaw  
 ib., l. 20, *for* rhingyll *read* ringyll  
 ib., l. 33, *for* nessat *read* nessaf  
 ib., *for* kyglaðs *read* kyghaðs
- P. 211<sup>b</sup>, l. 15, *for* dyvedut *read* dywedut
- P. 212<sup>b</sup>, l. 5, *for* savun *read* savwn
- P. 212<sup>b</sup>, l. 11, *for* ydau *read* idaw
- P. 213<sup>b</sup>, l. 21, *for* dylyaf *read* dylaf fi  
 ib., l. 24, *for* ageidw *read* a geidw
- P. 216<sup>a</sup>, l. 22, *for* Neu<sup>5</sup> *read* Neu<sup>6</sup>
- P. 216<sup>b</sup>, l. 23, *for* Kynnybo *read* Kynny bo
- P. 219<sup>b</sup>, l. 19, *for* amdiffynnur vreint *read* amdiffynnwr breint
- P. 220<sup>b</sup>, l. 12, *for* testyon eneill *read* tystyon y neill  
 ib., l. 20, *for* ygneit *read* yneit
- P. 223, l. 5 and 6, *for* diethyr *read* dieithyr  
 ib., l. 22, 25 and 33, *for* Morgannuc *read* Morgannwc  
 ib., l. 29, *for* a digonher *read* digonher
- P. 227, l. 21, *delete the comma after* trós
- P. 229, l. 1, *read* dayargychwyn
- P. 231, l. 26, *for* ieuan *read* Ieuan
- P. 234, l. 16, *for* teern meibon *read* teernmeibon
- P. 237, note 1, *for* M.A. *read* MA. p. 268a.
- P. 237<sup>b</sup>, l. 17, *for* Dað *read* Duð
- P. 239, l. 20, *for* a metev *read* am etev
- P. 241, l. 7, *for* or seur *read* orseuir  
 ib., l. 31, *for* di luyd *read* diluyd